

THE GENERAL  
HISTORY  
OF THE VAST  
CONTINENT *and* ISLANDS  
OF  
AMERICA,  
Commonly call'd, THE  
*WEST-INDIES,*

FROM  
The FIRST DISCOVERY thereof:

With the Best ACCOUNTS the People could give of their

ANTIQUITIES.

Collected from the Original RELATIONS  
sent to the Kings of SPAIN.

---

By ANTONIO DE HERRERA,  
Historiographer to His CATHOLICK MAJESTY.

---

Translated into *English* by Capt. JOHN STEVENS.

---

*Illustrated with* CUTTS *and* MAPS.

---

VOL. VI.

---

L O N D O N:

Printed for JER. BATLEY at the Dove in *Pater-noster-row*.

M. DCC. XXVI.





*The People of Florida Sacrificing their first Born to the Sun*





THE  
General HISTORY

Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of

AMERICA, &c.



DECAD IV. BOOK X.



CHAP. I.

*The farther Proceedings of the Spaniards  
under Ferdinand de Soto, in the Pro-  
vince of Florida.*



It is now time to return to the Ade-  
lantado *Ferdinand de Soto*, whom we  
left in the fifth Chapter of the se-  
venth Book, at the latter End of the  
Year 1541. Wintering at *Vitangue*  
in the Province of *Florida*, where he was upon his  
Discovery, as before mention'd. The *Spanish* Ar-  
my marching from *Fula*, in two Days reach'd the

VOL. VI.

B

Territory



Territory of *Vuangué*, through which they march'd four Days, much infested by the Natives, and took up their Quarters in a Town those People had abandon'd, which was very good, and abounded in Provisions and Forage for the Horses, whereupon they resolv'd to winter there, the *Indians* having rejected all offers of Peace, tho' they had been much courted to it; but on the contrary, when the *Spaniards* went out to kill Deer, Rabbits, and Roe-Bucks, which were very good, they lay in Ambush, and shot many Arrows at them. Much Snow fell that Winter, but having great store of Wood, Provisions, and excellent Fruit, the Men said they never liv'd better. The Lord of that Province perceiving that the Strangers stay'd longer there than he desir'd, contriv'd to remove them, and to that purpose sent Messages to the Governor, intimating, that he would come to see him; the Messengers being order'd to observe the Posture of the Army, and how the same might be attack'd, the *Spaniards* admitting them, tho' it were in the Night, without any jealousy; till the Adelantado beginning to suspect them, order'd that they should not come in the Night, reproving those that did not chastise them, if they presum'd to return at such unseasonable Times; whereupon a Centinel kill'd an impudent *Indian* that would force his Way, for which the Adelantado commended him.

Whilst the Winter advanc'd, some Commanders were sent out to bring in *Indians* for the Service of the *Spaniards*, who brought in very few. The Adelantado himself made an Excursion with 100 Horse, and 150 Foot, march'd twenty Leagues to the Province of *Naguaten*, which is very populous, and attacking a Town at break of Day,



## The HISTORY of *America*. 3

Day, return'd with many Prisoners. In *April* 1542. the Forces all departed from *Vitangue*, and in seven Days advanc'd to the chief Town of *Naguaten*, through a fruitful Country, and without any Opposition, where they stay'd seventeen Days, having plenty of Provisions. The sixth Day after their Arrival, Messengers came from the Lord, to excuse him for not having waited the coming of the Adelantado, and offering his Service, whom he dismiss'd courteously. The next Day four Men of Quality came with 500 Servants, saying they were sent by their Lord to attend the Adelantado, that he would soon come, and they furnished all Necessaries, but the Lord never came. Departing thence, when they had march'd two Leagues, they miss'd a Gentleman of *Sevil*, whose Name was *James de Guzman*, who had always liv'd well, was very courteous, but much addicted to gaming; whereupon enquiry being made after him, it appear'd that the Day before he had lost all he had at Play, to his Arms, a very good black Horse, and a young beautiful *Indian* Woman, all which he had punctually deliver'd, except only the *Indian* Woman, whom he said he would yield up within five Days; for which Reason it was suspected, that being asham'd of his Gaming, and in Love with that Woman, he was gone away among the *Indians*. The Adelantado therefore desir'd the four Gentlemen of *Naguaten* to restore him that Soldier, else he would detain them. They sent to enquire after him, and it appear'd, that he was gone with the Woman to the *Cazique*, whose Daughter she was, and that they us'd him very well, and he said he would not return. One of the four *Indian* Gentlemen pray'd the Adelantado to let him go to see why *Guzman* would not re-

#### 4 The HISTORY of *America*.

turn, and to give him a Letter to that Effect, since it was not reasonable that they should be detain'd for the Fault of one Man, who renounc'd his Country, and deserted his Commander. The Adelantado order'd *Baltasar de Gallegos*, who was *Guzman's* Friend and Countryman, to write to him, reproving his Behaviour, and advising him to return, and his Horse and Arms should be restor'd, or others given him in lieu thereof. An *Indian* carry'd the Letter, with orders to threaten the *Cazique*, if he did not restore the *Spaniard*. The third Day he return'd, bringing back the same Letter with *James de Guzman's* Name writ on it with a Coal, and this Answer, That he was resolv'd not to return; and the *Cazique* said, He had not done any thing to oblige that Man to stay, nor ought he to compel him to return; but would rather be pleas'd that many such would stay with him, and he would use them well; and if the Adelantado would, upon that Account, kill the four *Indians* he had, and ruin his Country, the Power being in his own Hands, he might do as he pleas'd. The Adelantado perceiving that there was no reducing of *Guzman*, and that the *Cazique* was in the right, dismiss'd the four *Indian* Gentlemen, with fair words, and some Presents, and set out to continue his Progress; and having in five Days pass'd the Territory of *Naguate*, enter'd upon that of *Guacane*, a warlike and fierce Nation, that never would be at Peace with the *Spaniards*, who departed their Borders in eight Days, having found wooden Crosses in all the Houses, suppos'd to have been occasion'd by what *Alvar Nuñez*, and his Companions, taught in other Provinces, from which it was convey'd to this and several others.

The

## The HISTORY of *America*. 5

The Adelantado was very desirous to settle some Colony, that all the Fatigues endur'd in his Discovery might turn to some Account, having by this Time lost half his Men and Horses; and in order to it sought out for the great River, repenting that he had not built a Town at *Achusi*, as he had once design'd, considering, that if he happened to die, all was lost, and he had Thoughts of founding a Colony on some proper Place near that River, and building two Brigantines on it to run down to the Sea, and give Notice in all Parts of the large Provinces that had been discover'd. Proceeding by long Marches upon this Design, they cross'd seven large Provinces, without any loss of Time, some of them fruitful, in all which way nothing happen'd material, being sometimes receiv'd in friendly manner, they endeavouring to prevent any War, by reason that their Numbers were so much diminish'd, and they fear'd the Summer should pass away before they reach'd the desir'd Place. Having enter'd the Province of *Anilco*, they travell'd thirty Leagues through it, to a Town of 400 Houses, and a large Square, where the Cazique's House stood upon a Mount made by Art on the Bank of the River, which is as large as that of *Sevil*, and the Cazique stood before the Town with 1500 Men, expecting the *Spaniards*; yet as soon as they drew near, all those People fled without shooting one Arrow, crossing the River on Floats and Canoes, carrying off the Women and Children, tho' some of them fell into the Hands of the *Spaniards*. The Adelantado sent several Messages to the Cazique offering Peace, but he would never be seen, nor return an Answer. The Forces departing this Province, and having cross'd the River without

## 6 The HISTORY of *America*.

any Opposition, enter'd upon a woody Desert, and came into the Province of *Guachacoya*; the first Town they came to being the Capital thereof, seated on Hillocks by the great River's side, on one of which was the Lord's House, who was surpris'd, having no Intelligence brought him, by reason that he was at War with *Anilco*, and finding no likelihood of making a Defence, convey'd his People, with as much of their Goods as he could, over the River in Floats and Canoes. The Wars made among the Natives in the Province of *Florida*, were not to deprive one another of their Dominions, nor did they engage with their whole Power, but carry'd on at the Fisheries, at Huntings, in the Corn Fields, or on the Roads, where they could surprize one another; and sometimes they burnt the Towns, and retir'd to their own Country, so that they seem'd to be rather for Exercise, and to shew their Valour, than for any other End. In some Places they ransom'd, or exchange'd Prisoners; and in others they made them lame of one Leg, to keep them in their Service, rather out of Pride and Vain-glory, than for any Benefit they reap'd by them. The Cazique of *Guachacoya*, three Days after the arrival of the *Spaniards*, being inform'd of the ill Reception they had met at *Anilco*, would not lose that favourable Opportunity, but sent four Gentlemen to the *Adelantado*, attended by a considerable Number of Men loaded with Fruit and Fish, desiring leave to see him within four Days, sending every one of those Days to visit him, to discover what Disposition his Messengers found him in, and believing him to be well affected, came with ten Gentlemen well dress'd after their manner, with Plumes of Feathers, Furs, and their Arms. The *Adelantado*



tado receiv'd him lovingly, treated him and his Gentlemen, and they discours'd together, by means of the Interpreters, in one of the Cazique's spacious Rooms. The Cazique at that Time happening to sneeze, all the *Indians* then present bow'd their Heads, open'd their Arms, and saluted him, saying some of them, *The Sun preserve you*; others, *The Sun be with you*; others, *The Sun make you great*; with other such Expressions. Among other Discourse at that Interview, the Cazique desiring to be reveng'd of his Enemy *Anilco*, perswaded the Adelantado to return to that Province, offering him 80 Canoes to go down the great River to the Mouth of that of *Anilco*, and then up that River, all the Distance along them both being but twenty Leagues, the Forces marching by Land, and would all meet there.

The Adelantado being inclin'd to take a full view of the Country, and to make a Settlement between those two Provinces, which he lik'd, and were proper to build his Brigantines, agreed to it; and accordingly Orders were given for the March, and for Captain *John de Guzman* to imbark with his Company aboard the Canoes, which were to carry 4000 *Indians*, who were in three Days to join the Forces that march'd by Land, among which went *Guachacoya* himself, with 2000 fighting *Indians*, besides those that carry'd Burdens. They all met at the Time appointed, and *Anilco's* Men not being able to oppose them, the *Guachapoyans* enter'd the Town, killing all they met, without regard to Sex, or Age, committing all sorts of Barbarities that can be imagin'd, breaking open the Sepulchres, scattering and trampling on the Bones, and taking away the Heads of their own Countrymen, and other Trophies, the *Anil-*

## 8 *The HISTORY of America.*

*cans* had of their Victories. The Adelantado seeing such Cruelties committed under his Protection, founded a Retreat, ordering the *Spaniards* to turn the *Indians* out of the Town, without setting Fire to it, or doing any farther Damage, and oblige them to cross the River; but it prov'd ineffectual, for those People thrust burning Coals into the Thatch of the Houses, which soon blaz'd out. This done, the Adelantado return'd to *Gua-chacoya*, where he gave Orders for hewing Timber to build the Brigantines, to provide Iron Work, and prepare Rigging, designing, as soon as they were finish'd, to pass the River, into a Province call'd *Quiqualtangui*, very fruitful and populous, having a Town of 500 Houses, the Lord whereof could never be brought to admit of Peace, but had sworn by the Sun and Moon, that he would in Battle overthrow those strouling Robbers, and hang their Quarters on the Trees. The Adelantado endeavour'd to appease him with fair Words and Presents, being always generous towards the Caziques and their prime Men, bearing with their barbarous Dispositions, and mitigating their Rage, which prov'd advantageous to him for subsisting among so many fierce and savage Nations, managing his Men so discreetly, that it was the Preservation of his Men for so long a Time. Whilst he was thus employ'd, he fell into a Fever, which increasing upon him, he perceiv'd it would be mortal; whereupon he made his Will, and a pious Preparation for Death; and that nothing might be left unprovided for, he, in the Presence of all his Officers and prime Men, appointed *Lewis de Moscoso de Alvarado*, his Successor in the Command; and after commending his Virtue and Valour, commanded and intreated them to be obedient to him,

him, till the King should order otherwise; causing them to take an Oath for Performance, and representing how necessary it was for them to be unanimous, for their own Preservation, among those barbarous Nations. Then having taken leave of all his Officers and Soldiers, he departed this Life on the seventh Day of his Sickneſs, after having perform'd all the Duties of a zealous Christian. He was a Man of comely Preſence, agreeable either a Foot or a Horſeback, very ſkilful at martial Exerciſes, of a pleaſant Countenance, inur'd to Hardſhips, brave, and always the firſt in any Dangers; affable, generous, ſevere in puniſhing, but eaſy to forgive, and always inclin'd to pleaſe, when it might be done without leſſening his Authority. At his Death he was only forty two Years of Age, and had expended 100000 Ducats on this Expedition.

His Death was univerſally lamented by all the Forces, for he was well belov'd on Account of his excellent Qualities. It was thought proper to bury him by Night, that his Death might not be known to the *Indians*, nor the Place where he was interr'd, leſt they ſhould inſult his Body; but notwithstanding all their Precautions, the Secret was reveal'd; for which Reason, they hollow'd an Oak, and having put him into it, ſunk the ſame in the middle of the River, where it was a quarter of a League over, and nineteen Fathoms deep. This Funeral being over, *Lewis de Moſcoſo* aſſembled his Officers, and having thank'd them for admitting of him for their Commander, deſir'd they would conſider what was beſt to be done, with regard to their preſent Circumſtances, *viz.* their Number, their Arms, and Ammunition, and the Fierceneſs and Inveteracy of the Natives,  
and

and accordingly to resolve either to prosecute what the Adelantado had intended, or to take some other Measures, declaring himself ready to proceed as they should direct. They answer'd, returning Thanks for his Favour, submitting themselves again to his Command, and referring the Decision of that Affair to him. The Death of their General made a Change in the Minds of the Soldiers, who resolv'd to abandon what they had taken so much Pains to discover; and accordingly on the fifth of *July* they set out, and march'd above 100 Leagues to the Westward, through barren and almost desert Provinces. When the *Spaniards* march'd from *Guachacoya*, an *Indian* Youth, about sixteen Years of Age, join'd them, whom they did not observe till they had gone four Days March; when suspecting him to be a Spy, the General ask'd him who he was, and what he would have. He said, he was fled from *Guachacoya*, because a Lord he had been bred with being at the Point of Death, he had been appointed to be bury'd with him, it being the Custom of that Country to bury Women and Servants with great Persons. At the End of the hundred Leagues aforesaid, they came to a Province call'd *Anche*, where being well receiv'd, they rested two Days, and were inform'd, that there was a great Desert, four Days Journey over for them to pass, and the Lord found them a Guide and Provisions; but when they had march'd through it eight Days, they perceiv'd that the Guide impos'd upon them. Having been three Days without *Indian* Corn, and much pinch'd with Hunger, the General order'd a Dog to be set at the Guide, which fell on, and the Guide being afraid of Death, told him, he had Orders from the *Cazique* to lead them  
through



## The HISTORY of *America*. II

through that Desert, that they might perish there, because he was not able to fight them; begging Pardon for that he had obey'd his Orders, and promising in three Days to conduct them into an inhabited Country, still to the Westward, which if he did not perform, they should kill him. They instead of accepting his offer, permitted the Dogs to kill him, and thus were left in the utmost Confusion and Want; but held on three Days to the Westward feeding on Weeds, and at last discover'd inhabited Lands, and tho' barren, they found something to eat, and among other Things Beef, and fresh Cows Hides, and yet the *Indians* never shew'd the Cows. Proceeding along this Province, which they call'd *de los Vaqueros*, or of the Cowherds, an *Indian* came out of a Wood, and they thinking he had brought a Message from some Cazique, permitted him to draw near; he level'd his Arrow at five or six Soldiers that stood together, who escap'd the Danger by slipping aside, or falling down; but the Arrow flew among some *Indian* Women, that were dressing Meat for their Masters, pierc'd clear through one of them, and wounded another in the Breast, of which they both dy'd. The Alarm was given, *Baltasar de Gallegos* was the foremost, who overtook the *Indian* before he could get into the Wood, and kill'd him.

When they had travell'd above thirty Leagues through this Province of the Cowherds, they discover'd vast Mountains to the Westward, and being inform'd by their own Fore-runners, and *Indians*, that they were barren and desert Lands, considering what they had endur'd before, thought better to return to the River, and so proceed to the Sea. They were also inform'd, that if they

## 12 *The HISTORY of America.*

bent away towards the Right, they would fall into Deserts, but striking to the Left the Way would be longer, but through plentiful Countries. This was pitch'd upon, and they took long Marches to the Southward, taking care not to offend any Body, and yet those Barbarians pester'd them as they departed the Province of the Cowherds, wounding one Soldier, the Arrow penetrating his Greaves and Thigh, and passing through the side of the Saddle, ran two Fingers deep into the Horse's Side; that Arrow being made of a Reed, with no other Point than the Reed it self cut sloping, and harden'd at the Fire. The Soldier was lifted off the Saddle, and the Arrow cut off between his Thigh and the Saddle, leaving him to cure himself, for he had perform'd many wonderful Cures before, with only Oil, Wool, and Prayers; but since the Oil was lost at the Battel of *Mavila*, he had neither cur'd others, nor himself, tho' he had been twice wounded before, believing that the Cure was not to be performed without Oil and dirty Wool. Being in this Distress, and having sworn that he would not employ the Surgeon, tho' he dy'd for it, instead of Oil he took Hog's Lard, and some spun Wool out of an *Indian* Mantle, the *Spaniards* having no Shirts left, nor any other sort of Linen, and the fourth Day after he was found; the fifth he mounted a Horseback, begging Pardon of the rest for not having cur'd them, and suffer'd many to perish, believing that the Cure depended on the Oil and Wool; but since he perceiv'd that it consisted on those holy Words, he bid them come to him, and he would communicate them to all. This Soldier, whose Name was *Sanjurgo Gallego*, was very chaste, a good Christian, fear'd God, was  
ready

## The HISTORY of *America*. 13

ready to serve all Men, and had many other Virtues.

The *Spaniards* march'd twenty Days through other Lands, after their coming out of the Territory of the Cowherds, and thinking they declin'd too much from that of *Guachacoya*, whither they design'd to return, they directed their Course to the Eastward, still inclining somewhat to the North; and thus they cross'd the Way they had gone at first, but knew it not, and when they came to that Place it was the middle of *September*, and they had travell'd three Months, since their Departure from *Guachacoya*; and tho' they had fought no pitch'd Battle during all that Time, they were never free from Alarms Day or Night, with much Damage, for they lost above forty Soldiers during this Progress, the *Indians* shooting all that happen'd to stray, and at Night they would crawl on all four into the Quarters, shoot their Arrows, and get off, without being seen by the Centinels. To add to all these Difficulties, the Winter began with much Rain, Snow, and Cold; they came to their Quarters wet and dirty, were oblig'd to send Parties before to secure them, and after all to purchase Provisions with their Swords. Besides all this, they were often forc'd to make Floats to pass Rivers, which sometimes took them up five or six Days, the Horsemen often oblig'd to sit their Horses all the Night, and the Foot to stand up to the Knees in Water, with scarce Cloaths to cover them, and those always wet, which made many *Spaniards* and *Indians* fall sick, and the Distemper proceeded to the Horses, so that Men and Beasts dy'd, sometimes four or five in a Day, and sometimes seven, whom they could scarce have leisure to bury for haste in  
2 advancing.

#### 14 The HISTORY of *America*.

advancing. In this miserable Condition they came to the great River about the latter End of *November*, having march'd 350 Leagues, 100 Men, and eighty Horses dying by the Way, without reckoning their *Indian* Servants, who were a great Help to them: And this was the Fruit of their travelling Westward in quest of *New Spain*, refusing to follow the Way the Adelantado had laid out. Being come, to their great Satisfaction, to the great River, they found two Towns together, of 200 Houses each, enclos'd by a Ditch drawn from the River. These brave Men being us'd to conquer, and inur'd to Hardships, resolv'd to gain those two Towns, to winter in them, and tho' they were then no more than 320 Foot, and 70 Horse, they attack'd and enter'd them, because the Inhabitants fled, having heard of their Valour from other Provinces. They found plenty of Provisions, which recover'd them, and yet some dy'd of their past Sufferings, and among them *John Ortiz*, who was their chief Interpreter, and a good Soldier. It was agreed to take up their Quarters in one of these two Towns, and to fortify themselves, being no way disturb'd by the *Indians*, which they look'd upon as a special Providence of God. This Province was call'd *Aminoya*, and lay seventeen Leagues up the River from *Guachacoya*, to which they had directed their Course in their Return. Being somewhat recover'd, at the latter End of *January* 1543, they apply'd themselves to hew Timber to build the Brigantines, the Place affording Materials. Here, an old *Indian*, who could not make his escape with the rest, ask'd them, Why they stay'd there, since that River overflow'd every fourteen Years, and that was the Year when it would



would happen? which they regarded not, but afterwards were sensible how much it had behov'd them to have been advis'd by him.

---

C H A P. II.

*The Progress of the Spaniards in Florida continu'd, till their Arrival in New-Spain, where those Forces were dispers'd, and that Expedition concluded.*

THE Return of the *Spaniards* was soon known in all the neighbouring Parts, whereupon the Lord of *Anilco*, to prevent their favouring the *Guachacoyas*, sent an Embassy to *Lewis de Moscoso*, offering his Friendship, and making mighty Promises. The Ambassador that came was the *Apu*, or the Lieutenant General to the Lord; he brought abundance of Fruit and other Things, and 200 *Indian* Servants, sent back the Answer given him to his Lord, and stay'd himself with the *Spaniards*. The *Cazique* of *Guachacoya* also came to confirm the former Friendship with a great Present, and tho' it troubled him to see his Enemy there, he took no Notice of it. When the Timber was hew'd for building of the Brigantines, it appeared that there must be seven of them to carry all the Men: The Work was begun, which held them all the Months of *February*, *March* and *April*, all which Time the Lord *Anilco* furnish'd Necessaries, even to Blankets and Mantles to defend them from the cold; the new ones were kept

## 16 *The HISTORY of America.*

kept to make Sails, and the old serv'd instead of Okeham to caulk the Vessels. Those Mantles and Blankets were made of an Herb like Mallows, but has Threads like Flax; and they are afterwards dry'd according to their Fancy. Of the same they make all sorts of Cordage, from the Cables to the smallest Lines; and the best was, that the Lord of *Anilco*, who furnish'd all Necessaries, was very familiar among the *Spaniards*, assisting them, and it much troubled *Guachacoya* to see the Honour they did him.

On the other side of the River was a large fruitful Province call'd *Quiqualtanqui*, the Lord whereof was an haughty warlike Youth, who thinking that tho' the *Spaniards* were building Vessels to carry them away, they might return again in greater Numbers, resolv'd to destroy them; and to that Purpose assembled Forces from other Parts, representing the Danger that might accrue from those Strangers, and having concluded his Confederacy, and began his warlike Preparations, sent a friendly Message, with many fair Offers to *Lewis de Moscoso*, to render him the more secure, advising his Confederates to do the like, that they might the better surprize him. He gave them all favourable Answers, and they invited *Anilco* to enter into that League, but he gave Notice of it to the *Spaniards*: Nothing was known concerning *Guachacoya*, but he was suspected, for not having discover'd the Conspiracy. The Confederates still sent Messages and Presents to discover what was doing, and tho' the *Spaniards* warn'd the *Indians* not to come by Night, they took no Notice of it; whereupon *Gonzalo Silvestre* standing Centinel in the second Watch of the Night, when the Moon shone

## The HISTORY of America. 17

shone very bright, perceiv'd two arm'd *Indians* with their Plumes of Feathers, passing over the Ditch, on a Tree that was laid instead of a Bridge; who coming to the Postern, enter'd without asking leave; he gave one a cut on the Forehead, who holding fast his Bow fled, and the other, without staying for the wounded Man, got into the Canoe on the River, and went off, giving the Alarm to his Party. The wounded Man missing the Tree that lay across the Ditch, swam over; and coming, to the River cried out; whereupon others ran to assist him. At Sun-rising four *Indians* came from *Quiqualtanqui*, desiring *Lewis de Moscoso* to punish the Centinel, because what he had done was a Breach of the Peace, the wounded *Indian* being a Gentleman. Four more arriv'd at Mid-night upon the same Errand, saying, the wounded Man was at the Point of Death, and in the Afternoon four more affirming he was dead; and therefore he that did it ought to be publickly punish'd since it was an Affront to them all. *Moscoso* boldly answer'd, that they had been forewarn'd not to come by Night, being always honourably receiv'd in the Day; that he was sorry for what had happen'd, but being according to the Rules of martial Discipline, he could not punish the Man, nor would his Soldiers allow of it, if he went about it; wherefore he desired they would not break off Friendship on that Account. The Confederates thought fit to connive at that Action, looking upon *Moscoso* as a man of invincible Courage and much Conduct; but resolv'd to put in Execution their Design against the *Spaniards* as soon as possible.

It was now the Beginning of *March*, and the *Spaniards* being eager to get out of that Country;

## 18 *The HISTORY of America.*

labour'd indefatigably at their several Occupations for fitting out the Vessels, the best Gentlemen taking most pains whilst those who were not handy at it, look'd out for Provisions, hunting and fishing, and among others, a Fish was taken with a Hook, the Head whereof alone weigh'd forty Pounds. The Confederate Caziques carried on their Preparations for War, being acquainted with the Death of *Ferdinand de Soto*, that there were few Horses left, and that the Number of the *Spaniards* was much diminish'd. Two of their Spies bid some Women be patient, for they would soon deliver them from the Servitude they were in under those vagabond Robbers, killing them all, which they soon disclos'd to their Masters. When the Nights were still, a Noise of People was heard on the other side of the River, and there appear'd Fires at certain Distances, that look'd like Quarters of Soldiers; but it pleas'd God to disappoint the Designs of those *Indians* by the swelling of the River, which began on the 10th of *March*, and increas'd so much, that on the 18th, when they were at the Procession of *Palm-Sunday*, for they observ'd all religious Practices, the Water broke in at the Gates of the Town, so that there was no going along the Streets two days after without Canoes. This Inundation was forty Days in rising to the Height, that is to the 20th of *April*, the River extending itself above twenty Leagues on each Side, so that nothing was to be seen all the Country about, but the Tops of the highest Trees, the People going about every where in Canoes. During the Time of this Innudation, the *Spaniards* sent twenty of their Number in four Canoes bound together two and two, to prevent their being overfet by the



Trees that were under Water, to demand Rosin; Blankets and Cordage for finishing the Work of the Vessels. Those Men found the Town of *Anilco* destroy'd, tho' it was twenty Leagues from the *Spaniards*; the Inundation extended five Leagues farther. The Cazique spoke with *Gonzalo Silvestre*, who commanded those *Spaniards*; having a Kindness for him, because he restor'd him a young Son that had been all the Progress to the Westward, understood the *Spanish* Tongue; and was so well pleas'd with the *Spaniards*, that he was unwilling to return to his Father. *Anilco* gave *Silvestre* all that he demanded. It pleas'd God, that towards the latter End of *April* the Water began to fall off, but so slowly, that on the 10<sup>th</sup> of *May* there was no going along the Streets of the Town, by reason of the Mire, which was very troublesome; because they were barefoot; which was their greatest Affliction, all their Shoes having been burnt, with the rest, at the Battle of *Mavila*; so that the Shoes they made being of untann'd Leather, as soon as wet were like a Piece of Tripe. At the latter End of *May* the River return'd to its own Channel, and the Confederate Caziques drew together their Men, to put their Design in Execution, whereof the Cazique of *Anilco* gave Advice to *Moscoso*, with the Signals agreed on between them, offering 8000 well disciplin'd Men to assist the *Spaniards*, and that if he would retire into his Country the Conspirators would not dare to attack him there. *Moscoso* return'd Thanks for his Offers, saying, that as he design'd to go down the River, it was not proper to retire into his Country, or accept of his Forces, to avoid drawing the Ill-will of his Neighbours upon him; promising, that if it

should please God ever to put it in his Power, he should not have cause to repent the Service he had done the King of *Spain*, and his Kindness to those Men, praying him to be gone, lest his Stay might give the Enemy some Umbrage. Many *Spaniards* were so resolute that they would have persuaded *Moscoso* to accept of the Forces offer'd him, and to make an offensive War, by which Means he might easily subdue those People, and afterwards better resolve what was to be done; but he was sensible of his own Weakness, and would not confide too much on *Anilco*.

Four Days after, came the Messengers from the Confederates, in the same Manner as *Anilco* had before given Notice, designing to observe the Posture of the *Spaniards*, and having strictly examin'd them, it was debated what ought to be done with those Men who came with such fraudulent Intentions; and tho' some were for giving them fair Words, as had been done till then, their Opinion prevail'd, who advis'd to punish them, that their Lords might know their Treachery was discover'd, which might, perhaps, prevent their putting it in Execution. Whereupon, tho' there were many Messengers, only thirty of them had their Hands cut off, which prov'd so successful, that the Confederacy was thereby dissolv'd, and the Forces retir'd to their respective Countries. However, thinking they might be more successful by Water than by Land, the *Spaniards* having built no more than seven great Boats, they agreed to gather a great Number of Canoes, to pursue them going down the River. The *Spaniards* considering that their Safety depended in their Departure from thence, hastened the building of their Vessels, and not having Iron-Work  
enough

## *The HISTORY of America.* 21

enough to make whole Decks, they made Quarter-Decks at Head and Stern to secure the Provisions, laying strong Planks in the Midships; gather'd all the *Indian* Corn, Pulse and dry Fruit they could, made Bacon of the Swine that were left, keeping eighteen alive, as not despairing of planting a Colony on the Sea-Shore, if there were Conveniency for it; gave the two Caziques that were their Friends, each of them two Boars and two Sows to breed. With the Hogs Lard they temper'd the Rosin, instead of Pitch and Tar to daub their Vessels; provided Canoes to carry thirty three Horses they had still left, and the Canoes being made fast together, carried them very well; besides that, every Brigantine had a Canoe at the Stern. On *Midsummer* Day they launch'd the Brigantines, and on *St. Peter's* Day, the 29<sup>th</sup> of *June* all Things were in Readiness, the Brigantines and Canoes having Defences made of Planks and Skins against the Arrows; and taking leave of *Anilco* and *Gnachacoya*, left them Friends, desiring they would continue so for the future.

Two Captains were appointed to each Brigantine, to the end that when one went ashore the other might stay aboard. About 350 *Spaniards* imbark'd, with near thirty *Indian* Men and Women aboard each Vessel, all of their own free will, declaring they would rather die with their Masters than stay there. On *St. Peter's* Day, as was said before, about Sun setting, *Moscoso* having encourag'd his Men, they set Sail, plying their Oars at the same Time, and held on that Course all the Night, and the next Day and Night; but the Day after there appear'd about them a Fleet of near 1000 Confederate Canoes, some of them so large, that they had twenty five Oars on each side,

## 22 The HISTORY of America.

carrying abundance of arm'd Men, besides those that row'd, which large Canoes were suppos'd to be the Admirals. They were painted one Red, another Blue, and others of several Colours, the Men's Bodies of the same Colours as the Canoes, and so their Bows, all which, with the many and various Plumes of Feathers on their Heads, made an agreeable Appearance. They row'd after the *Spaniards* to the Tune of their Songs, which, as the Interpreters declar'd, imported, Those vagabond Strangers shall die in the Water, and become Food for the Fishes, and extolling the Bravery of their Lords and Commanders. When those *Indians* had taken a View of the *Spanish* Squadron, they divided their Navy into three Parts, plying up close to the Bank on the Star-board-Side, then their Van forming a long and narrow Squadron, assailed the Barks, and passing along cutting the River aslope, pour'd in a Shower of Arrows, which wounded several *Spaniards*, notwithstanding their Defences and Targets. The other two Squadrons did the like; and the Brigantines holding on their Course, came up with the first of the three Squadrons, all which repeated the Charge as before, and did the like in the Night, hoping after this Manner to consume the *Spaniards*, who held on their Course in this Manner ten Days, doing some Execution with their Cross-bows, their Muskets having been all turn'd into Iron-Work for their Vessels, because they had no Powder left. When the aforesaid ten Days were past, the *Indian* Fleet drew back half a League from the *Spaniards*, who keeping on their Way, spy'd a small Town, and guessing, that since the *Indians* left them, they must be near the Sea, having run, as they judg'd, 200 Leagues, as  
 conti



continually plying their Oars, as well as sailing along a River that ran streight; they set ashore 100 Soldiers to get some Provisions, and landed eight Horses, to ease them and to fight, if there were occasion. The *Indians* abandoning the Town, those *Spaniards* found great Plenty of Provisions of all Sorts, of Goats Leather white, and all Colours, many Mantles, other Skins well dress'd, and a long Slip of the finest Sables eight Yards long, and an Ell broad, adorn'd at certain Distances with Strings of Pearls, and small Tufts of Seed-Pearl, regularly plac'd. *Gonzalo Silvestre* who commanded these Men, had this Rarity, thought to be some Ensign of War, or for their Dances. People then appearing together about the Fields, and the Fleet of Canoes returning, a Retreat was sounded by the Trumpets, and the Enemy pressing on furiously, the *Spaniards* were oblig'd to abandon their Horses, which the *Indians*, after taking off their Saddles and Bridles, shot to death with their Arrows, to the great Grief of the *Spaniards*, who held on their Voyage; the *Indians* not observing their former Order, but divided into several Squadrons. It happen'd, that one of the Brigantines kept not up with the others, being parted the Distance of about 100 Paces, which the *Indians* immediately attack'd, boarded, and in all probability would have taken it, had not the others come up to rescue it. However, the *Indians* retiring carry'd off the Canoe that was at the Stern of it, with five of the Sows they had reserv'd for Breeders, and this happen'd on the 13<sup>th</sup> Day of their Departure. The 16<sup>th</sup> Day, one *Estevañez*, a desperate clownish Fellow, puffed up with the Reputation he had gain'd for his Boldness, went aboard the Canoe that was at

## 24 The HISTORY of *America*,

the Stern of the Brigantine he was in, with five other Soldiers, whom he had deluded by saying, he was going to perform an Exploit to gain Fame, and to obtain leave of his Captains, said, he was going to speak to their General. As soon as clear of the Brigantine, he made towards the Enemy, crying, fall on them, they run. The General *Moscofo* seeing that mad Action, call'd him back by sound of Trumpet, and set out about forty Men in the Canoes, with whom went Captain *John de Guzman*, and his Kinsman *John de Guzman* without any Orders, the aforesaid forty Men being sent to bring back *Estevañez*, whom *Moscofo* design'd to hang. The Brigantines at the same Time furl'd their Sails, and row'd against the Stream, to support the Canoes. The *Indians* who were so dispers'd with their Multitude of Canoes, that they cover'd the Water for a Quarter of a League, made a-stern a little, to separate the *Spanish* Canoes from the Brigantines. *Estevañez* seeing them give way grew the more frantic, and push'd on, the other Canoes doing the like to detain him. The *Indians* then drew up in an Half-Moon, and when the *Spanish* Canoes were well advanc'd among them, those that compos'd the Horn, or Point on the Right, attack'd them with such Fury athwart-ships, that they all sunk, many passing clear over them, by which Means the *Spaniards* were drowned; and if any one happen'd to appear above Water, they shot him with their Arrows, or dash'd out his Brains with their Oars; and thus forty eight Soldiers perish'd, only four escaping. The *Indians* held on their Pursuit all that Day, with much rejoicing for their Victory. The 17<sup>th</sup> Day at Sun rising, when they had worship'd him with hideous

## The HISTORY of *America*. 23

ous Cries and Noise of Drums, Horns and Trumpets, they retir'd, when they had run about 400 Leagues, and the whole Course to the Sea was suppos'd to be little under 500.

The *Spaniards* seeing the River so wide, that they guess'd it to be 15 Leagues over, concluded that they must be near the Sea, and yet durst not quit the Channel, for fear of Danger; and thus they held till the 19<sup>th</sup> Day of their Voyage, when they saw the Sea, and not knowing where they were, resolv'd to sit their Vessels in an Island that was inhabited, and to rest three Days after their continual watching. They computed how far they had been up the Country, and asserted that they had been at the very Source of that River, which had nineteen Foot Water, where the Brigantines were built, and was a Quarter of a League over; whereupon they concluded that from the Source of the River to the Sea, the Distance was 800 Leagues, being as far as they had penetrated into the Province of *Florida*. When they had been three Days in the Islands, they saw seven Canoes issue out from a Place overgrown with Rushes; aboard the first of which was a gigantick Man, as black as if he had been born in *Guinea*, who standing at the Head of his Canoe, said, *You Robbers, why do you strole about this Coast, disturbing the Inhabitants? Get you out speedily at one of the two Mouths of this River, or I will kill you and burn your Ships: Let me not find you here this Night.* This said, he went back in among the Rushes, and the *Spaniards* observing that Canoes frequently came out from among them and hid themselves there again, sent *Gonzalo Silvestre* with 100 Men in their Canoes, carrying seventeen Cross-bows and three long

## 26 *The HISTORY of America.*

long Bows, the want of Muskets having oblig'd them to make use of the Arms of their Enemies, at which they were become skillful. They found sixty small Canoes ready to receive them, which they attack'd, oversetting three of them at the first Shock; and wounding many *Indians*, and the rest of the Canoes flying, they return'd to their Brigantines. This done, they sail'd to the Westward, for *New-Spain*, keeping the Coast of *Florida* always on their Starboard-Side, because they knew not where they were, nor had any Sea-Compass or Chart, or Instrument to find the Latitude. All that Day and Night they sail'd upon fresh Water of the great River, held on fifteen Days longer without any remarkable Accident, but that they were oblig'd to water every Day, for want of proper Vessels. After the said Time they found themselves among a Parcel of small Islands, where was such a Multitude of Sea-Fowl, with their Nests on the Ground, that there was scarce any Place to tread on, and this was good Provision, tho' the Flesh of them tasted fishy. The next Day they landed on a pleasant Shore shaded with Trees, to water, and those that were looking for Shell Fish found flat Pieces of Bitumen, like Pitch, which it is likely came from some Source. Having found this Conveniency, they thought fit to repair their Vessels, which were leaky, and this Work took them up eight Days, tempering the Bitumen with some Hogs-Lard they had. During that Time they saw only eight *Indians*, to whom they gave some thing of what they had left, without asking where they were, all their Wishes terminating in *New-Spain*. They proceeded on their Voyage  
close



## *The HISTORY of America.* 27

close under the Shore, for fear the North Wind should drive them out to Sea, and because they made some stay, where there was good fishing, for they had nothing else to eat. Thus they proceeded, the wisest among them not knowing where they were, but concluded that holding on that Course, if they were not swallow'd up by the Sea, they must at length come into *New-Spain*.

Fifty three Days were past since their coming out of the River, when the Wind began to blow furiously at the North, which, as they had always fear'd, forc'd them out to Sea; five of the Vessels keeping close under the Land, sought for some Shelter; the other two were in great Danger of perishing, when they saw the others making into a Creek, whom they could not follow, by Reason that the Wind blew so hard; and therefore in the Afternoon they stood away to the Westward upon a Bouldin, being stark naked, with only Clouts before them, because so much Water fell into the Vessels, that they were almost drown'd, some laded out the Water, others handed the Sails; and when they had been twenty six Hours in this Distress, without Meat or Sleep, the fear of Death making them incapable of either; about Sun-setting they discover'd Land, and a young Man said, he knew that Coast, because he had twice sail'd along it, tho' he could not tell what Country it was; that what appear'd Black was high Land, but that which appear'd whitish was a clean soft Sand, and it would be proper to make into it before Night; for if the Wind should happen to drive them upon the black Coast, there was no probability of saving their

## 28 *The HISTORY of America,*

their Lives. The Commanders of the Caravel that young Man was in endeavour'd to make known what he had said to them by Signs, and then with much difficulty before the Sun was set, ran the Vessel aground on the white Coast, the other following their Example, lightening them both by carrying what was aboard ashore, and the propping them, that they might not overset. When they were thus landed, two Men undertook to go see what was become of the other five Brigantines. The next Day three Parties of 20 Men each were sent to discover the Country; those two that went along the Coast, soon return'd with some Pieces of broken earthen Ware, of that Sort as is made at *Talavera* and *Malaga*, which gave them some Satisfaction. *Gonzalo Silvestre*, who went up the Country, having advanc'd a Quarter of a League, spy'd some *Indians* fishing in a Lake, and two others gathering Fruit off the Trees, whom the *Spaniards* endeavour'd to surprize, and yet one of them swam away from them over the Lake. The *Spaniards* took two little Baskets of Fruit they found in a Cottage, a Turkey, a Cock, and two *Spanish* Hens, with a little Conserve of *Maguey*, and holding the *Indian* fast, went back to their Company, asking where they were; but the *Indian* said nothing but *Brezos*, which as afterwards appear'd, signified that he belong'd to a *Spaniard* call'd *Christopher de Brezos*. When come to the Coast they found the Men rejoicing at the Sight of the broken earthen Dishes; but their Satisfaction was much greater when they saw the Hens and other Things. The *Indian* being ask'd what Country that was? answer'd, *Panuco*, that the other Brigantines were gone up the River to the City, which

which was ten Leagues off; that he belong'd to *Christopher de Brezos*, and that a League from thence, there was a Cazique who could read and write, whom he would call. They gave him some Toys, and going away he return'd within four Hours with the Cazique, and eight *Indians*, loaded with Fowl, *Indian* Corn, Fish, Fruit, and bringing Pen, Ink and Paper, with which they writ to the Governor of *Panuco*, giving him an Account of their Arrival.

The two Men that had been sent to seek the five Caravels, found them, and within eight Days they all met again, almost naked and bare footed, only cover'd with Skins of Goats, Lyons, Bears and other Creatures, so that they look'd more like Beasts than Men. The Governor of *Panuco* treated them kindly, sent Advice to the Viceroy of *Mexico*, who order'd they should be sent to him in the best Manner that could be, and after the Message, came four Horse-loads of Shirts, Buskins, and other Necessaries, besides Medicines and Sweetmeats. These Men being refresh'd, were ready to tear the King's Officers in Pieces, for not having suffer'd them to settle in *Florida*, where there was such Plenty of rich Furs and Pearls; whereupon they were order'd to march to *Mexico* in several Parties, to avoid Mischief, and the People ran out to see them pass by, as if they had been Monsters. At *Mexico* they were cloath'd and much made of by all the rich Inhabitants; and Discord again breaking out among them, for having abandon'd such a wealthy Country as *Florida*, the Viceroy appeas'd them, promising to undertake that Enterprize himself very speedily, with them, when they should be allow'd good Pay, and be provided

### 30 *The HISTORY of America.*

vided for the mean while. When cloath'd, some went away into *Spain*, others stay'd in *Mexico*, others went to *Pern*, and others became religious Men; and thus all those brave Soldiers were dispers'd. The Persons that had been sent by the Adelantado *Ferdinand de Soto*, when he was first advanc'd into *Florida*, to bring him Supplies from the *Havana*, faithfully sail'd from thence four several Years, and ply'd along all that Coast to find him, but could never hear any Tidings of him or his Men, till the last Year 1543. arriving in *October* at *Veracruz*, they were inform'd, that the Remains of those People had been conducted to *Mexico*. This Relation has been taken from that which was then sent to the King, presently after the unfortunate End of that Enterprize.

---

### C H A P. III.

*What happened to Philip Gutierrez, and James de Rojas, upon their Discovery beyond the Mountains Andes, towards the River of Plate.*

**H**AVING finish'd the Discovery of *Florida*, and mention'd what happen'd in other Parts, it is time to return into *South America*, where we must first mention the New Discovery made from *Pern*, and then come to take Notice of the Turmoils which happen'd in that Kingdom. *Philip Gutierrez*, and *James de Rojas*, before mention'd, when we left those Parts, with the Assistance



*The HISTORY of America.* 31

stance of the Governor *Vaca de Castro*, and the Money they laid out of their own, drew together 170 Horse and Foot, with all other Necessaries for their intended Discovery. *Rojas* went before to the Vale of *Xaquixaguana*, to wait for *Gutierrez*, and rendezvous his Men. There the *Indians*, who are talkative, and love to tell News, tho' ever so false, told him, they were inform'd that there was much Wealth towards the *River of Plate*, where some *Spaniards* were already, and they had seen large Breeds of *Spanish* Hens. Upon this Advice, *Rojas* resolv'd to desist from his first Design of marching towards *Chile*, and to proceed to the Westward. Before *Gutierrez* could join him, some pickthank Persons, to ingratiate themselves with him, whisper'd that the said *Gutierrez* intended to murder him, in order to have the sole Command; which he did not give much Credit to, but thinking he lost Time, march'd on with forty Men, leaving the rest under the Command of *James Perez Bezerra*, with a Letter to *Gutierrez* to follow him, and Instructions to *Peter Lopez* to sound his Intentions. He pass'd the Mountains *Andes*, a very bad Way, and enter'd upon the Province of *Tucuman*, which was four Leagues over, having travel'd fifty Leagues from the Province of *Chiquana*, the Place of his Departure. The Natives hearing of the Approach of the *Spaniards*, fled for fear. Having cross'd the Province of *Tucuman*, *Rojas* came to the Town of *Capayan*, the Lord whereof advanc'd with 1500 Men, loaded with some Straw, and their Arms, and when come near to *Rojas*, he order'd them to make a Mark, which the *Spaniards* were not to pass over, or come into his Country, for if they did they should be all kill'd. *Rojas* told the *Ca-*  
*zique*

## 32 The HISTORY of America.

*zique*, that those Christians were come from a Country where one only God was ador'd, who was the Creator of Heaven and Earth, and were Subjects to a King, to whom they must submit, which if they would comply with, they should be Friends, otherwise they must make War, and compel them to it. The *Indians* were amaz'd at the Fleetness of the Horses, having never seen any; and return'd no Answer, but began to hem in the *Spaniards*; which *Rojas* reproving them for, their Lord answer'd, That his Men were unmannerly, and would not obey him; wheretupon the *Spaniards* began to hack and hew among those naked People, who soon fled; and their Lord repenting and submitting, commanded his Men to give over. The Fame hereof being spread abroad, those People thought there had been something Divine among the *Spaniards*, who being but forty in Number; spread such a Terror. Peace being concluded with the Lord of *Tucuman*, *Rojas* thought it a Rashness to penetrate farther into those populous Provinces with only forty Horse, and therefore kept his Men under strict Discipline, and return'd to *Tuiguana*; where he sent for *Francis de Mendoza* to bring him all the Men that had been left at *Chiquana*; *Rojas*, and those who stay'd with him, living well in the mean Time, as having plenty of Hens, Geese, Guanacos, and other Provisions. The *Indians* would willingly have destroy'd those few *Spaniards*, but they were always so much upon their Guard, that those People durst not attempt it. Those *Indians* were well proportion'd, wore large woollen Mantles, or fine ones of Feathers in the Summer; the Women were naked to the Waste, but from thence downwards had short Coats, or Cloths wrapp'd about them; their Hair long, comb'd, and spread abroad;

## The HISTORY of *America*. 33

fed on *Indian* Corn, and the Flesh of their Guamacos, and Sheep; were addicted to Sorcery; believ'd no other Life but this; hated Sodomy; and the Reason why they were never subdu'd by the *Ingas*, was, because those Princes wholly bent their Thoughts upon conquering the Equinoctial Provinces, being those about *Quito*, because of their great Wealth; so that these *Indians* were always at Peace with the *Ingas*, being only oblig'd to make good the Frontiers, that no Enemy might pass that Way.

*Francis de Mendoza*, who, as has been said, had been sent by *Rojas* to *Gutierrez*, found him at *Totaparo*, where he gave an Account of all that had been done, desiring him to hasten on. Others acquainted *Gutierrez* with what had been said to *Rojas* concerning him; but he being a discreet Man, and a good Christian, publickly order'd his Men to use the utmost Expedition in order to join *Rojas*, whom he was resolv'd to be led by as being a most experienc'd Commander; and at the same Time writ to him, giving the greatest Assurances, that he would look upon himself as his Inferior, without regarding the ill Tongues of Back-biters. The *Indians*, who had expected that the *Spaniards* would depart their Country, seeing more come, withdrew all the Provisions so effectually, that nothing remain'd besides the *Indian* Corn upon the Ground, which was still green; which oblig'd *Rojas* to go abroad to seek for Sustenance; and at the same Time he sent to advise *Gutierrez* to halt till he could send word he had found the Stores that the *Indians* had hid. He could find nothing in those Parts, but upon Information that there was Plenty in a Province call'd *Concho*, he march'd thither and found suffi-

### 34 *The HISTORY of America.*

cient Store. There *Gutierrez*, notwithstanding all the muttering, and ill Suggestions of his Men, join'd him, to the great Satisfaction of them all. Being thus join'd, they resolv'd to discover, as far as they could, hoping to come to the *River of Plate*, where they heard there were many populous Nations, and there they might settle. Being upon the Point of setting out, they were inform'd by the *Indians*, that fourteen Leagues to the Westward from thence, was the Province of *Mocaxuca*, but that there was no Water in the Way to it; but those Men being daunted at nothing, sew'd up Sheepskins, and carry'd them full of Water, and having march'd part of the Day and Night, their Guides lost the Way, and they were oblig'd to halt. The next Day they advanc'd, and the Heat being excessive, and the Water spent, some dy'd, and they must all have perish'd, had not Providence reliev'd them with an heavy Rain, when making Pits in the Ground, they found some Refreshment. The *Indians* of that Province being inform'd, that the *Spaniards* were coming, abandon'd it, which put them to a Nonplus, till the Spies of those People having acquainted them, that the Number of the Strangers was small, about 600 of them attack'd the Baggage, but the Horse coming in they were soon routed, much admiring the Boldness of the *Spaniards*, yet believing that Numbers would at length prevail, they summon'd in all their Neighbours. The *Spaniards* resting there some Time, those People had leisure to assemble, and attack'd them so furiously, confiding in their poison'd Arrows, that without God's special Protection, those few Christians must have been all destroy'd, being three Days successively engag'd with that Multitude, who



who fought desperately in Defence of their Liberty. At length those *Indians* fled; *James de Rojas* having receiv'd a small Wound in his Leg, which he did not regard, but the Weapon being poison'd he dy'd of it. Soon after the Antidote was found against that Poison, which prov'd a great Relief to the Soldiers.

*Peter Lopez*, who had been sent out, before the Death of *Rojas*, travelling Eastward across desert barren Lands, came at length to the River *Soconcho*, along both sides of which there were great Towns, and return'd to inform *Gutierrez*, who resolv'd to march to the Province of *Tisuna*, where he found Plenty of Provisions. Whereupon leaving most of the Men there, he advanc'd fifty Leagues farther, when the Soldiers muttering for having been brought into those Parts, when they might have been led into rich Countries, *Francis de Mendoza* improving their Discontents, seiz'd the Commander *Gutierrez*, and sent him back into *Peru*, setting himself up for General of those Forces. This done, he sent *John Garcia*, with a few Horsemen, to discover towards the Back of the Vale of *Copayapo* in *Chile*, where he saw great Towns, and was inform'd of much Wealth to be had farther on. In several Places he found no Bread but what was made of Carobs, and abundance of that Country Sheep; but wanting Horseshoes, for he stay'd out three Months, he return'd to *Francis de Mendoza*, who having been abroad another way, had met with nothing of Value, and therefore resolv'd to go on the same Way that *Gutierrez* had taken, but meeting with great Quagmires, he kept along a Ridge of Mountains which crosses those Plains, and came upon many Towns and Brooks, that ran down from those Hills,

### 36 *The HISTORY of America.*

when having discover'd thirty Leagues in length, and finding a populous Country full of Provisions, he cross'd it several Ways ; and as they were quarter'd in a Town one Night, the *Indians* thinking to surprize them, set Fire to it, and had not they been very watchful they had all perish'd, yet some Horses, Mules, and Baggage were lost, the Fire being very fierce. *Mendoza* set out from thence to the Southward, the Hills tending that way ; and when he had advanc'd eight Days, thought best to go before with sixty Horse, leaving the rest to follow under *Nicholas de Heredia*.

Before he would set out, the said *Heredia*, who had been appointed by the Governor of *Peru*, *Vaca de Castro*, to be Commander in chief, in case that *Gutierrez* and *Rojas* should happen to die, aspiring to that Command, combin'd with some Soldiers and murder'd *Mendoza* ; which wicked Fact having been dexterously manag'd, no Disorder ensu'd among the Men, *Heredia* immediately producing the Orders of *Vaca de Castro*, and declaring that *Mendoza* had intruded himself into that Post, contrary to the King's Authority. This done, he resolv'd to proceed upon the Discovery of the Provinces along the *River of Plate*, and finding want of Provisions the way he went, turn'd back to the Province of the *Diaguitas*, where, as well as in the other Parts, the *Indian* Wheat was still green ; for which Reason the *Cazique Lindo* advis'd them to stay three Months, till the Land could afford Provisions, promising in the mean time to furnish them with Sheep, Ostriches, and some Corn. This Advice was generally approv'd of, but *Heredia* refusing to comply, sent *Peter Lopez* with fifteen Horse, to

*Soconcho,*

## The HISTORY of America. 37

*Soconcho*, fourteen Leagues off, to see what Provision there was, and order'd *James Maldonado* another way with another Party, holding on his own way himself; but it soon appear'd, that the Cazique *Lindo* had been in the right, for Hunger began to pinch; the Servants fed on Roots and Herbs, and grew sickly, and thus they continu'd a Month. In this Distress *Heredia* consulted with the Prime Men, and tho' some were for continuing the Discovery at any Rate, he being inclin'd to return to *Peru*, his Opinion prevail'd, and in order to it they made their Way to the Province of *Tucuman*, where they found plenty of Carobs and Corn, and therefore *Heredia* resolv'd to make some stay there. Here the Men mutter'd against quitting their Discoveries, and *Heredia* considering it would be dishonourable to return to *Peru* in a poor Condition, chang'd his Mind, and sent *James Alvarez* to see, whether there were Provisions in the Province of the *Nurcis*; for which Reasons he was hated by the Soldiers. *James Alvarez* returning, reported that there were Provisions where he had been sent; but *Heredia* marching thither with the Forces, found very few, which gave much uneasiness; and the more, for that the Men lying down in the Shade of some tall Trees, they prov'd so poisonous that their Faces swell'd, However holding on their Way, tho' with Scarcity of Provisions, they came to the Ridge of Mountains, that runs between that Country and *Peru*, which troubled *Heredia*, as having no Mind then to return into that Country; but others were for it on purpose to thwart him, and had prevail'd, but that they were prevented by the Snows, and swelling of the Rivers; for this happened in *February* 1546. To conclude

### 38 *The HISTORY of America.*

with this Enterprize, the Men growing daily more mutinous, form'd Parties, and were at the Point of murdering one another; whereupon *Heredia*, being no longer able to govern them, was oblig'd to repass the Mountains into the Kingdom of *Peru*, where he would have kept those Forces till they were recruited, and furnish'd again with all Necessaries for returning into those Provinces they had discover'd; but they hearing of the Rebellion that was then broke out in that Kingdom, said his Commission was expir'd; and thereupon about sixty of the Soldiers, and some Gentlemen, went away to serve the King's Party, and the rest dispers'd.

Before we enter upon the Troubles and Civil Wars in *Peru*, which must be next spoken of, it is proper here to take notice, that in the Year 1544. four *French* Privateers, with a small Tender, enter'd the Port of *Santa Maria*, which Place the *Spanish* Inhabitants abandoning, 400 *French* landed, and having stay'd there eight Days to gather in the Plunder, at their Departure burnt the Town. Thence they proceeded to *Cartagena*, where they did the like; but sailing thence to the *Havana*, in the Island of *Cuba*, upon the same Design, they found such a warm Reception, as oblig'd them to desist, with the Loss of fifteen of their Men, and then stood away for their own Country, through the Channel of *Bahama*.

*The End of the Fourth DECAD.*

THE





THE  
General HISTORY

Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of

AMERICA, &c.

DECAD V. BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

*The Arrival of the Viceroy Blasco Nuñez Vela in Peru; his Proceedings there, till the Rebellion broke out, he was made Prisoner, and again set at Liberty.*



THE Viceroy Blasco Nuñez Vela sail'd from *San Lucar* on the 3<sup>d</sup> of November, and arriv'd at *Nombre de Dios* on the 10<sup>th</sup> of January 1544. where he found some Persons from *Peru*, on their Way to *Spain*; and being inform'd, that they had much Money rais'd by the Sale of *Indians*,

and putting them to work in the Mines, he imparted the Orders he had from the King to the Judges of the Royal Court, enjoining them to punish such as had sent *Indians* to the Mines, who declar'd that the said Money ought to be seiz'd, which was accordingly done, and gave much uneasiness to all that were, or expected to be Masters of *Indians*. This done, the Viceroy went over to *Panama*, where, pursuant to another Order of the King, he set at Liberty all the *Indians* that had been brought out of the Kingdom of *Peru* against their Wills, and oblig'd the Commanders of Ships to carry them to their respective Homes. This was a second Motive for incensing the *Spaniards* in *Peru*, who were for enslaving those People. The Viceroy being inform'd of the mutinous Disposition those People were in, imbarc'd with all speed, and soon arriv'd at *Tumbez*, where he stay'd some Days, and writ to all the Cities of *Quito*, *Puerto Viejo*, and *Guayaquil*, acquainting them with his Arrival, and promising, as soon as he came to *Lima*, to settle the Royal Court, to do justice to all that thought themselves injur'd; however, for as much as he insist'd on the Execution of the King's Orders, the chief whereof were, not to over-burden the *Indians* with Tributes, nor to compel them to work, or do them any other Injury, those *Spaniards*, who only study'd to enrich themselves, and were us'd to act arbitrarily, without any Restraint, could not bear being curb'd, and began already to hate the Viceroy. He removing from *Tumbez* to the City of *St. Michael*, to set others a good Example, would not suffer any of his own, or his People's Baggage to be carry'd by *Indians*, but by Mules; and for as much as it was as yet impossible to have all  
Things

Things convey'd that way, he took care that such *Indians* as were employ'd should have moderate Burdens, that they should go no farther than to the next *Tambo*, and that they should be paid a certain Rate he had agreed with them, with which those People were well contented. The Inhabitants of the City of *St. Michael* were all in an Uproar, upon Advice of the Viceroy's Severity; however they receiv'd him in honourable manner, and he advis'd them to petition the King for Redress of the Grievances they pretended: But being advis'd to suspend the Execution of the King's new Ordinances; he answer'd, that he would exactly put them in Execution, without the least delay, because he had promis'd his Majesty so to do. Some *Caziques* resorted to the City, to demand their Subjects that were in the Service of the *Spaniards*, and the Viceroy order'd all that were willing to depart, to be set at Liberty; telling the *Caziques*, that it was the King's Will they should be his Subjects, and not Slaves; so that they were to give no *Spaniard* any more than his Due, and to use Weight and Measure. Whilst the Viceroy was advancing to *Lima*, his Predecessor, the Governor-General *Vaca de Castro*, receiv'd Advice of his Arrival, and set out from *Cuzco* for *Lima* to meet him, notwithstanding that some would have perswaded him to make for some Sea-Port, and sail away for *Spain*, which he did not think to be agreeable to his Duty; however did not believe himself oblig'd to desist from acting as Governor, till the Viceroy had produc'd his Commission at *Lima*.

The News of the new Ordinances being brought to *Arequipa*, the whole Town was in a Mutiny, many of the Inhabitants declaring that they would defend

## 42 The HISTORY of America.

defend their Possession with their Lives; and this Example was follow'd in most other Places. At *Lima*, *Vaca de Castro* being return'd thither, the Magistrates would have had him come to the Town House, and to sign several Articles they sent him; but he declar'd against all their Proposals, alledging, that he was still Governor, till the Viceroy appear'd there in Person, and produc'd his Commission; and the Citizens began to talk of not receiving the Viceroy, who being inform'd of it, made the more haste to that Place. Departing from *Truxillo*, he found the Provisions were carry'd away, was told of Designs form'd to murder him, and at the *Tambo de la Barranca*, the Gentlemen that came from *Lima* to meet him, declar'd that the Factor *Illan Suarez* had spoke scandalously of him; besides, when he was going to sit down to Dinner, he found an Inscription set up in the Room, containing these words, *I will take the Life of him that comes to take away my Estate*; yet having discover'd the Person that set it up, he forgave him. After all, he was receiv'd at *Lima* with much Pomp and Magnificence.

Whilst this was doing at *Lima*, *Gonzalo Pizarro*, so often spoken of before, was at a Town of his own, call'd *Chaque*, in the Territory of the Town of *la Plata*, in the Province of *los Charcas*, busy about gathering Silver, for then the Hill of *Potosi* began to be discover'd. Besides the many Letters brought him thither from several Parts, full of Complaints against the new Ordinances, there came a Servant of his Brother *Ferdinand*, whose Name was *Bustillo*, with Letters from several considerable Men, intreating him to come and rescue them from the impending Calamities, and



The HISTORY of *America*. 43

and a Copy of the Ordinances. When he had read them, he was much alarm'd, and told all then present, that the News brought him was worse than they could conceive, or he express, and threw the Letters and Ordinances down for them to read; then sent away to *Arequipa*, to stop some Money and Plate he was sending into *Spain*, going away himself to *Porco*, to gather more. An intimate Friend he had with him, with whom he was very familiar, observing him so thoughty, advis'd him, not to be led away by other Mens Fancies, nor to head any Commotion, because they were sure never to go unpunish'd who offended God, and their rightful Sovereign; and it was a shame that he who had contributed so much towards subduing that Empire to the King, should go about to embroil it. The Town of *la Plata* continu'd in Peace, the Magistrates sending Deputies to the Viceroy, praying him to suspend the Execution of the Ordinances, till the King could be acquainted with the Reasons that could be offer'd against them. In the mean Time *Gonzalo Pizarro* being a Man of a weak Judgment, and carry'd away by Ambition, and Passion, resolv'd to go to *Cuzco*, there to advise with his Friends; and accordingly set out with all the Plate he could gather, and about a Dozen or fourteen Servants. Many of his old Friends resorted to him, as did abundance of Soldiers that were dispers'd about the Country, and wish'd for a fresh Opportunity to fish in troubled Waters, all whom he countenanc'd and caress'd. Being thus encourag'd by the Advice of so many Persons, he began to utter many undutiful Expressions, and yet he was receiv'd at *Cuzco* in a splendid manner, tho' the Magistrates had been advis'd to forbid him coming

#### 44 *The HISTORY of America.*

coming to that Place, since he had no Business there. Some of the Inhabitants, who were averse to Rebellion, would not visit him; but others encourag'd him to take up Arms, and several considerable Persons foreseeing what was like to ensue, withdrew out of that Place. *Pizarro* made it his Business to gain Friends, becoming very familiar and affable, as is usual with those that stand in need of others, tho' they are led away by Pride, when arriv'd at what they desire. He spar'd for no Wiles, Lies, Dissimulation, or Expences, which secur'd the Soldiers to him; pretending, that he desir'd nothing for himself, but only sought the publick Good; the usual Language of all Ringleaders of Rebellion. The first step that *Pizarro* took towards his Revolt, was getting himself appointed Commander against *Mango Inga*, which was a Contrivance of his Friends, by which he was empower'd to raise Men, and make other warlike Preparations. Having gain'd this Point, his next Step was to have himself chosen Chief-Justice, and Solicitor-General at *Cuzco*, that he might go to *Lima* to petition against those he call'd unjust Ordinances; and the Magistrates so far comply'd, as to grant him Power to go to *Lima*; and then he began to discover his Intentions, talking very impudently, and promoting the Rebellion; yet this would not satisfy without being also appointed Chief-Justice, which was also carry'd by a majority of Votes, tho' some of the Prime Men vigorously oppos'd it, and went away, rather than give their Consent in writing. Some Lawyers, of whom there are always enough to promote Rebellion by misinterpreting the Laws, declar'd that *Pizarro* might then legally go to *Lima* with Forces, to petition against the Ordinances, which

## The HISTORY of America. 45

which drew in many unthinking People to his Party. He immediately appearing abroad with the Rod, which is the Badge of that Office, gave out that he would do Justice, and not suffer any Wrong. Then to shew how arbitrary all Rebels are, Captain *Cermeno* went to *James Maldonado's* House, with a Party of Soldiers, carry'd him away to *Pizarro's* Apartment, and there compel'd him, for fear of Death, to sign the Instrument, for making him Chief-Justice, which he had before refus'd to subscribe. The same Violence was offer'd to *Antony Altamirano*, *Peter de los Rios*, and others; and *Alonso Carasco*, the City Solicitor, had all his Estate seiz'd, and was himself dangerously wounded, and left for dead in the Street, for refusing to comply with their treasonable Practices.

*Pizarro* having resolv'd to carry on the Rebellion, sent *Peter de Hinojosa* to *Arequipa*, to raise Men, and gather Arms, and to bring away *Francis de Carvajal*, who was then in that City, and after some Excuses consented to go to *Cuzco*. *Hinojosa* having got what Arms, Men and Money he could, without offering Violence to any Body, as being of a very mild Disposition, return'd to *Pizarro*, who then began to act barefac'd. *Laurence de Aldana*, who was at *Xanxa* upon his Estate, writ to the Viceroy, giving him an Account of the Dispositions there were for a Revolt; and presently after came Advice, that *Pizarro* was appointed Procurator General; yet he would not seem to believe it. In the mean Time *Pizarro* being invited by Letters to *Lima*, wholly devoted himself to his wicked Designs, and in order to carry them on, nam'd all the Commanders of his Forces. *James Centeno* came then to  
Cuzco

## 46 The HISTORY of America.

*Cuzco* with the Viceroy's Dispatches, which *Pizarro* seiz'd, fearing lest if they should be seen by the Loyal Party, those People might comply with them. Next he sent *Francis de Almendras* to *Guamanga* to seize the Artillery that had been left there by *Vaca de Castro*, which Captain *Basco de Guevara*, who had Charge of it, hid and went away himself; but *Almendras* having found it, by putting many *Indians* to the Rack, carried it away to *Cuzco*. The Viceroy was now generally hated, and suspected all Men; and being jealous of his Predecessor *Vaca de Castro*, caus'd him to be kept Prisoner aboard a Ship; and resolving to perform the Promise he had made to the King, caus'd the new Ordinances to be proclaim'd at *Lima*, which set all that City in an Up-roar, and order'd a Fleet to be equipp'd, the Command whereof he gave to *James Alvarez Cucto*, his Brother in Law. All the well affected advis'd him to raise Forces, but he said, the King had not sent him to make War on his Subjects, and therefore endeavour'd to compose Things amicably, by means of the Bishop and others advising *Pizarro* and his Followers not to engage in a Rebellion, and sending him authentick Copies of his Commission and Instructions.

The Judges that were to have form'd the Royal Court, imbarcking at *Panama*, landed at *Tumbez*, where they were inform'd of the Disorders in *Peru*, receiv'd many Complaints against the Viceroy, and travell'd on by Land, without regarding the Example he had set them, loading the *Indians*, living at the Expence of others, telling those that complain'd, that the Viceroy was Head-strong, and that when the Court was settled, a Check would be given to his Follies. When



## The HISTORY of *America*. 47

come to *Lima* they found the City in Arms, the Viceroy acquainting them with all that had happen'd, and the Court was settl'd. At the same Time many of those who had been aiding to the Rebellion of *Pizarro*, being sensible of their Crime, sent a Priest to the Viceroy, to assure him, that if he would pardon them, they would come to his Service. The Judges advising with the Viceroy, were utterly against arming, without which he urg'd that the regal Authority was not to be supported, and yet consented to suspend the new Ordinances; and thus began the Discord between the Viceroy and those Judges, which was the Occasion of many Mischiefs. The Viceroy being resolv'd to have Recourse to Arms, appointed all his Commanders, the Drums began to beat, and above 500 Men were soon rais'd, of all which *Pizarro* was advertis'd by some Inhabitants of *Lima*, caus'd the Dispatches sent him by the Viceroy to be seiz'd, lest if known they might occasion some to fall off from him, drew together 350 Men, corrupted some Officers employ'd in the King's Service, and hang'd a Youth for attempting to go over to the Viceroy. Being advanc'd from *Cuzco* to *Xaquixaguana*, he there appointed *Francis de Carvajal* his Major General, because he was an old Soldier, infamous for his Avarice, and much more for his Rebellion and *Spanish* Blood he spilt; for which reason he will be often mention'd in the Account of the Civil Wars. The Viceroy's Orders being brought to *Cuzco* for those People to come to his Assistance, *Ortun Sanchez*, a Priest, fix'd them up on the Church Door; Whereupon *James Maldonado*, whom *Pizarro* had left there as his Lieutenant, not regarding any thing but his Duty to his Sovereign,

## 48 The HISTORY of America.

vereign, caus'd Proclamation to be made, that such as would serve the Viceroy, might freely do it; whereupon *Alonso de Mesa* display'd his Colours in the Market-Place, crying, *Long live the King*; but so few were loyal there, that the Town being in an Uproar, he was oblig'd to ride away and shift for himself. The *Inga Mango*, thinking that these Distractions among the *Spaniards* might afford him an Opportunity to recover the City of *Cuzco*, march'd towards it with an Army of *Indians*, among whom were five *Spaniards*, who having been concern'd in *Almagro's* Revolt, were fled to that Prince to save their Lives, and he had entertain'd them till then; but some Words arising at that Time, he order'd them to be murder'd; yet they having their Weapons in their Hands, made a great Slaughter, and among the rest kill'd *Mango Inga*; whereupon his Forces retir'd to the Mountains *Andes*, without daring to make any farther Attempt, having by their Multitude destroy'd those few *Spaniards*.

Some of the Viceroy's Officers now deserted to *Pizarro*, and persuaded him to assume the Title of Governor, and the Stile of Lordship; and at the same Time the Judge *Zepeda*, and the King's Officers began to hold Cabals in *Lima*, in prejudice of the King's Service. Whilst these Things were in Agitation, the President *Baltassar de Loyssa* came to *Lima*, and gave the Viceroy an Account of the Posture of *Pizarro's* Affairs; whereupon the Viceroy pass'd a Pardon for all that had follow'd *Pizarro*, excepting only some few of the vilest of them, which was much against the Inclination of the Judges, who would have had all Affairs manag'd their own Way. *Pizarro* being advanc'd as far as *Andagnaylas*, the Bishop of

*Lima* met him there, and propos'd his coming to an Accommodation, and petitioning the King, rather than acting by Force of Arms; to which *Carvajal* answer'd, that the Design of all there was to send some Persons of Distinction to acquaint his Majesty with the Posture of Affairs. The Bishop replying, That they ought not to proceed any farther without declaring their Demands; *Carvajal* rejoyn'd, That the General and those Gentlemen demanded four Things of the Viceroy, 1. That the Laws should be suspended for two Years, till Deputies could be sent to the King. 2. That all Grants made to the Conquerors should be confirm'd. 3. That whilst the Deputies went to the King and return'd, *Pizarro* might stay at *Cuzco* with as many Men as he thought fit, for the Security of his Person, and that there should be no other Viceroy or Governor till the King had given an Answer to the Deputies. 4. That none of those who had adher'd to *Pizarro* should be call'd in Question. In fine, after many Debates, nothing was concluded on, the Rebels relying on their own Power; for the Viceroy was generally hated, and *Pizarro* belov'd, because those People being us'd to a libertine Life, apprehended the Viceroy's Justice, and depended on the unbounded Lewdness they might practice under the Latter. The King's Judges at *Lima* persuaded the Inhabitants to desert to *Pizarro*, as many of them did, and would have also persuaded a Jester to go along with them; but he ran with all speed to the Viceroy's House, crying out that all the Inhabitants were deserting the City; whereupon the Viceroy and all his Family and Officers rising out of their Beds, some of them went and seiz'd the King's Factor

## 50 The HISTORY of America.

*Yllan Suarez*, because two Nephews of his were gone out of his House, and he was suspected of having consented to it. Being brought into the Viceroy's Presence, and some Words passing between them, he was there kill'd by the Servants. On the other Hand *Pizarro* put *Francis de Orihuela* upon the Rack, to oblige him to discover the Posture of Affairs at *Lima*, and order'd *Philip Gutierrez* and *Arias Maldonado* to be put to death for their Loyalty.

In short, the three Judges *Zepeda*, *Alvarez* and *Tejada* conspir'd together against the Viceroy, and having drawn many to their Party, took the Viceroy out of his House, and carry'd him away Prisoner, whom the fourth Judge *Zarate* meeting, publickly declar'd he had no Hand in that Action, and that he would never be disloyal to his King, tho' he died for it, asking what it avail'd them to be Lawyers, if they made such ill Use of the Laws, which at last would bring upon them the Punishment they deserv'd; whereupon the Rebel Judge *Zepeda* commanded him to get him into his House. Many other Persons were imprison'd, the Viceroy's Goods were plunder'd, and the Soldiers were treated by the Townsmen, as if they had perform'd some notable Exploit. The next thing was declaring of the Judge *Zepeda* President, and he appointed *Martin de Robles* Captain General. This done, these unjust Judges sent to the Admiral *Cueto* to deliver the Ships, which he refus'd to do, but was at last deluded by them; and when they had those Vessels in their Possession, they sent the Viceroy aboard them, in a scandalous and disrespectful Manner, appointing the Judge *Alvarez* to carry him over into *Spain*, there to impeach him before the Council,



cil, of such Misdemeanors as they had thought fit to lay to his Charge. As soon as *Alvarez* came aboard, he declar'd that seizing of the Viceroy had been an heinous Crime, and therefore he there begg'd his Pardon, and restor'd him to his Liberty, as Viceroy, offering what Money he had there to raise Men and return to the Execution of his Office. The Viceroy return'd him Thanks, promising never more to think of what was past. The former Governor *Vaca de Castro* was carry'd back to *Lima*, where a Conspiracy was form'd against the usurping Judges, who having discover'd it, put some Gentlemen upon the Rack, and cut off the Hand of one *Barriornuero*, whereupon some Persons seeing those cruel Proceedings withdrew themselves out of the City.

---

C H A P. II.

*The Rebel Gonzalo Pizarro advances towards Lima, is declar'd Governor General; the Town of La Plata declares for the King; the Rebels endeavour to retake the Viceroy, who is well receiv'd at Quito and Popayan, and returns to fight the Rebels.*

**P**izarro suspecting many Gentlemen to be loyal, caus'd them to be apprehended, and strangled *Gaspar Rodriguez*, after which many re-  
E a                      forced

sorted to him from *Cuzco*, upon which he made publick Rejoycings, and receiv'd the Compliments of the prime Rebels. *Carvajal* would have then cut off the Head of *Laurence de Aldana*, who was coming to them with a Letter from the Judges at *Lima*, but *Pizarro* sav'd his Life, at which *Carvajal* was displeas'd, and *Aldana* went away to his *Indians*, to avoid seeing the Cruelties exercis'd by that barbarous *Carvajal*. At this Time *Lewis de Ribera* was Governor of the Town of *la Plata*, and receiv'd the Viceroy's Orders for raising of Men; whereupon he assembled the Magistrates, having heard much of *Pizarro*'s wicked Proceedings, and it was unanimously resolv'd to serve the King, without incurring the least Blemish of Disloyalty; to which Purpose all the Inhabitants were drawn together into the Church, where the Governor *Ribera* made a loyal Speech, declaring that *Pizarro* was in actual Rebellion, having usurp'd a Power which none but the King and his Vicegerent could grant; that he exercis'd the same with the utmost Tyranny and Cruelty, murdering, racking and robbing the best of Men, and promoting the most wicked, for which Reason any Person might lawfully kill him, as a publick Enemy; and therefore they ought all to espouse the King's Cause, which being just, it was to be hop'd that God would bless it with Success; yet if it should please his divine Majesty, that they should die in that Quarrel, their End would be glorious, and their Town ever renown'd for their Loyalty. The Inhabitants generally comply'd with their Governor, and displaying the King's Standard; fourteen of them mounted a Horse-back well accouter'd, and drew together 30 good Soldiers,

## The HISTORY of America. 53

diers, their Number being no greater, because they would not leave the Town expos'd to Insults; those brave Men marching away to *Arequipa*, and by the Way receiving Advice of, the seizing of the Viceroy, and the Murder of the several Persons before mention'd. Whilst those Things were in Agitation, the Judges at *Lima* had sent a Messenger to *Pizarro*, ordering him to disband his Forces, and to come to that City with a small Number, as became a Petitioner; to which he and his Council answer'd, That they would all go together to *Lima* to petition. The three Judges meeting at *Lima* to receive the said Answer, where the Messenger that brought it, said, *As far as I can understand, what Gonzalo Pizarro and his Commanders drive at, is, that he be made Governor of all the Country from Quito as far as los Charcas, and if he be contradicted, to kill you and plunder the Cities.*

*Pizarro* was well pleas'd, and much puff'd up with the Expectation of being Governor. *Francis de Carvajal* was his chief Counsellor, an old Soldier, of a sharp Wit, but very covetous, cruel and void of all Virtue, who advis'd his Master to mind his own Business, without any regard to Mercy or Compassion, to be of good Heart, and ready to meet all Dangers; for if he once were possess'd of the Government, they would then consider what was to follow. He was sent before by *Pizarro* to *Cuzco*, to kill all the Inhabitants of *la Plata* that were come thither to serve the Viceroy, some of whom having timely Notice, made their Escape; however he seiz'd five very worthy Persons, who had serv'd the King very faithfully, of which Number one *Manjares* sav'd his Life by giving *Carvajal* 2000 Ducats

#### § 4 The HISTORY of *America*.

in Gold; another was spar'd at the Request of his Brother, who was in *Pizarro's* Service, and the other three were hang'd on a Tree, with an Inscription, importing that they suffer'd for being Mutineers; and the Estates of those that fled, as well as those that suffer'd, were seiz'd. This struck a great Terror in the City, all People lamenting to see such good Men put to Death without any Cause; whence they concluded what Calamities were like to ensue, especially considering the inhuman Disposition of *Carvajal*. The Judge *Zepeda* finding himself disappointed of the Hopes he had conceiv'd of governing the Kingdom in Conjunction with his Brethren, repented of his vile Practices, and consulted how to prevent the Mischiefs that were like to ensue, but it was too late; so that he thought best to comply with the Intruder, and accordingly sign'd a Commission for *Pizarro* to be Governor, as did the Judges *Tejada* and *Zarate*, this last protesting that he did it for fear; nevertheless *Pizarro* was conducted into the City in triumphant Manner, attended by all his Forces, amounting to 600 Men and 2000 *Indians* carrying Burthens. He was advis'd to secure the Judges, but would not, appearing very friendly to *Zepeda*, yet he imprison'd *Gabriel* and *Gomez de Rojas*, *James de Silva*, *Benedict Suarez* and Captain *Alonso de Caceres*, all whom he order'd to be put to death, but upon many Intreaties spar'd them, and they then espous'd his Party. There was then but one Ship in the Harbour, aboard which the former Governor *Vaca de Castro* was kept Prisoner, who understanding that *Pizarro* had resolv'd to murder him, prevail'd with the Commander, who carry'd him away to *Panama*. Captain *James de*



## The HISTORY of America. 55

*Gumiel* was more unfortunate, being strangled only for having in Conversation discours'd of the Punishment they might expect from the King; and *Roderick Martinez de Prado* underwent the same Fate, for having adher'd to the Viceroy, who being landed at *Tumbez*, resolv'd to go away to *Quito*, where he might receive Succours from *Popayan* and the new Kingdom of *Granada*, and accordingly sent away *Ferdinand Sarmiento*, who was an Inhabitant of *Quito*, to give an Account of the Posture of Affairs, and excite those People to be loyal to their King. *Sarmiento* being come to that City, deliver'd the Viceroy's Letters, which were read with much Compassion for his Sufferings, and Indignation for the Affront offer'd to the King's Authority by the Rebels, all that were present promising to stand by the Viceroy with their Lives and Fortunes, and to make good their Assurances, about thirty Horsemen immediately set out to him. He had also sent to *Puerto Viejo*, and to the City of *St. Michael*, from both which Places some resorted to him, which was a great Comfort to him, as believing that Loyalty was not altogether lay'd aside.

*Pizarro* having got the Power of the Sword, resolv'd to rid himself of the King's Judges, that all Things might be absolutely at his own Disposal, and accordingly sent the Judge *Tejada* into *Spain*, to give a favourable Relation of the Posture of Affairs in *Pern*, representing his Rebellion as only a Compliance with a Force put upon him by the People, with all the Artifice that is natural to such Usurpers, of what they have no right to; and at the same time Advice being brought that the Viceroy was at *Tumbez*,

## 36 The HISTORY of America.

*Machicao* was sent either to murther or to expel him the Kingdom. New Governors were also sent to all the principal Towns, with Orders to him that went to *la Plata*, to behead *Lewis de Ribera* and three other Gentlemen, for their Loyalty to the King. *Ribera*, and those other Gentlemen, who as was said before, set out from *la Plata*, to serve the Viceroy, being inform'd by the Way, that all was lost, dispers'd themselves and took several Ways to endeavour to save their Lives, there being no possibility of making their Escape all in a Body. The Viceroy from *Tumbez* sent *James Alvarez de Cueto* into *Spain*, to give the King an Account of all that had happen'd, and appointed his Brother, *Vela Nuñez*, General of his Forces, sending him with some Men to reduce the City of *St. Michael*, which he was told had declar'd for the Rebels, resolving himself to go away to *Quito*, upon Advice brought, that *Machicao* was coming by Sea, and follow'd by 400 Men, who march'd along the Coast. *Machicao* landed by Night with fifteen Musketeers, causing them to light many Matches to make the greater Shew, and had the Fortune to take one of the Viceroy's Centinels, who told him that the Viceroy had very near 300 Men, whereupon he retir'd, as did *Vela Nuñez*; and the Viceroy resolv'd to go away to *Quito*, leaving *Bartholomew Perez* aboard the Ship to observe *Machicao*, who the next Day took the Ship, and would have strangled *Perez*, but that the Judge *Tejada*, and *Francis Maldonado* sav'd his Life; then he plunder'd *Puerto Viejo*, and the Place call'd *la Culata*. *Alonso de Montemayor*, and others who adher'd to the Viceroy, were now come to *Quito* with a considerable Quantity of Gold of the King's Fifths,

## The HISTORY of America. 57

Fifths, for such rich Mines had been found this Year 1544, that in little more than twelve Months, above the Value of 1200000 Ducats had been drawn from them. The Viceroy and his Followers suffer'd much in their Way, by reason of the Badness of the Roads and want of Provisions, being forc'd to feed on Herbs, in which he gave a singular Example of Courage and Resolution; but when they came to *Tomebamba*, the Caziques and *Indians* brought in such plentiful Supplies, that they were all well refresh'd. Thence they proceeded to *Quito*, where the Viceroy began to raise Men, and make other warlike Preparations. At this Time several Persons arriving from *Peru* at *Panama*, advis'd those in command there to be upon their Guard and secure the Place, for that *Pizarro* would certainly send to make himself Master of it, and *Machicao* was already coming; whereupon some Orders were given for their Defence, but very negligently put in Execution, so that *Machicao* coming soon after, justify'd all the Villanies committed by *Pizarro* and his Gang, shamefully reviling the Viceroy, and threatening, unless they comply'd with him, to slaughter them all and plunder the City.

Whilst these things were in Agitation, the Court establish'd by the King at *Lima* was totally abolish'd, no Appearance of Justice remain'd, all was Confusion, Robberies, Murders and Barbarity; those who had no Hand in those Actions were stupify'd with Fear, not daring to trust their nearest Friends, nor so much as mention the Regal Authority; for if a Man was then but suspected of an Inclination to serve the King, he certainly died for it; some who thought to save  
them.

## 58 *The HISTORY of America.*

themselves by being silent were in the greatest Danger, whilst others carry'd Tales to curry favour, and others exhausted themselves in vile Flatteries, giving *Pizarro* the most specious Titles, which puff'd up his Pride, so that he became altogether arbitrary, being profuse to his Friends, and threatening, that unless the King confirm'd the Government to him, he would renounce him and call in the *French*. He then propos'd that all the *Spaniards* in *Peru* should give him the third Part of the Tributes they receiv'd from the *Indians*, which was granted, some consenting through Fear, others by Force; and that Contribution was valu'd at 250000 Ducats a Year, which was for warlike Stores, besides what was allow'd for his own Expence, and his Guard, being very considerable; and besides all the King's Gold and Silver which he seiz'd and dispos'd of as he pleas'd. He then order'd Gallies to be built at *Arequipa* to scour all the Coast as far as *Nicaragua* and *Guatemala*, and be Master of the Sea. The Stamps for the King's Fifth of the Gold and Silver were broken, and Orders given that none should be mark'd, or any Fifth taken, but that it should be current without any Impression, to give the Inhabitants the greater Liberty, and prevent those Metals being carry'd out of the Kingdom, which they thought would oblige the King to come to their Terms; all which was done to establish *Pizarro* in the Government; and yet Cruelty was the main Foundation rely'd on, for there was nothing more frequent than killing and bloodshed in all Parts; and it is certain that if those *Spaniards* could have agreed among themselves, the King would have found it a more difficult Task to reduce them; but



## The HISTORY of *America*. 59

but they were much divided, many desiring to preserve the Reputation of Loyalty; others, because they could not bear being subordinate to those they thought inferior to themselves in Quality; others, on account of the barefac'd tyrannical way of Proceeding, for they endeavour'd to suppress as much as the very Name of the King; *Pizarro* plainly shewing that he design'd to be absolute, and cast off all Obedience to his Sovereign and others, by Reason of the inhuman Cruelty then practis'd, which was astonishing.

To return to *Machicao* in the Bay of *Panama*; he there, among the Islands of Pearls, took three trading Vessels, which made him up seven Sail, with which he appear'd before that City, sending great Threats to the Inhabitants, if they did not submit to *Pizarro*; and they, tho' 700 Men had been drawn together to defend the Place, were so terrify'd, that they admitted him. He commanded all the Masters of Ships in that Port to join him, which they did for fear, seeing one hanging at his Yard's Arm, that had refus'd to obey him; then entering the Town with about 200 Men he had pick'd up, began to rob and insult the Inhabitants at Pleasure; sent away the Judge *Tejada*, and *Francis Maldonado* into *Spain*, and seiz'd all the Cannon he could find. Nothing was now to be seen but plundering, robbing, and murdering, which provok'd some Persons to conspire to kill him, but the Design being discover'd, he strangled several of them; then robbing all that was of Value, he embark'd again, with about 500 Men, to return to *Pernu*, in twenty six Vessels of all sorts. In his Way to *Tumbez* he took a Ship that came from *New Spain*, having Men and Horses aboard. There the Viceroy writ to him, offering the King's Pardon

## 60 The HISTORY of America.

Pardon, and great Rewards if he would come over to him; but he being very rich by his villainous Practices, would not depart from his Rebellion, being reserv'd to receive the just Punishment due to his Enormities. He sent Advice of his extraordinary Successes, and the Power he had assembled, to *Pizarro*, who, as is usual with all Traytors, fearing he might fall off from him in that Prosperity, sent *Peter de Hinojosa*, and *Martin de Robles*, to take the Command from him.

In the mean time the Viceroy, tho' he had been well receiv'd at *Quito*, soon perceiv'd, that all were not well pleas'd with his Presence, which he discreetly took no notice of; and to keep his Soldiers in good Humour, gave them Money, and bid them not be deceiv'd by fancying they should live better under the Rebel, for there could be no greater Servitude than serving of such People. *Francis Hernandez Giron*, an Inhabitant of *Pasto*, and a bold Man, came now to *Quito*, with whose Assistance the Soldiers were review'd, and there appear'd 260 Men, Horse and Foot. The Viceroy being inform'd that *John de Cabrera*, Lieutenant to *Sebastian de Belalcazar*, had drawn together some Men, to go upon the Discovery of the Provinces of *Dorado*, sent *Suer de Cangas* to desire he would join him, to serve the King, and at the same Time writ to the Adelantado *Belalcazar*, acquainting him with the Posture of Affairs, he being then employ'd in the War against the *Indians* of *Carrapa*, and yet declar'd, that he gave free leave to all that were willing to go serve the Viceroy, and if they were Men of Estates, their Lands and *Indians* should be secur'd to them. The Viceroy having receiv'd some Recruits, appointed his Brother *Vela Nuñez*, his Lieutenant-General, and nominated

nominated all the other Officers, and then proclaim'd many of *Pizarro's* Followers Rebels and Traitors. The Inhabitants of *Quito* gave him 50000 Pieces of Eight, besides considerable Supplies to the Soldiers to equip them; after which he set out on the 4<sup>th</sup> of *March* 1544. and some Differences arising between his Officers, he told them, he would go away into *Spain*, to give the King an Account of the evil Disposition of the People in that Kingdom towards his Service; but Captain *Francis Hernandez Giron* boldly answer'd, he ought to cut off the Heads of any that would not obey him, and not to abandon the Country, in that Confusion, which would not be for his Reputation.

---

C H A P. III.

*Carvajal sent against the Loyalists in the Southern Parts; The Viceroy advances to Quito; the Battle of Añaquito; the Rebels gain the Victory, and murder the Viceroy.*

WHILST the Viceroy was making the necessary Preparations in the Provinces about *Quito*, *Pizarro* having receiv'd Advice of his Actions, consult'd how to proceed, and the Judge *Zepeda*, being sensible that he could not escape Death for his Treachery, if the King's Party prevail'd, advis'd to march with all speed to take and execute him; which was approv'd by the Major-

## 62 *The HISTORY of America.*

Major-General *Carvajal*; whereupon 290 Soldiers were list'd, and *Pizarro* went by Sea to *Truxillo*, where he gather'd more Forces. In the mean Time the Viceroy advanc'd to *Chinchichara* with so much speed, that the Rebel Forces there being surpriz'd, left all they had behind them and fled; only some that desir'd to serve the King staying. Thence the Viceroy march'd to the City of *St. Michael*, and entering the same, gave leave to Plunder the Houses of five of the principal Rebels, without touching the others, for which Reason the Inhabitants pay'd him much Honour. The Rebel Commanders that fled to the Mountains were starv'd to Death, except *Gonzalo Diaz de Pineda*, who eating some poisonous Herbs, dy'd raving Mad. *John de Cabrera*, Lieutenant to *Belalcazar*, who, as was said before, had been invited by the Viceroy to serve the King under him, came away immediately to *Popayan*: *Pizarro* having receiv'd Advice at *Truxillo*, that his Forces at the City of *St. Michael* had been routed, march'd towards his Enemy with 500 Men, and the Viceroy understanding that he drew near, resolv'd to turn back to *Quito*, where he expected to be reinforc'd. At this Juncture one *Oliveira*, a Portuguese, came to the City of *St. Michael*, giving out, that he had deserted from the Rebels to serve the King, who however was suspected, and with good Reason, for it afterwards appear'd that *Pizarro* had promis'd him 40000 Pieces of Eight, as a Reward, if he could murder the Viceroy, which would put an End to the War. The Rebels being come within six Leagues of *St. Michael*, the Viceroy, who was much too weak to fight them, tho' he never wanted Courage, march'd away with all possible Speed, which  
being



## The HISTORY of *America*. 63

being known to *Pizarro*, he sent *Carvajal* after him with some Horsemen and Musketeers, who marching all the Night, began to ascend the Mountain in such difficult Places, that very few Men might have defended them, where he took a Soldier, who inform'd him, that the Viceroy was near by. A little farther on he fell in with the Baggage and plunder'd it. Then the Viceroy, in whose Camp no Centinels had been posted, through the Treachery of his Major-General, having himself mounted a Horseback just about break of Day, found the Enemy was not above two Musket Shot from him, and the Alarm being given, about eighty Men join'd him, being forty Pikemen, nine Musketeers, and the rest Horse, who alighted to fight with their Spears. The Viceroy then with much Bravery fac'd the Enemy, and tho' advis'd to retire, would not, but on the contrary said to Captain *Francis Hernandez*, Follow me, Captain, let us face these Traitors, and perhaps it may please God to assist us; and thus, notwithstanding all that could be said to him, he advanc'd to attack the Enemy, which *Carvajal* observing, he retir'd to the Foot of the Mountain, where *Pizarro* had then taken up his Quarters. The Viceroy seeing the Rebels retire, halted for fear of some Ambush, and returning to the Top of the Mountain, would have march'd away for *Cuzco*, which had been the best Advice; but most of the Commanders being against it, he consented to proceed to *Quito*, ever bearing up with an invincible Courage, and exhorting his Men to adhere to their Duty, which would purchase them immortal Honour.

*Pizarro* pursuing very close, some of the Viceroy's Men deserted, and *Carvajal* was again sent after

#### 84 *The HISTORY of America.*

after him with 150 Horfe, and some Musketeers; both Parties marching fo fast that they endur'd much Hunger, having nothing to eat but parch'd *Indian Corn*. In this Distress some deserted from the Viceroy; others betray'd him, and some that could not keep up with him were taken by the monstrous Villain *Carvajal*, and immediately hang'd. The Viceroy being sensible that the Captains *Serna*, and *Jaspar Gil* were treacherous, caus'd them to be put to Death upon the March, for a Terror to others; and to shew he was not daunted himself; whereupon the other Commanders bid him be of good Heart, since those were dead that would have betray'd him, promising that they would serve him faithfully. In this manner they travell'd through the Desert of the *Paltas* in a miserable Condition, the Viceroy, who was antient, having no shelter from the Rain, feeding on Herbs, and Leaves of Trees, or else a piece of a dead Horfe's Liver, and yet always bore up with extraordinary Courage, setting the Soldiers a good Example. His Brother *Vela Nuñez*, having his Arm broken, begg'd leave to stay and die in a ruin'd House, which he accordingly did, some *Spaniards* bearing him Company. The Viceroy being pass'd the Desert, and come to the Store-houses of *Tomebamba*, where he found Provisions, stay'd for those that were behind. There he try'd and executed his Major-General for Treachery, and would have done the like by the Captain of his Guard, but was prevail'd on to pardon him. *Pizarro* was advancing with no less Difficulty than his Enemies had done, and *Machicao* was marching another way towards *Quito*, where the Viceroy arriving, caus'd *Estacio*, and two others to be executed for Treason, and gave orders for providing

viding of Arms, and Captain *John Cabrera*, above spoken of, join'd him with his Men at *Otabalo*.

Whilst these Things happen'd in the lower Provinces, that is, about the Equinoctial, *Francis de Almendras*, sent by *Pizarro* to be Governor of the Town of *la Plata*, arriving there, seiz'd the Estates of some Gentlemen that were fled for their Loyalty, banish'd one, and put to Death another, on the same Account; whereupon *James Centeno* conspir'd against him with several others, seiz'd him in his Bed, and publicly executed him as a Traitor, being found guilty of many Crimes and Murders, and of having seiz'd the King's Artillery and Treasure at *Guamanga*; and at the same Time they hang'd a Servant of *Pizarro*, for many Insolences committed against the King. This happen'd on the 16<sup>th</sup> of June 1545. after which the Magistrates of the Town appointed *James Centeno* Chief-Justice, and Captain-General, those who had fled and absconded in the Mountains, were recall'd, and what had been done being known, many resorted to serve the King. *Alonso de Toro*, who was Governor of *Cuzco*, being inform'd of these Proceedings, assembled 200 Men, and march'd with them to oppose *Centeno*, who having only 170 Men, twenty of which Number were useless, and but few Musketeers, besides that he knew there were Traitors on his side, that held Correspondence with the Enemy, drew back towards the Town of *la Plata*, so many deserting by the way, that only ninety remain'd with him, which oblig'd him to abandon that Place, and retire to the Province of the *Chichas*, a spreading and warlike Nation. *Toro* then enter'd the Town of *la Plata*, appointed a new Governor,

## 66 The HISTORY of *America*.

and ruin'd all the Country through his Avarice, and the Rapine he permitted among his Soldiers.

*Pizarro* being come to *Tomebamba*, sent Orders to *Machicao* to halt till he had join'd him, as he did. The Viceroy at *Quito* declar'd, he would fight *Pizarro*, but that was not practicable, since he had join'd *Machicao*; whereupon he commanded all the Inhabitants of that Place to march with him to serve the King, under pain of being reputed Rebels and Traitors. This done he march'd away, very slenderly attended towards *Popayan*, and *Pizarro* enter'd that Place with above 700 Men, where he took to himself all the Province of the *Canaries*, and the Storehouses of *Tomebamba*, and his Men following the Example set them by him, plunder'd and robb'd all that was in their way. At *Otavalo* the Viceroy was join'd by *John Cabrera* and his Men, as was hinted before; and here the Traitor *Olivera*, who had long waited an Opportunity to murder the Viceroy, being discover'd, was hang'd. From this Place the Viceroy sent Messengers, one to the Adelantado *Belalcázar* to join him with his Forces, and another into the new Kingdom of *Granada*, for the Person governing there to send him new Supplies. When he came to *Pasto*, upon a Review, he found he had 300 Men, and then the *Indians* understanding that *Pizarro* was strongest, carry'd off all their Provisions, and the Viceroy held on his Way to *Popayan*, which was forty Leagues distant, and arriv'd there much fatigu'd, and with the Loss of a considerable Part of his Baggage. *Pizarro* having consulted at *Pasto* what was to be done, appointed *Peter de Hinojosa* Commander of his Fleet, and sent him to secure the City of *Panama*, the wicked Judge *Zepeda*, at the Time of his Departure,



parture, bidding him not to regard Christianity, but to secure their Lives and Fortunes, for on his Management depended their whole Safety or Ruin. In his Way to *Panama*, he put into Port *Buen-aventura*, where he took *Vela Nuñez*, the Viceroy's Brother, whom he had sent away to *Spain*, and with him a Bastard Son of *Pizarro*, whom some of the fawning Rebels call'd Prince, and others King; all kissing his Hand. Thence *Hinojosa* proceeded to *Panama*, where, after some Treaties, a great Part of the Town being for him, he was admitted, and did what he pleas'd.

*Pizarro* being inform'd of the rising of *Centeno* at *la Plata*, and that there were Commotions in other Places to the Southward, sent his Major-General *Francis de Carvajal* into those Parts to establish his Interest, and with him went twelve Persons as good as himself, whom the profane Wretch call'd his twelve Apostles. In the mean time *Pizarro* himself, and all his Men liv'd lewdly at *Quito*, plundering and ruining all the Country. The Viceroy being now at *Popayan*, was join'd by the Adelantado *Belalcazar*, by whose Assistance he made up about 400 Men, part of whom were sent away to *Pasto*, whilst the necessary warlike Preparations were making; the which being scarce compleated, the Viceroy, upon a false Information given him, that *Pizarro* was retir'd from *Quito*, march'd away with all his Forces to *Pasto*, and thence on the first Day of the Year 1546. having no true Intelligence of what was doing at *Quito*

Whilst the Viceroy was making the necessary Preparations for the War, *Pizarro*, as has been said, sent *Carvajal* to suppress the Loyal Party that began to appear in the Southern Provinces.

68 *The HISTORY of America.*

That inhuman Villain, proceeding with his twelve Companions to the City of *St. Michael*, extorted Money of the Inhabitants for the Expence of the War; and going thence to *Truxillo*, sent a Letter writ by *Pizarro*, to Captain *Melchior Verdugo*, who was at *Caxamalca*, to command that Gentleman to join and march with him to the Southern Provinces; but he being a Man of Honor, answer'd in plain Terms, that he would not be a Rebel; whereupon *Carvajal* would have seiz'd him, but he made his Escape, and *Carvajal* having seiz'd all the Treasure he could light on, held on his Way to *Lima*, where being well known to be an inhuman Butcher, he was well receiv'd by some through Fear, and by others through their Affection to the Party. When he had sufficiently plunder'd that City, and set out for *Guamanga*, by the Way he receiv'd Advice, that *Perucho de Aguirre*, *Zambrana*, *Pineda* and *Denis de Bobadilla* had conspir'd to kill him; the three first of them he hang'd immediately, but spar'd the fourth, knowing him to be a proper Instrument for his Purpose: Soon after he was inform'd by Letters, that the aforesaid Conspiracy was not certain, and that *Melchior Verdugo* had declar'd at *Truxillo* for the King, and it was fear'd he would march to *Lima*. *Carvajal* was glad of it, as going against his Will to *Cuzco*, because *Alonso de Toro*, who govern'd there was his Enemy, and yet he could not dispose of him at his Will, and therefore he return'd to *Lima*, where he seiz'd what Horses and Treasure he pleas'd.

At *Truxillo* Captain *Melchior Verdugo* endeavour'd to raise Men to serve the King, but was disappointed by the rebellious Disposition of the Inhabi-

Inhabitants ; however he gather'd some Money, and with thirty Soldiers imbarc'd for *Nicaragua*, to raise Men there and join the Viceroy. *Centeno*, who had been forc'd to abandon the Town of *la Plata*, by *Alonso de Toro*, being inform'd of that Rebel's return to *Cuzco*, resolv'd to go again to that Town, with ninety five Horse and Foot he had. By the Way he routed a Party of Rebels, and took thirty of them, and then entring *la Plata*, hang'd two of *Toro's* Spies, and cut off the Hand of the Governor as a Traytor. *Carvajal* being inform'd of these Proceedings, march'd from *Lima* to *Cuzco*, where having been reinforced by *Toro*, he proceeded against *Centeno*, of both whom we shall speak again after having concluded with the Disasters of the Loyal Party in the Equinoctial Provinces.

The Viceroy being a Man of much Honour and Resolution, tho' inform'd of the great Power *Pizarro* had at *Quito*, resolv'd to give him Battle ; and having drawn up his small Forces, consisting of only 200 Foot, Pikes and Musketeers, ill furnish'd with Powder, and 110 Horse, advanc'd towards the Enemy. *Pizarro* was glad to hear of the Viceroy's Approach, knowing how much he was superior to him in Numbers, and accordingly made a very foolish Speech to his Men, for he was a very ignorant Fellow ; but the Substance of it was to terrify them with the Cruelties the Viceroy would exercise, if he should happen to be victorious, and to raise their Expectation, with mighty Promises of reward, in case they got the Day ; his Army consisted of 330 Pikemen, 150 Musketeers and 130 Horsemen. The Adelantado *Belalcázar* advis'd the Viceroy not to attack *Pizarro* in a strong Post he had

70 *The HISTORY of America.*

taken, but to march another Way he would shew him to *Quito*, which was accordingly done, and they reach'd that City on *Monday* the 11<sup>th</sup> of *May* 1546, about noon. The Viceroy found the Place abandon'd by the Inhabitants, and seeing no body in the Market-place, cry'd out, *Great Lord, is not this your Cause, how comes it that there is not one good Man left?* There some *Spanish Women* came out to him and said, *Your Lordship is come hither to die.* Those good Women gave him a Loaf, a Radish and some Wine, because he was very hungry; and yet hearing what they said, he let all fall, and lifted up his Hands to Heaven; however, tho' he was sensible of his Ruin, he encourag'd his Men, and they promis'd to stand by him; In short, the Battle was fought in the Field of *Anaquito*, where the old Viceroy having behav'd himself like an Hero was knock'd down, as was the Adelantado *Belalcazar*, and many of their bravest Commanders were kill'd, others then giving way, after having behav'd themselves with singular Bravery. The villainous Lawyer *Benedict Suarez de Carvajal*, finding the Viceroy disabled on the Ground, inhumanly caus'd a Black to smite off his Head, and to drag it along before him; many more were murder'd in cold Blood, others fled, and some few were sav'd by their Friends. This Battle was fought on the 19<sup>th</sup> of *January* 1546, in which about fifty Men were kill'd, and above seventy were afterwards barbarously butcher'd of the King's Party, and of the Rebels only twenty were lost. Having thus brought *Pizarro* and his Rebel Followers to the Height of their Prosperity, which yet was not lasting; it is requisite to mention what was done in other Parts, before we  
 proceed



proceed to the reducing of *Peru* under the King's Obedience.

---

C H A P. IV.

*Affairs of the Kingdom of Chile, and of the Governments of Popayan and Cartagena; Captain Orellana's unsuccessful Voyage to the River of the Amazons.*

HAVING carry'd on the Relation of what happen'd in *Peru*, till the Year 1546, to avoid the Confusion of too frequent Interruptions, we must come again to see what was doing in other Parts, in the Year 1544. *Peter de Valdivia*, being in the Kingdom of *Chile*, and having receiv'd a Reinforcement under Captain *Monroy*, assisted by the then Governor of *Peru*, *Vaca de Castro*, set out from the City of *Santiago*, with sixty Horse, for the Province of the *Parmacanes*, and the great River of *Moule*, in the Kingdoms of *Gueler* and *Tata*, and proceeding farther still, found larger Towns, and therefore resolv'd to advance to *Quilacura*, where the Natives one Night attack'd him in great Numbers, whom he defeated, tho' with the Loss of some Horses, every one being then worth 1000 Pieces of Eight. Being then inform'd how populous the Country was, he return'd to the City of *Santiago*, and judging it proper to secure all behind him, and to have an open Communication by Sea and Land for all that should think fit to go from *Peru* to *Chile*, the Fame

## 72 The HISTORY of *America*.

of whose Wealth began to spread abroad, he resolv'd to found the City of *la Serena*, which he had not done before, for Fear lest his Men should desert; but did it this Year 1544, in the Vale of *Coquimbo*, being the second Town built in order of Time; but the first, as to Situation for those that come from *Peru*: This Town by some is also call'd *Coquimbo*, lying near the Sea, has a good Harbour, and a large Bay, the Landing Place two Leagues from the Town. The Coast runs along to the Southward, and it is seated in thirty Degrees of South Latitude; the Extent of the longest Day there, which is the 11<sup>th</sup> of *December*, being fourteen Hours. There is a small River that serves to water all the Corn-Fields and Orchards, which produce all Sorts of Grain, Fruit and Plants, there being good Fisheries, and the land affording Corn, Flesh and Wine. There is much Gold in its Territory; and seven Leagues from it is an Hill, whence great Quantities of that Metal have been drawn. Throughout the whole Kingdom of *Chile*, there are both tame and wild Sheep, in Shape like Camels, larger than the *Spanish*, their Bodies generally a Yard in Length, their Necks three Quarters, taller than the *European*; their upper Lip cloven, where they expel a Foam against such as provoke them, but they have no Bunch on the Back like the Camels, and their Flesh is somewhat dryer than the *Spanish* Mutton. They feed on Grass; their Colour is generally black or white, but there are some of an Ash-colour. The wild Sheep are of a bright ruddy Colour, somewhat strip'd, their Wool long, soft, smooth and shining, and more valuable than the *Spanish*; a Fleece is worth a Ducat, and a Sheep four or five; whereas a *Spanish* Sheep

Sheep is sold for twelve Royals, and the Fleece for one. Of the Wool of those Native Sheep they make Mantles, which look like taby, shining, and worn by rich People. They are bridled by the Ears, making Holes in them, to put small Cords through, by which they are led any where, but when loose they are so fleet that they outrun an Horse, especially the wild Sort. All Sorts of Grain grows in this Kingdom, as has been said, and particularly one they call *Teca*, the earliest the *Indians* sow and reap, being sow'd in *February* and *March*, and gather'd in *November*; the Reed like that of Barley, and the Grain like Rye; it is gather'd before ripe, and dry'd in the Sun; when thresh'd they parch it in hot Sand, and then grind it on a Stone, about as big as half a Sheet of Paper, with a Stone Roller as thick as a Man's Arm, laid a-cross it, which they drive over it with both Arms, which soon breaks it; and thus made into Meal they carry it about when they travel, and a Peck of it serves a Man eight Days, put into Water, either so thin as to drink it, or made thick. There is a Sort of Fruit growing on wild Trees, from 37 Deg Lat. Southward, generally eaten in those Countries, by the Natives call'd *Uhi*, and by the *Spaniards* *Murtilla*. It is red like a small Grape, but larger than *Spanish* Pease that have been soak'd; in Shape and Colour like a small Pomgranate, its Taste a sour sweet; the Seeds are not felt in eating, like those of a Fig, the Husk like that of a Grape, the Nature of it hot and dry. Of these is made a Sort of Wine which next to that of Grapes, is the best of all Liquors, whether the Palm-Wine of the *East-Indies*, Sider, Mead or Beer. This Wine is hot, clear, thin and agreeable to the Palate and Stomach,

## 74 *The HISTORY of America.*

mach, dispels the Fumes of the Head, and its Heat warms the Ears without ascending higher, and cherishes the Stomach, expelling all Cold, sharpens the Appetite, and never dulls it, neither offends the Head nor the Stomach; will bear twice as much Water as Wine; it is of a bright Colour, and the Flavour delicious: Little of it being made, all is spent in eight Months, and therefore they know not how long it will keep. The making of it requires as much Care as that of Grapes; it will not work under forty Days of it self, without the Help of Fire; the gross Sediment lies at the Bottom of the Vessel, the lighter works out at the Top, but Care must be had to skim as it rises, after which it is rack'd off into other Vessels. Vinegar made of it has a better Taste and Smell than Grape Verjuice, the Fruit being very odoriferous and agreeable to the Taste. Thus much at present of *Chile*.

All was quiet in the Provinces of *Popayan*, *New-Granada* and *Cartagena*, by Reason that the Inhabitants had been permitted to petition against the putting of the new Laws in Execution; but in that of *Cartagena*, the *Indians* yielding little Profit, the *Spaniards* seem'd indifferent, and all waited to see the Event of the Troubles in *Pernu*. *Don Alonso Lewis de Lugo*, having, during his Government, rather labour'd to satiate his Avarice, than attended the publick Good, went away into *Spain*, without sparing the King's Revenue any more than he had done private Persons. However, there being a Necessity of building a *Spanish* Town among the *Indians*, call'd *Panches*, to curb those fierce People, and another on the River of the *Magdalen*, to secure the Navigation to the new Kingdom of *Granada*, he order'd the same  
to



to be done. To the *Panches* he sent Captain *Ferdinand Vanegas*, with many Men of Worth, who divided the Lands and appointed the Territory of the City to extend over all that City of *Tbage* now holds, with the Provinces of *Sabandija*, *Santagnoda*, *Marequita* and *Vitoria*. The Houses were built with Brick and Lime, the Timber-work of good Cedar, with a Parish Church and a Monastery of *Dominicans*; the Town seated on the Bank of a great River call'd *Pari*, in a small Flat there is in a Vale enclos'd by vast high Mountains; the Situation dry and healthy, the Sky clear and serene, without any Night-Dew; the Temper is very hot, only the Morning cool, which never alters throughout the Year. The *Indian* are well shap'd and countenanc'd, only their Foreheads are smooth and flat, very brave and much fear'd by their Neighbours; were wont to eat Human Flesh till better taught by the *Spaniards*; they are generous and free-hearted of what they have, not covetous of Gold, revengeful, very active and nimble, notable Fishermen and Hunters, dy'd their Teeth black with the Leaf of a certain Tree, kept the Heads of the Enemies they had kill'd at their Doors. The Women would destroy their Children, beating themselves with Stones, and bathing their Bellies with the Decoction of certain Herbs, hating to be deliver'd of Daughters. All went naked, the Women only wearing a small Clout to cover their Privities, wore Rings in their Ears and Noses, and Strings of Beads about their Necks and Wastes, dy'd the Brawn of their Arms and Calves of their Legs. The bravest of the Men bor'd their Lips, and wore on their Heads Feathers of several Colours; were much given to be drunk with  
3
their

## 76 *The HISTORY of America.*

their Liquors made of *Indian* Wheat, of the *Yuca* and *Batata* Roots, and of Pine Apples, a Sort of Fruit as big as an indifferent Melon, green and yellow without, the Pulp very white, of a sweet and sour pleasant Taste, when cut yields much Water, growing on Twigs, and has a sweet Scent. The greatest Satisfaction of those People was to assemble in great Numbers, to dance and drink till they dropp'd.

As to their Religion, they believ'd in one only God; marry'd none of their Relations or of their own Town, alledging, that they were all Brethren; were very superstitious and addicted to Sorcery, talk'd with the Devil, and are notable Botanists, being well acquainted with wholesome and venomous Herbs, with which they us'd to destroy one another privately; anointed their Bodies with the Juice of a Sort of Fruit, which turns black and sticks so close that nothing will fetch it off, till nine Days are past. Near *To-caima* there are Sources of Sulphur, and the Clay of that Water is an approv'd Medicine for curing of all Sorts of Itch, Leprosy, Sores and Tettors, anointing with it, and washing with the Water. In those Vales are Springs of Salt-Water, which instead of Weeds has the Surface cover'd with a bituminous Matter, us'd for tarring of Canoes. There are also Baths between two Rivulets of cold Water, which might cure many Distempers. The Snow lies unthaw'd all the Year on the Mountains, which are of a prodigious height, and there is a burning Mountain, that sometimes breaks out and spreads its Ashes eight or ten Leagues about. In the Territory of this City are many Gold, Silver, Copper and Lead Mines. The Land produces several Sorts of the native Fruit,

Fruit, and of the *Spanish*, good Grapes, Melons, Figs, Oranges, sweet and sour Lemons and Dates. The Wall Vines generally produce twice a Year, and if industriously prun'd, three times. A Date Stone was sow'd on the Ground of one *Antony de Portillo*, and within eighteen Months they eat of the Fruit it produc'd, which is wonderful, considering how long they are growing in *Spain*, and yet there they generally bear in two Years. Sugar Canes thrive well, and accordingly there is good Sugar and Honey; Corn grows on the higher cool Grounds, and there are two Crops in a Year of *Indian* Wheat. There are abundance of Cows, Horses, Mules, Swine, and Goats, but the Sheep do not answer well; the Tigers, Bears, and Lions do much Mischief among the Cattle; there is great plenty of *Guaya-cum*; store of Materials for building, and variety of Timber, which does not rot by lying many Years under Water; abundance of Cedars and Walnut-Trees, but the Nuts have no Kernels; Indigo grows without being planted. The Tree call'd *Zeiba*, casts all its Leaves in twelve Hours, and recovers again. As to Birds of Prey, there are many Goshawks, Sparrowhawks, Eagles, Ravens, and those call'd *Gallinazas*, which devour all the Carrion and Filth; great Numbers of beautiful singing Birds of several Colours, and Nightingales, innumerable Apes, Monkeys, Ferrets, Squirrels, Weezles, Deer, Roebucks, and Rabbits, but no Hares; nor do they want Vipers, Snakes, Scorpions, large Spiders, and very venomous Rattle Snakes; of the Poison of all which those *Indians* made the venomous Composition to dip their Arrows in, being so pernicious, that whosoever was wounded with it dy'd  
in

## 78 *The HISTORY of America.*

in twenty four Hours, if not prevented; they were wont to try it on an old Woman, or a Dog; and if they dy'd quickly, the Composition was reckoned good.

About this Time Captain *Ferdinand de Valdes* founded the City of *St. Michael de las Palmas*, on the Bank of the great River of the *Magdalen*, for securing the Communication with the new Kingdom of *Granada*. The *Indians* along this River us'd Canoes thirty Foot long, and only two in Breadth, made of one single Tree; they row'd standing in a Rank, some on the one side, and some on the other, their Oars being a sort of Paddles, like the Peels Bakers have for their Ovens, and carry'd more Hands than were necessary for the management of the Canoe, to fight upon occasion, which they did in a furious manner, and with great Cries. Afterwards the Licentiate *Michael Diaz* built the Town of *Tamalameque*, which was remov'd from the first situation to the Place where it now stands, where, tho' the Country is very uneven, there are good Plains for breeding of Cattle, especially Cows, there being very close Woods, and the overflowing of the River makes great Lakes, on the Banks whereof the Natives live, and traverse them in their Canoes, being much addicted to fishing, and there is great Plenty of *Manaties* and Alligators. In Winter this River rises so high, that it is half a League over where it receives that of *Conca*, and the Stream is wonderful rapid. The Soil is not fruitful, and yet produces sweet and sour Orange Trees, carry'd from *Spain*, and Guayaboes which are of the Native Growth. The small Pox and Meazles destroy'd abundance of the Inhabitants, and those that remain are heavy and dull, spending



## The HISTORY of *America*. 79

ing most of the Time they do not devote to Merriment and Drunkenness, in Sleeping, and their Entertainments are in Harvest Time, when they extravagantly lavish the Corn that might last them all the Year; for the first that gets his Harvest in, invites all the rest of the Town, when they drink three or four Days successively; Drunkenness producing several Effects, some weeping, some laughing, and others raving, and thus the Treats go round the Town. The *Indians* along the River and Lakes understand one another, but those on the Mountains have another quite different Language. This City of *Tamalameque* is in 18 Deg. Lat. N. belonging to the Government and Diocese of *Santa Marta*, sixty Leagues up the River from it, and seven from the landing Place. When Gentiles, those People were subject to particular Lords or Caziques, and they have such still. They painted their Faces, and he that had the most variety of Figures, was oblig'd to behave himself most boldly; their Bodies were anointed with what they call *Bixa*, being a red Substance, to defend them from the Heat of the Sun. When dispos'd to marry, they ask the Wife of her Father, and if he likes it, the Daughter is deliver'd, without any farther Ceremony. The Son succeeded his Father in the Lordship. They had a Priest who was much respected, and made them believe, that he convers'd with the Devil; he was to pray for seasonable Weather, for Plenty and Health, cur'd Distempers, and told a thousand Lies to impose upon those People.

Captain *Orellana*, who, as has been said in its Place, was sent by *Gonzalo Pizarro*, when he was upon Discovery in the Province call'd *Canela*, to  
seek

## 80 The HISTORY of America.

seek Provisions down the River, having run to the very Mouth of that vast River call'd of the *Amazons*, saw a Multitude of sundry Nations on its Banks, and made the best of his Way into *Spain*, where he contracted with the King for the Government of as much as he could conquer in those Provinces by the Name of *New Andalusia*, undertaking to carry over 300 Men, 200 of them Foot, and 100 Horse. Accordingly, having made all necessary Preparations, he sail'd from *Sanlucar de Barrameda* on the 11th of *May* 1544. with four Ships, and 400 Men. At the Island of *Teneriff* he stay'd three Months, and two at *Cabo Verde*, where ninety eight of his Men dy'd, and fifty were left behind, being unfit to proceed on the Voyage. After his Departure from them, the Winds prov'd contrary, in so much that all the Men must have perish'd, had not they been supply'd with Water by the heavy Rains, when one of the Ships carrying seventy Men and eleven Horses turn'd back, and was never more heard of. The other Ships arriv'd at the Mouth of a River, where they found fresh Water twelve Leagues out at Sea, and *Orellana* said it was the same that he had come down. The next Day they enter'd the River, and got Provisions by way of Barter, in two Islands that were inhabited. They ran up the River about 100 Leagues, and then stay'd near some Cottages, where there was little Provision, to build a Brigantine, and fifty seven of the Men dy'd. Three Months being elaps'd, they sail'd with the Brigantine, and one Ship, the other having been broke up to furnish Iron Works and Planks for the Brigantine. When they had sail'd twenty Leagues, as they lay at Anchor, the Force of the Stream burst their Cable, and forc'd them  
to

to run the Ship aground, when saving the Iron Work, they spent two Months and an half in building a Bark. *Orellana* having been thirty Days seeking the main Branch of the River in vain, return'd, declaring he was so sick that he could stay no longer. Those that built the Bark were supply'd with Provisions by the Caziques of the Country, one of whom went with them as far as the Islands of *Marribinque* and *Caritan*; and then another conducted them thirty Leagues higher, to a Place they thought to be three great Branches of the River, which afterwards appear'd to be but one, and was about twelve Leagues over: the Bark being then very leaky, and there being want of Men to row, and of Goods to barter, so few, being unable to do the King any Service, they return'd. When they were forty Leagues above the Mouth of the River, they saw a piece of Land, which they took to be part of the Continent, having large Plains and Corn Ground, through the Middle whereof ran a Stream of Water, suppos'd by them to come down from the high Lands. The *Indians* call'd that Province *Comao*, the Inhabitants whereof came in peaceable manner, and gave much *Indian* Wheat, *Cazabi*, *Patatas*, *Names*, Fish, Geese, and Hens; a *Spanish* Turkey was found, and the Soldiers went six Leagues up the Country, and brought back an hundred *Indians* laden with Provisions, and an hundred Men stay'd there, liking the Country. The *Spaniards* proceeded down the River, and arriv'd at the Island *Margarita*, where they found the Captain *Orellana's* Wife, who told them, that her Husband had not been able to find the main Branch of the River; and that having resolv'd to return into Christian Countries, because he was

VOL. VI. G sick,

## 82 *The HISTORY of America.*

sick, as he was seeking out for Provisions, the *Indians* kill'd seventeen of his Men, and he dy'd of his Distemper and Grief; and she who had always bore him Company, return'd thither with the rest of the Men in the Brigantine. The Mouth of this River is about fifty seven Leagues over, and it is all full of Islands. Thus ended this Expedition.

*The End of the First BOOK.*



THE





THE  
General HISTORY

Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of

AMERICA, &c.



DECAD V. BOOK II.



CHAP. I.

*What happen'd in Chile at the River of  
Plate, in the Province of Venezuela,  
and at Rio de la Hacha, in the Year  
1545.*



NOTHING was done this Year  
1545. in the Kingdom of *Chile*  
worth mentioning, for the Gover-  
nor *Valdivia* having ditcover'd much  
Land, and not having a sufficient  
Force to subdue the same, employ'd himself in  
gathering Treasure, to go himself, or send into

## 84 The HISTORY of *America*.

*Pern* for Men, Horses, and Arms, which could not be done till the next Year, for which Reason he divided the Lands he had in Subjection among sixty *Spanish* Inhabitants.

At the *River of Plate*, when the Governor *Cabeza de Vaca* had been sent away into *Spain*, as was mention'd in its Place, *Dominick de Irala*, who had usurp'd the Government, seiz'd all that belong'd to the depos'd Governor; and distributed it among those Persons he design'd should support him, as having need of Friends when the *Spaniards* were divided into Parties, and therefore conniv'd at their robbing and oppressing the *Indians*; then considering, that if those People were idle, it would be impossible for him to hold his Authority long, and that if he did any notable piece of Service, it would induce the King to confirm him in the Government, he gave out that he would make an Excursion, and go upon Discovery. The King's Officers, who lik'd nothing that was done, oppos'd him, alledging, that it was not convenient for him to depart the Country, till the King had sent a Governor, and they proceeded to Remonstrances; so that tho' Friends before, they were now at Variance, for there can be no Peace between haughty Men. *Irala* persisting, that he would do what he pleas'd, all the *Spaniards* divided themselves into two Factions, and that in such passionate manner, that they were two or three times at Dagger's drawing. This Division encourag'd the *Indians* to revolt, thinking they might easily expel the *Spaniards*, resenting the Wrongs done them, occasion'd by the Connivance of the Governor *Irala* with the Soldiers, some of whom suffer'd for it, being kill'd committing Insults. *Irala* made War on those

that had revolted, with the Assistance of other *Indians* that were his Friends, and there was much slaughter, plundering, and burning. However, *Irala* being resolv'd upon his Excurſion, ſent two Officers with forty Men to diſcover the Country of the *Mayas*, reſolving to follow them with as many Men as he could, and to carry away all the Arms and Ammunition, to oblige them that would not go to follow him, rather than be left expoſ'd to be deſtroy'd. Accordingly, having got the better of the King's Officers, he march'd out with 250 *Spaniards*, beſides a great Number of *Indians*, and proceeded 100 Leagues up the River, to enter the Country of the *Mayas*, whence he march'd by Land as far as the Borders of *Peru*, committing all ſorts of Inſolencies by the Way, and falling out among themſelves. *Irala* was depoſ'd, and *Gonzalo de Mendoza* choſen Governor, who conducted the Men back, without being able to govern them. At the Port, where they had left their Brigantines, *Irala* was again install'd Governor, went back to the City of the *Assumption*, and thence again, to avoid being idle, undertook another Expedition to the River *Parana*, deſtroying the poor Natives, to ingratiate himſelf with his own Men, and by the Way hang'd eleven or twelve old Women, alledging, that they perſuaded the *Indians* to revolt. He alſo ſtrangled Captain *Camargo*, for only adviſing him to divide the Lands among the *Spaniards*, that they might protect the Natives. Theſe Barbarities oblig'd ſeveral *Spaniards* to fly to the Mountains for fear of their Lives; and this is what happen'd there this Year 1545.

The Province of *Venezuela* was in no leſs Confuſion, for the Governor *George Spire*, a worthy

## 86 The HISTORY of America.

Man, and good Christian, dying, the Court at *Hispaniola* gave that Government to the Bishop *Bastidas*, who sent thither one *Philip Uten* a German, of a modest Behaviour, and sincere, to assemble some Men, and go upon Discovery, as he did with 100 Horse. Soon after *John de Carvajal* was sent to govern at *Coro*, who having drawn out all the ablest Men from that Place, and robb'd the rest, march'd away to *Bariquizemeto*, near the River *Tucuyo*. That Country is very mountainous, and the *Indians* were of the Nation of the *Cuibas*, using much variety of Languages; fought with Bows and Arrows, Macanas, and Slings; were very warlike, most of them did eat human Flesh, went naked, lay on the Ground. Here *Carvajal* allow'd his Men to commit all Crimes, being about 200 in Number, and *Philip Uten* happening to return this way from his Discovery, *Carvajal* using many Wiles, got him into his Power, after having sworn Friendship with him, and then struck off his Head, and those of three more. Thus had he strengthened himself by his Barbarities, and so went on some time, till at length, in the Year 1546. the Licentiate *John Perez de Tolosa*, appointed Judge for the Province of *Venezuela*, arriv'd at *Coro*, where he found about seventy Soldiers, who in a great Consternation had fortify'd themselves in the Church of that Place, expecting that *Carvajal* would return to rob and murder them; but they were reviv'd with the Presence of the Judge, who being inform'd of the many Villainies committed by *Carvajal*, concluded with himself that the right way for him to begin to call People to Account, and to execute Justice, was first to deliver the Country from that Oppressor; and accordingly resolv'd



to march towards him with forty Horfe and Foot, not doubting but that thirty of *Philip Uten's* Men that were with *Carvajal* would desert him; besides many more whom he kept against their Will, by which means he should be strong enough to deal with him. When he had travell'd three Days Journey beyond the Plains, he met seventeen Horsemen, sent out by *Carvajal*, to spy what Force the Judge had with him, who manag'd so well, that tho' they would have made off, he overtook them, and shewing the King's Commission, they all submitted and stay'd with him. They gave Information, that *Carvajal* had come with them from *Tucuyo*, and remain'd at a Place call'd *Quibote* with seventy Men, expecting the Account they should carry back; and that suspecting the Person who was coming to him might be a Judge, he had declar'd, he would petition against his Commission, and in the mean time stand upon his Defence. Upon this Advice the Judge travell'd all the Night, fell upon *Carvajal* at break of Day, and seiz'd him, together with his Lieutenant *John de Villegas*. The Men thus surpriz'd were in a Consternation, but, having seen the King's Commission, submitted, and the Judge went on with his Prisoners to *Tucuyo*, where he suddenly try'd, condemn'd, and executed *Carvajal*, a just Reward for all his Inhumanities. There were about 215 Soldiers, sixty of them Horfe, and all choice Men, having many Mares, Cows, Swine, and Sheep, tho' poorly clad, and without any Gold, for which Reason he resolv'd to employ part of them upon some Expedition, that they might get something, observing the King's Ordinances.

## 88 *The HISTORY of America.*

The Borders of this Province of *Venezuela*, according as they were assign'd to the *Germans*, begin at *Maracapana*, and reach to Cape de la *Vela*, 200 Leagues along the Sea; *Maracapana* is a safe Harbour, the best along that Coast. The Natives inhabiting for ten Leagues about it were call'd *Chingotos*, speaking all the same Language; some of them traded, liv'd on the Mountains, were warlike, fought with Bows and poison'd Arrows, and did not well observe the Peace they concluded with the *Spaniards*. Fifteen or twenty Leagues farther, the Country has large Plains, the *Indians* spoke the same Language, and both these, and the others next the Coast did eat human Flesh. The *Germans*, who would never settle; and the Governors *Sedeño* and *Ortal* destroy'd the Country, as did the People of *Cubagua*, by carrying away many Slaves, and because the Tigers having first fed on the dead Bodies, afterwards devour'd Abundance of *Indians* and some *Spaniards*. The Country abounds in Deer, as does the River *Unare* in Fish, and the *Indians* were frequently at War about the Fisheries, devour'd one another, and had publick Shambles of human Flesh. From *Maracapana* to the Province of *Bariquizemeto* are an hundred Leagues, most Plain, having plenty of Game and Fish, but much destroy'd by the Tygers. Half way between *Coro* and *Maracapana*, at fifty Leagues distance from each, is the Town of *Burburata*, where is a Salt Pit that serves all the *Indians* along the Coast. Six Leagues within the Mountain is the Lake of *Tacarigua*, twelve Leagues in Compass, and five Leagues wide; some Islands there are in it inhabited by *Indians*, who trade in Gold and Cotton Cloth, and lie near the *Caraca Indians*. The Harbour of *Coro* is not good,

as having little shelter; the City stands two Leagues and an half from it, and a League from the City there are good Salt Pits, and sixty Leagues from it along the Coast is the Lake of *Maracaybo*. Twelve Leagues from *Coro* the Land forms a sort of Peninsula call'd *Paragoana*, and by the Sailers Cape *St. Roman*, twenty five Leagues in Compass, Plain, full of Game, without any River. The *Indians* are peaceable, and in the midst of it is an Hill that is seen out at Sea. *Ambrose Alfinger* sailing to the Westward along the Coast, founded a Christian Town call'd *Maracaybo*, on the Bank of the Lake of that Name seated on the farther side of the said Lake, towards Cape *de la Vela*; and from thence he march'd into the Country, to the Vale of *Upare*, which has been inhabited from *Santa Marta*, being thirty Leagues from Cape *Vela*, and sixty from *Maracaybo*. Thus much as to the Province of *Venezuela*.

In the Year 1545. five *French* Ships, with a small Tender, arriv'd at the Pearl Fishery on the Continent, where they took five other Ships and Caravels that lay at Anchor in the Port, having brought Goods from *Spain*, so that being eleven Sail, they were Masters of the Sea. The Inhabitants, Night drawing on, carry'd off the King's Treasure and their own, leaving only a few to defend the Town. The next Day they came to a Treaty, the *Spaniards* bought sixty Blacks the *French* had aboard their Ships, and ransom'd some of the Vessels that had been taken. The Privateers then proceeded to *Santa Marta*, where they found some Plunder, and receiv'd 1000 Ducats to forbear burning the Place. Hereupon the Inhabitants of *Santa Marta* finding themselves expos'd to all Privateers, remov'd to the River *de la Hacha*,

90 *The HISTORY of America.*

*Hacha*, where, besides being safe, they had plenty of Wood and Water, which were wanting in the other Place.

To avoid running too far into the lesser Turmoils among the *Spaniards* themselves, that is, such as were of less Consequence, we shall only here observe, that in the Year 1546. the Commander *George Robledo*, of whom much has been said before, intruding into the Government of *Popayan*, which belong'd to the Adelantado *Belalcazar*, this latter surpriz'd, took, and put him to Death, and so the Troubles ended in that Province.

---

C H A P. II.

*Orders taken in Spain for quelling the Rebellion in Peru; the President Gasca arrives at Nombre de Dios, and then at Panama, where he gains several of Pizarro's Officers: Behaviour of that Rebel.*

HAVING briefly touch'd what happen'd in the other Parts of *America*, we will now return to the Affairs of *Peru*, which were of the greatest concern, being often oblig'd to interrupt the Series of Relations, for observing, as near as may be, some Order of Time. *Pizarro* remain'd absolute Master of *Peru*, fawn'd on by his fellow Rebels after the murder of the Viceroy; it is now time to see what Orders were taken for humbling his



his Pride, and punishing his Treason. *Vaca de Castro*, who had govern'd in that Kingdom by the King's Commission, and been unjustly sent Prisoner into *Spain*, was, at his coming thither, secur'd, and committed to the Castle of *Arevalo*, where he was detain'd twelve Years, tho' in honourable Manner, and at the expiration of that Time, not only discharg'd, but had a Revenue belonging to the Knights of St. *James* conferr'd on him, and a Place in the Council, which concluded all the false Accusations laid against him; his Son being afterwards Archbishop of *Sevil*.

Advice being brought into *Spain* of the Rebellion in *Peru*, that *Gonzalo Pizarro* had usurp'd the Government, dissolv'd the Royal Court, and committed many other Insolencies; and afterwards, that the Viceroy had been set at liberty, had retir'd to *Quito*, and was assembling Forces, to encounter the Rebels, it was thought fit, in order to draw the Men from *Pizarro*, to declare, that in relation to the new Laws, the King revok'd that which directed, that no Viceroy, Governor, or other Person whatsoever, should have Power to give *Indians* in *Commendam*, but that, as soon as they fell they should be annex'd to the Crown; and that all should remain as it was before the passing of that Law. Besides, whereas the new Laws prohibited all Appeals to the King for a less Sum than 10000 Ducats, the same was lower'd to 6000. These, and some other Modifications in the new Laws, kept all quiet in *New Spain* and other Parts: We must see what follow'd in *Peru*. *Pizarro* grown proud with Prosperity, devoted himself to Lewdness, and caus'd many to be murder'd, particularly one *Peter de Frutos*, to make use of his Wife; and sent *John Perez de Guevara*

## 92 *The HISTORY of America.*

*Guevara* to *Pasto*, to seize some Townsmen of *Quito* that had stay'd there, whom he also cruelly put to Death, laying aside the Mask, indulging his Avarice, Pride, and other Vices, acting as if all were his own, and conniving at all the Villanies committed by his Followers. Having for his own private Ends dismiss'd the Adelantado *Belalcazar*, taken at the Battle of *Añaquito*, he banish'd several of the Loyal Party to *Chile*, whether he was sending Captain *Ulloa* with Succours to *Peter de Valdivia*. The next thing thought of was to send Deputies into *Spain*, to give an account of what had happen'd, and shew that after all their Rebellion, they own'd themselves Subjects to the King. *Laurence de Aldana* was pitch'd upon for this purpose, commissioning him in the Name of all the Cities and Towns in *Peru*, and obliging themselves to make good all that had been expended of the King's Treasure upon the War, and to add a considerable Free Gift, provided that there might be a Pardon for all that was past, and *Pizarro* be continu'd in the Government. *Pizarro* then considering that it would be hard for him to reward all his Soldiers, order'd Captain *Alonso de Mercadillo*, to march with some Men into the adjacent Provinces, and settle a Colony at *Carrochabamba*, by the Name of *la Zarça*. Captain *Porzel* was sent to subdue the *Bracamoros*; the Licenciate *Benedict Suarez de Carvajal*, was appointed Judge of all the Cities, with Directions to set out immediately upon that Circuit.

In *Spain* there were great Debates about the Means to be us'd for quelling of this Rebellion; and some were for doing it by open Force, that the Punishment of those Miscreants might be a Terror to others; but then the Difficulty of sending  
ing

ing a sufficient Number of Men into those remote Provinces, seem'd wholly to quash all Projects of that Nature; whereupon it was resolv'd to send a Man of the long Robe, who might endeavour by Art and Dexterity to reduce those People to Reason, without striking such a Terror as must follow a Swordsman. Several Persons were propos'd for this Enterprize, but at length all concluded on the Licenciado *Peter de la Gasca*, whose Talent and Abilities had been sufficiently try'd, being then of the Supreme Council of the Inquisition at *Valencia*, upon Affairs of that Tribunal, who was accordingly call'd to Court, and being inform'd that it was his Majesty's Pleasure, that he should undertake that honourable Employment, he readily submitted, and his Commission and Instructions were drawn up. In the first Place he was empower'd to act for the good of the Kingdom, and of the Inhabitants, with as absolute Authority as if the King had been there in Person, tho' this was somewhat restrain'd and limited by his Instructions. The Title given him was that of President of the Royal Court in *Peru*. His Commission extended to Pardon all Crimes whatsoever, even High Treason; to give *Indians* in *Commendam*, to whom he should think fit, in the same manner others held them; to reward such as signaliz'd themselves in the King's Service, and bestow honourable Titles on them; to appoint Governours, and fill up other vacant Employments, till such Time as the King should order otherwise, he giving an Account of the Merits of such Persons; to make Ordinances with the Advice of the Inhabitants conditionally, that they should be confirm'd by his Majesty; to execute all that had been given in Charge to the  
Viceroy

## 94 *The HISTORY of America.*

Viceroy *Blasco Nuñez*, as far as might be for the Service of God and the King; to execute Justice, and try Causes between and against all Persons whatsoever, without Exception; to banish all turbulent Churchmen, till such time as a Bull should be obtain'd from the Pope for punishing them corporally; to dispose, at his Pleasure, of the King's Revenue for the Reduction of the Country, with the Advice of any two of the Royal Judges, and the King's Officers. All Viceroyes, Governors, and other Persons, were commanded to obey and support him; the City of *Panama* was order'd to be subordinate to the Court of *Peru*; as to his Salary, there was no Limitation, but the Officers of the Revenue at *Panama* and in *Peru*, were directed to furnish him with what he had occasion for. Letters from the King were put into his Hands for *Pizarro* and others, signifying that his Majesty confided in his Loyalty, and was not offended at any thing that had been done. The President *Gasca* desir'd, that *Alonso de Alvarado*, who was then at the Court, might go over with him, and have some honourable Title given him; and tho' many oppos'd it, alledging very sufficient Reasons for so doing, it was granted, and he had the Title of Marshal conferr'd on him. This is the Substance of the Instructions given to the Licenciado *Gasca*, who pray'd, that as soon as he had settled Peace in *Peru*, he might return into *Spain*; and then with all possible Expedition began to provide for his Voyage; the Posture of Affairs in those Parts allowing of no Delays.

Whilst the President *Gasca* is preparing for, and on his Voyage, let us see what was doing in *Peru*. At *Panama*, *Peter de Hinojosa*, *Pizarro's*



*The HISTORY of America.* 95

ro's Admiral, who, as has been said, lay aboard his Fleet, after having agreed with the Inhabitants of that Place, perceiving that no Orders came from *Spain*, enter'd the City with all his Men, and was receiv'd with Joy, those People imagining that the Fleet being there, much Money would come from *Pern*, wherein they were deceiv'd; for tho' *Hinojosa* punish'd the Offences committed by his Soldiers, and neither kill'd or pillag'd any Body himself, his Officers robb'd many, taking Care to conceal the same from him. Advice was now brought, that *Melchior Verdugo* was arriv'd at *Nicaragua*, and was raising Men against *Pizarro*, by virtue of a Commission from the Royal Court; whereupon Captain *John Alonso Palomino* was sent thither to endeavour to defeat him, and *Peter Lewis de Cabrera* with 120 Men to secure the Port of *Nombre de Dios* against *Verdugo*; and all others that were not Friends. *Verdugo* having touch'd at *Puerto Viejo*, would have secur'd *Cardenas*, *Pizarro's* Governor there, who having made his escape, he proceeded to *Nicaragua*, where, as has been said, he obtain'd leave of the Royal Court to raise Men to serve the King, and having drawn together as many as he could, carry'd them down in Barks along the Drain that runs out of the Lake of *Nicaragua* into the North Sea, designing for *Nombre de Dios*.

Whilst what has been said was doing in *Nicaragua*, and the Parts adjacent, *Francis de Carvajal* set out from *Cuzco*, and gathering all the Supplies he could on his Way, made up 280 Men. *Centeno*, on the other Hand, set out from *la Plata* with 180 Men towards *Cuzco*, without knowing any thing of *Carvajal*, and thinking to give his  
Men

Men some rest, on the 9<sup>th</sup> of *April* was inform'd; that his Enemy was making towards him, and that the Viceroy had been defeated by *Pizarro*; whereupon, taking the Advice of his Officers, they resolv'd, that since the King had no other Forces in *Peru* but those, and some of the Men they knew would desert, as soon as they had an opportunity, it was proper to retire, and endeavour to save themselves for a better turn of the Times. *Carvajal* understanding that *Centeno* retir'd, pursu'd him with the utmost Diligence, murdering some Men that fell into his Hands; so that after several Skirmishes, the Loyalists were oblig'd to disperse; some went away to the Mountains towards *Pocona*; *Centeno*, and *Lewis de Ribera* took into the Cave near *Arequipa*, where they remain'd many Days; and so the rest made for other Places, choosing rather to live among wild Beasts, or to die, than to be Traytors. One *Ribadeneyra*, who had been sent by *Centeno* to possess himself of a Ship, to have carry'd them all off, when he had taken it, could not come time enough to the appointed Place to receive the rest, who were before dispers'd, and he, tho' courted much by *Carvajal* to submit himself, upon many fair Promises, sail'd away without any Sea Compass, and yet, after having suffer'd very much, arriv'd safe at *Guatemala*. *Lope de Mendoza*, who with some others retir'd to the Mountains, met there with the Men that were return'd from the Expedition to the Countries about the *River of Plate*, under *Gutierrez*, *Heredia*, &c. before spoken of in its Place, and finding them all dispos'd to serve the King, began again to make head, and endeavour to draw others to his Party; which being known to *Carvajal*, he turn'd upon him, who was then quarter'd

quarter'd in the Town of *Pocona*, where they had a sharp Engagement in the Night, and *Mendoza* drew off with some of his Men, and in the Morning found he had lost above sixty of them, whereupon he resolv'd to retire to the Mountains *Andes*, and lighting by the Way on *Carvajal's* Baggage the Soldiers plunder'd it, and being enrich'd with that Booty, dropp'd off in small Parcels from their Commander, whom *Carvajal* pursu'd so close that he took him, as he was resting by a River's Side, and with him *Alonso Camargo*, and *Nicholas de Heredia*, which last was immediately strangled. *Carvajal* ask'd *Mendoza* several Questions, who, like a brave Man, refusing to answer to any of them, had his Head struck off. This done, the victorious Rebel went away to *la Plata*, to plunder all that was there, as he actually did, without sparing Friend or Foe.

Having ended this War in the Southern Parts, it is Time to turn back to the Equinoctial, where we left *Pizarro* at *Quito*, after having defeated and murder'd the Viceroy. There he bestow'd Lands on many of his Friends, and concluding that there was none left to oppose him in *Peru*, he dismiss'd his Forces, and going away to the City of St. *Michael*, sent *Vela Nuñez*, the late Viceroy's Brother, by Sea to *Lima*. At the same Time *Melchior Verdugo*, who, as was said before, having run down the Drain of the Lake of *Nicaragua*, surpriz'd the Rebels at *Nombre de Dios*, and made himself Master of that Place; enjoy'd it not long, for *Hinojosa* marching thither with a greater Power, oblig'd him to retire again to his Ships. In the mean Time the new President *Peter de la Gasca* arriv'd from *Spain* at *Santa Marta*, and being there inform'd of the Death of the

late Viceroy, and the fresh Defeat of *Verdugo* at *Nombre de Dios*, tho' Things were in a worse Condition than he had before thought, went away himself to *Nombre de Dios*, where he landed, was civilly receiv'd, and behaving himself with extraordinary courtesy and affability, gain'd the Affections of all there. *Ferdinand Mexia*, who commanded the Rebel Forces in that Place, being grown somewhat familiar, the President began to persuade him to return to his Duty to the King, representing the Dishonour it was to his Family to be in Arms against his Sovereign, promising him great Rewards, and shewing him his Commission and Instructions for redressing of all Grievances. *Mexia* answer'd, That he was there in Arms for the King, and not for *Pizarro*, and accordingly would do whatsoever he order'd. They embrac'd, promising to keep this Secret for the Present, and *Verdugo* returning with Forces, was order'd to leave them there, and go away himself to *Cartagena* or *Nicaragua*, and he, tho' concern'd, that he might not itay to serve the King, went away into *Spain*. The President then proceeded to *Panama*, where he arriv'd on the 13<sup>th</sup> of *August* 1546, and was receiv'd in solemn Manner by the Governor, the Magistrates and all the Garrison, where the next Day discoursing with *Hinojosa* about what had happen'd in *Peru*, that Commander endeavour'd to vindicate *Pizarro's* Actions, and to know whether he was to be Governor, to which the President answer'd, that it did not become the Royal Dignity to treat in that Manner, but it concern'd *Pizarro's* Honour and Reputation to obey his Sovereign. *Hinojosa* then sent Advice to *Pizarro* of the Arrival of the President, advising him to submit



submit to the King; and the President writ at the same Time to several Persons by a *Dominican* Frier, signifying what Power he had to redress their Grievances, and exhorting them to return to their Duty to the King. The Captains at *Panama* observing that *Hinojosa*, their Commander in Chief, had frequent Conferences with the President, and fearing to be prevented by him, privately made their Accommodation, engaging to stand by him. Soon after a Ship arriv'd from *Peru*, and those that came aboard it reported, that there was no likelihood of *Pizarro's* submitting, but must be reduc'd by Force of Arms. The Captains then, that had agreed with the President, urg'd him to press *Hinojosa* to come over to the King, offering, if he did not comply, to secure or kill him; he thank'd them for their good Intentions, but diverted that Design; and first writ to *Pizarro*, advising him to return to his Duty, which would incline others to do it, and gave him Time to consider what was best to be done for his own Security. He also writ to the Judge *Zepeda*, to the same Effect, sending the Letters by *Peter Hernandez Paniagua*, a Gentleman of good Quality, directing him in private, to signify that the Commander of the Fleet had submitted to the President. He being convinc'd, that *Pizarro* would not part with the Authority he was in, unless it were with his Life, writ to the Viceroy of *New-Spain* and the Presidents of the Courts of *Hispaniola*, and the Borders, to provide Men, Horses and Arms against he should have Occasion for them, being resolv'd either to conquer or to die.

Whilst these Things were transacting at *Panama*, some Recruits having been put aboard a

## 100 *The HISTORY of America.*

Ship in *Peru* for *Chile*, seiz'd the said Ship, and went away with it to *Soconusco* in *New-Spain*. Those who had fled to the Mountains from the Cruelty of *Pizarro*, suffer'd very much, and some of them were kill'd by the *Indians*, or by *Alonso de Toro*, the Rebel Governor of *Cuzco*, who having some Words with his Wife's Mother, was murder'd by his Father in Law, who was wont to take most Care of his Life, Providence so ordering it, as a just Punishment of his leud and barbarous Actions. From the City of *St. Michael*, where we left him, *Pizarro* went away to *Truxillo*, where he was receiv'd in most solemn Manner, and conducted to the Church, the Clergy singing before him, the People crying, *victorious Prince, God bless and prosper, support and preserve you*. To add to his Pride, Advice was there brought him, that *Carvajal* had been victorious in the Southern Provinces, and of the Discovery of the rich Mountain of *Porosi*. Being at Dinner, one *James de Mora*, said, the only Thing that troubled them was, that *Pizarro* was mortal, but that their only Comfort was, that they had his Bastard-Son *Francis Pizarro* there to succeed him. These and such like Flatteries so much elated the Rebel, that being of a weak Judgment, he scarce knew what he did. In his Journey from that Place to *Lima*, he receiv'd Advice of the Arrival of the President at *Panama*, and seem'd to rejoice at it; but consulted with his Confidants, whether the President should be permitted to come into *Peru* or sent back into *Spain*; yet nothing was concluded then. At *Lima* he was met by the Bishops, the Clergy, the Magistrates and the whole Town, two Captains holding his Horse's Bridle; and he being inform'd that some  
of

of the Bishops had talk'd freely of him, with a loud Voice foolishly said, *I swear by our Lady, that I will punish any Man who shall offend, whether he be Clergyman, Frier or Bishop; let every one mind his Profession, and leave the Gentry to make War.* The next Thing was to consult what should be done with the President; some were for having him brought into *Peru*, others for sending him back into *Spain*, or poisoning him; but the Resolution was to send him back into *Spain*, aboard a Ship so ill fitted, that it might perish at Sea, which was what *Pizarro* desir'd; and at the same Time it was agreed to send Deputies into *Spain*, with an Account of all that had happen'd; and accordingly *Laurence de Aldana*, *Gomez de Solis* and *Ferdinand Pizarro*, who was still Prisoner in *Spain*, were nominated for that Employment. They were directed by the Way to require the President to return into *Spain*, and to put him into the Hands of *Ferdinand Mexia*, with Instructions that he should murder him in the Passage. At the same Time *F. Thomas* of *St. Martin*, begg'd leave of *Pizarro* to go into *Spain*, promising to give the King a favourable Account of all that had happen'd, and to persuade his Majesty to grant him the Government; and that, in Case he did not succeed there, he would proceed to *Rome*, to sollicite the Pope to give the said *Pizarro* the Investiture of that Kingdom, he paying an Acknowledgment for it to the Church; and accordingly *Pizarro* gave him leave, and a great Sum of Money.

After the Death of *Alonso de Toro*, above-mention'd, *Pizarro* grown insolent with Prosperity, conferr'd the Government of the City of *Cuzco* on *Alonso Alvarez de Hinojosa*. *Vela Nunez*,

Brother to the late Viceroy was now at *Lima*, and being continually in Fear of his Life, intreated one *John de la Torre*, who had found a Treasure said to amount to 80000 Ducats in a Grave, and was about going away with it into *Spain*, to carry him in a Ship, he had provided for that Purpose: That vile Fellow advis'd him to provide ten or a dozen good Men for the Security of the Ship, and when he had their Names, betray'd them to *Pizarro*, who immediately put *Vela Nuñez* to death, tho' the Bishops and many more interceded for him, alledging that he was guilty of no other Offence than attempting to make his Escape for Fear of Death. Whilst this was doing at *Lima*, *Pizarro's* Emissary *Carvajal*, at *la Plata*, turn'd out the Magistrates, and put in others to his own Mind, as he did by the Officers of the King's Revenue, and extorted a vast Sum of Money at *Potosi*, so that he was said to be worth 700000 Pieces of Eight, rais'd by plundering and robbing. Many at *la Plata* being provok'd by that Wretch's Avarice and Inhumanity, conspir'd to kill him, being about thirty in Number; but the Design being discover'd, he immediately seiz'd some of them, and put eight to death, never sifting these Plots to the Bottom, as believing he should find too many concern'd, and considering what Uneasiness it must give him to see that he was generally hated by all Men. This done, he went away with his Treasure to *Lima*.



C H A P. III.

*Pizarro's Fleet surrender'd to the President Gasca; Actions in Peru; Mines of Potosi discover'd; the City of Loxa built; its Territory describ'd.*

THE President *Gasca* sollicitated *Hinojosa*, in the most friendly Manner to deliver up the Fleet to him, which he alledg'd he could not do with Honour, till he heard from *Peru*, whether *Pizarro* and the rest would obey the King's Orders, because it would be declaring them Rebels to enhance his own Loyalty; yet protested that in case they prov'd obstinate, he would not blemish the Reputation of his Ancestors, who had always been true Subjects, by standing out against his Sovereign. Whilst they were in this Suspence, a Ship arriv'd from *Peru*, on the 13<sup>th</sup> of November, 1546, and in it *Laurence de Aldana*, who gave *Hinojosa* an Account of the Posture of Affairs at *Lima*, and that *Gomez de Solis* would soon be there, being both of them appointed to go as Deputies into *Spain*. *Hinojosa* was much concern'd when he heard of the Insolence of *Pizarro* and his Followers, and told *Aldana*, that tho' he would have no Hand in those Practices, but was resolv'd to serve the King; yet he would know of the President whether he had Power to make War, and to pardon such as submitted. In this Discourse they came to the Point of the Orders

given for making away with the President, which they both agreed should be burnt, not thinking it fit to be seen, nor that it would be any Reputation to them to discover it. Four Days after his Arrival, *Aldana* went to visit the President, and told him, that having seen the Extravagances and Follies committed in *Peru*, he thought himself happy in being got away from thence, and in that Place, where he might devote himself to the King's Service, and pray'd he would employ him in it. He also acquainted the President with *Pizarro's* Obstinacy, and deliver'd to him a Letter sign'd by seventy of the Rebels, where the Insolence of the Expressions was very remarkable; and in other Letters they said, that if he went into *Peru* they would kill him. After all these Delays, *Hinojosa*, who was loth to incur the Disgrace of being a Rebel, resolv'd to deliver up the Fleet to the President, as the King's Vicegerent, he giving an authentick Copy of the Power he had for repealing the new Laws, granting a general Pardon, and giving *Indians* in commendam, to be sent to *Peru*, in order to induce those People to return to their Duty. The Fleet was then solemnly deliver'd, and the President regarding the Loyalty of *Hinojosa* and his Captains, and for the Encouragement of others to follow their Example, continu'd them all in their respective Employments, giving them Commissions in the King's Name, dated the first of *December* 1546. As soon as the Dispatches were gone for *Peru*, Captain *Palomino* hoisted the Royal Standard aboard the Admiral, and the Reduction of the Fleet was declar'd, and then the President sent Messengers to *Cartagena*, *Santa Marta*, the new Kingdom of *Granada* and *Hispaniola*,

## The HISTORY of America. 105

to bring Supplies of Men, and all warlike Stores. A good Ship was also appointed to lie at the Island of *Pearls* to compel all Ships coming from *Peru* to go into the Harbour.

In the mean time *Peter Hernandez Paniagua*, sent by the President, and *Francis Maldonado*, *Pizarro's* Agent, landed at *Tumbez*, where the latter began to declare himself, justifying *Pizarro* against the King. *F. Francis* of *St. Michael*, a Dominican, being also come into *Peru*, began, as the President had order'd him, to publish the King's general Pardon, the repealing of the new Laws, and the Favour his Majesty extended to all Men in general, to the great Satisfaction of all Persons, as it was to hear, that the President had full Power, as well as sufficient Capacity, to settle the Kingdom in a peaceable manner; many being now grown weary of *Pizarro's* Usurpation, and the horrid Insolencies of his Favourites; and concluding, that there was no likelihood of avoiding a War, since *Pizarro* was resolv'd not to quit the Government, and supported by many whom he had secur'd to his Party, by enriching and making them his Copartners in all horrid Crimes.

Having before had occasion to mention the famous Mountain of *Potosi*; whence *Carvajal* drew so much Wealth, possessing himself of it when he was in the Province of *los Charcas*, where that Mountain is, it will not be improper to speak of it in this Place, before we proceed to the farther Actions of the President *Gasca*. *Potosi* lies in 21 Deg. 40 Min. of S. Lat. that is between the two Tropicks, towards the Extremity of the Torrid Zone, and yet is colder than the *Netherlands*; whereas, according to its Latitude, it ought to be very hot. The Reason of its Coldness is the  
great

great Height, expos'd to Winds, and particularly one they there call *Tomahavi*, which is fierce and cold, and prevails from *May* till *August*. The Mountain is naturally dry, cold, barren, bare, and uncouth, producing neither Fruit, nor Grass, and scarce habitable; and yet the plenty of Silver has caus'd it to be inhabited, and afford plenty of all Things. The Colour of the Earth is a dark Red, the Shape of the Hill is like a Sugar Loaf, rising above all the other Hills about it; the Ascent steep, yet so as that they go up it a Horseback, about a League in Compass at the Bottom, and a quarter of a League from the Top to the Foot. From the Bottom of it rises another Hill, call'd *Guaynapotosi*, that is, *young Potosi*, where there were formerly Mines, but the Veins were not fix'd. At the Foot of the great Hill lies the Town of *Spaniards* and *Indians*, which is about two Leagues in Compass, where is a prodigious Trade. The *Ingas* wrought at the Mines of *Porco*; but never knew these, which were found by an *Indian*, call'd *Gualca*, of the Nation of the *Chunbibilcas*, in the Territory of *Cuzco*, who following some Deer, they ran up the Hill, and he pursuing up the steep Part, laid hold on a Bush that grew in a Vein, and being torn up discover'd the Metal, which the *Indian* knew by being acquainted with *Porco*. He carry'd some pieces of it to *Porco*, to be essay'd by Fire, and privately melted the Silver he drew from thence, till another *Indian* of the Vale of *Xauxa*, observing, that he throve better than he had done before, and had larger Pigs of Plate, press'd him to impart that Secret. *Gualca* told him, and they agreed to enjoy the Mine, till they fell out, because he of *Xauxa* knew not how to refine his Silver, and *Gualca* would not tell



tell him how he manag'd his; so that being incens'd on this and other Accounts, he discover'd the matter to his Master, whose Name was *Villaroel*, residing at *Porco*, who finding the Treasure his Servant had told him, oblig'd *Gualca* to register, and stak'd out the Vein jointly with him, which marking out the Number of Yards the Law allows to those that discover or work Mines; by which means, and notifying the same to the proper Officers, they become Proprietors of the Mine, to work it as their own, paying the King the fifth Part of the Product. This first registering of the Mines of *Potosi* was in *April* 1545. A few Days after was discover'd another Vein, which they call of Tin, and prov'd very rich, but difficult to be wrought, because the Metal is hard. In *August* 1546. was register'd the Vein call'd *Mendieta*. The Discovery on the Hill of *Potosi* being nois'd abroad, most of the Inhabitants of the Town of *la Plata* resorted thither, to get Mines, as did many *Indians*, and in a short time that became the largest Town in the Kingdom. The Wealth drawn from those Mines was so immense, that the King's Fifths came to be worth a Million and an half of Pieces of Eight a Year, and according to this Computation, 30000 Pieces of Eight were daily taken out of those Mines, and this with regard to the Silver that was mark'd and paid the 5<sup>th</sup>; for in those early Days very much was carry'd off without marking, or paying the 5<sup>th</sup>, being all that pass'd among the *Indians*, and no small Quantity among the *Spaniards*, so that not one third of the Wealth of *Potosi* was register'd. Another good Quality of that Hill is, that tho' the Mines have been dug down 200 Fathoms in depth, they have never met with Water,

ter, which has occasion'd the laying aside of the Mines of *Porco*, the Metal whereof is immensely rich, because it is too much Labour to hew Rocks, and to drain Water. According to the Account taken in the Year 1574. by order of the Viceroy *Don Francisco de Toledo*, it appear'd that seventy six Millions had been drawn from the Hill of *Potosi* from its first Discovery till that Year, speaking only of that which had paid the 5<sup>th</sup>; and from the aforesaid Year till 1585. there were thirty five Millions more; so that both the Sums to the said Year amounted to 111 Millions that paid the 5<sup>th</sup> of assay'd Pieces of Eight, each of them worth thirteen Royals and a Quartillo, besides all the Silver carry'd off without paying the Fifth, which is an immense Quantity, and that which has paid the Fifth in other Places; the same Wealth has since continu'd; some Fleets bringing over ten or twelve Millions, one third thereof for the King, and two thirds of it from *Pernu*.

It was at first very difficult to separate the Metal from the Earth or Dross that adher'd to it, by dint of Fire; afterwards, tho' the Antients never found out the Secret of separating the Metal of Silver by Mercury, but only Gold, affirming that it would not cleave to any other Metal, the *Spaniards* discover'd that it will cling to Silver, but not so soon, and has no Effect upon other Metals; besides Providence provided for the Necessity of making the Separation by Fire, so that there being a Scarcity of Wood, there is a sort of Shrub like *Marweed*, growing on all the Mountains in *Pernu*, which is of singular Efficacy for running of that Metal. At present, the poor Ore, that could not be refin'd by Fire, is not lost,

lost, since the Invention of separating by Quick-silver, which perfectly clears the Silver without Fire; for which purpose it has also pleas'd God to provide; for whereas there were no Quick-silver Mines known in *Europe*, besides those in *Carinthia* in *Germany*, and those at *Almaden* in *Spain* in the Year 1566, one *Henry Garzes*, a *Portuguese*, saw in the Hands of an *Indian* a red Stone, with which those People were wont to colour their Faces, call'd by them *Llimpi*, and believing it to be the same as our Vermilion, from which he knew Quicksilver to be extracted, he made an Experiment, and found it to be so: And thus were found out the Quicksilver Mines of *Guanacavelica*, near the City of *Guamanga*, which was a vast Improvement for the Mines of *Potosi*, an infinite Quantity of Silver having been extracted by means of the said Mercury, from the Ore that had been cast aside, and look'd upon as useless; for the Quicksilver separates the Silver, tho' it be poor and low, which the Fire does not. It is believ'd, that the King, without being at any Expence, receives from the Quicksilver Mines 400000 Pieces of Eight of fourteen Royals each yearly; besides what is gain'd by the cleansing of the Metal with Mercury, amounting to a vast Sum. Eight thousand Hundred Weight were wont to be yearly drawn out of those Mines. It is not known that there are any other such Mines in all the *West Indies*, nor was there ever any in *Africk*; as to *Asia*, some is said to be found in *China*, but whether little or much is not known, none being brought over.

Since we have look'd back to speak of the Mines, this may be a proper Place to mention the founding of the City of *Loxa*. When *Pizarro* had

## 110 *The HISTORY of America.*

had vanquish'd and kill'd the Viceroy in the Plain of *Anaquito*, being convinc'd that there was none left to oppose him, he dispers'd his Forces, and sent Captain *Alonso de Mercadillo* with 100 Men to found a Town, on the Highway that leads from *Quito* to *Cuzco*; because the Natives often robb'd and kill'd the *Spaniards* who travell'd that Way, by which means those People were entirely reduc'd to Peace. The Territory of this City joins to that of *Cuenca* Northward, and extends sixteen Leagues that Way; to the Southward it reaches to the Borders of the City of *St. Michael*; to the Eastward to that of *Zamora*, being all the Desert Ridge of Mountains, and to the Westward to the Port of *Paita*. Its District extends twenty five Leagues, and it is eighty Leagues from *Quito*, seated at present between two small Rivers of good Water, in a fruitful Vale call'd *Cuxibamba*, which signifies pleasant Plain, free from any venomous Creatures, and even from Mosquitos, or Gnats. The Air is healthy, rather cold than hot, tho' in bare 6 Deg. of S. Lat. and tho' there are some cloudy Days, they never settle there, but on the Top of the Mountains, so that scarce a Day passes without Sunshine. Sometimes there are high Winds, but for the most part they are moderate; the rainy Season is generally from *March* till *August*; Snow never falls, all the Territory is well furnish'd with useful Timber, as Cedars, Willows of two sorts, Walnut-Trees, Oaks, and those they call *Morochos* fit for building, and Planks. Along the Banks of the River there are Groves of Fruit-Trees, and among them several sorts carry'd from *Spain*, the Soil plentifully producing all sorts of Sustenance. In the Territory there are many Mines of Gold,



## The HISTORY of *America*. 111

Silver, Lead, Iron and Steel; some of the Rivers have Gold; and there is also Allum, and Cochineel; abundance of Springs every where, and the Water of them very good. In the Province of *Caruma* there is a Spring of such hot Water, that no living Creature can endure it, and is us'd for bathing Persons that are crippled, or have Sores; the Taste of it is disagreeable, being suppos'd to pass through Veins of Sulphur. There are Herbs of *Spanish* Growth, and others Native, and the *Indians* use Roots that have singular Virtue against Cold and Aches. The *Indian* Wheat produces fifty, eighty, and sometimes an 100 for one; and *European* Wheat and Barley thirty, forty, or fifty; it will all keep above three Years, and is extraordinary nourishing. As to living Creatures, there are Bears, little Lions, some few Tigers, Deer, *Spanish* and *Indian* Sheep, Swine, Cows, Mares, very good Horses; Pigeons, Turtle-Doves, three sorts of Partridges, Turkeys, Hens, &c. All the Rivers abound in Fish, with and without Scales, very agreeable to the Palate; the Bees yield good Honey, and do not sting. There are many high Mountains, the Country being all uneven, several Structures, and Inns built by the *Ingas*, at four or five Leagues Distance from each other, where they lodg'd themselves when they travell'd, or else entertain'd the Troops in their Marches. The Roads made by the *Ingas* are preserv'd, and are clear from Robbers, or wild Beasts. This City was first call'd *Zarça*, and now *Loxa*; at first it was seated at *Cangachamba*, which Place being somewhat hot, it was remov'd to the place where it now stands. All the Inhabitants value themselves upon keeping good Horses and Arms, it is in the Diocese of *Quito*, and sub-  
ject

ject to the Court of that Place. There is in it a Parish Church and two Monasteries of *Dominicans* and *Franciscans*. The Natives had three several Languages, being those of the *Paltas*, the *Cawas*, and the *Malacatas*; but the Language of *Cuzco* was common to all, by order of the *Ingas*. The Natives multiply because the Country is healthy, and their Labour small, they enjoying their Liberty; they are of good Aspects, and the *Cañaries* more understanding than the others; their Habit, Religion, and manner of burying was like the rest of *Peru*; but they have all embrac'd Christianity. They reckoned their Years by twelve Moons, dividing them into Winter and Summer; they now breed Cattle, of whose Wool and Cotton they make Cloth, and use *Spanish* Tools. The Division of the several Boundaries of Territories is well known by Breaks, Hills, or Rivers, they had formerly, as well as now. They appointed Market-Days, when they exchange'd one thing for another, or for Gold or Silver, and had Weights, but now they use the *Spanish*. The Caziques were wont to punish all Offences, but that Power has been taken from them, because they exercis'd it with Cruelty. In the Year 1546. there was an universal Pestilence throughout the whole Kingdom of *Peru*, which began beyond *Cuzco*, and spread over all the Country, carrying off an infinite Number of People. It began with a Pain in the Head, then a violent Fever; the Pain in the Head remov'd to the left Ear, and the Distemper was so violent, that they dy'd in two or three Days.

C H A P. IV.

*Dispositions for the War in Peru; Aldana abroad with four Ships for the King, Mora Governor of Truxillo declares for the President.*

PETER Hernandez Paniagua, who, as has been said, was sent by the President Gasca, with Dispatches for Pizarro, and Francis Maldonado, a zealous Admirer of that Rebel, arriving at Piura, about the beginning of the Year 1547. Pizarro's Governor in that Place, by the Advice of Maldonado, seiz'd Paniagua, and took away his Dispatches, which was much resented by the President, that Gentleman being a Messenger sent by Regal Authority; and all the loyal Party look'd upon that as a treasonable Act, and offer'd to serve the King in chastizing the Offenders. The open Robberies, cruel Murders, and other horrid Crimes committed by Carvajal, of which there were frequent Complaints, began to render him odious to Pizarro, who could not bear to see that Man cope with him in Villainy; besides the Judge Zepeda looking upon himself as the next Person to Pizarro, would not suffer any other to rival him in Point of Authority, and therefore advis'd to put him to Death, which was agreed upon between them two; being mov'd by another Motive, which was the seizing of that vast Treasure he had amass'd, however that took not Effect then. Pizarro daily receiv'd Advice of the immense Wealth of Potosi, and had part brought

## 114 *The HISTORY of America.*

him of the 700000 Pieces of Eight *Carvajal* had seiz'd at those Mines, as has been said, all which Treasure was hoarded, that Rebel's greatest Delight being to seize the King's Revenue, and the Estates of all that were Loyal. At the same time he was inform'd of the seizing of *Paniagua*, and that *Maldonado* was bringing his Dispatches; and a Consultation being held upon the same, it was resolv'd, that *Paniagua* should be set at Liberty, and his Dispatches restor'd to him, it being contrary to the Laws of Nations, and a thing odious to God and Man to infringe the Privileges of Messengers. *Maldonado* arriv'd first at *Lima*, and gave an Account of the Success of his Negotiation in *Spain*, declaring that the King was displeas'd at what had been done in *Peru*, and ask'd, who that *Gonzalo Pizarro* was. Besides, being disgusted at the mean Entertainment he had found at Court, he advis'd *Pizarro* to make the best of what he had. At length *Paniagua* arriv'd, attended by one that did not permit him to speak to any Body; and *Pizarro* said to him, That since he had enough to maintain him, it would be more becoming to mind his Prayers, than to go about disturbing Kingdoms, and carrying Letters, which perhaps might not answer his Expectation, and threatened, that if he talk'd to any Body, he would cut off his Head. *Paniagua* answer'd, That he was come to serve him, and being a Gentleman would do nothing that was dishonourable. He then deliver'd his Message, and the King's and the President's Letters, which *Pizarro* read, but never shew'd them to any Body, yet consulted with his Confidants, among whom some were for recalling *Hinojosa*, with orders to bring away the President; others oppos'd it, alledging that



## The HISTORY of *America*. 115

that his Presence would certainly cause a Division in the Kingdom, there being many loyal Men, and no fewer discontented on account of the hard usage they had met with; besides that he would have Forces from *Popayan*, and the new Kingdom of *Granada*. They also advis'd *Pizarro* not to trust the King, who, if he once got him into his Power, would certainly strike off his Head. Accordingly *Paniagua* was sent away without any Answer to the King's Letter, but only one for the President.

The President and Commanders at *Panama*, being sensible that a War must break out, sent to the Viceroy of *New-Spain*, and the Courts of *Guatemala* and *Nicaragua* for Ships, Men, Horses and Arms. The Ship that sail'd from *Peru*, with the Bishop of *Bogota* and *Gomez de Solis*, which last was one of the Deputies *Pizarro* sent to the King, carry'd a dozen or fifteen Soldiers that were banish'd to *Nicaragua*; those Men conspir'd to kill *Solis* and go off with the Ship, which had aboard 150000 Pieces of Eight; but the Design being discover'd to *F. Thomas* of *St. Martin*, he dissuaded them from executing it, affirming, that he knew *Solis* to be Loyal, and since they were bound for *Panama*, where the President was, they would there understand what was to be done for the King's Service, and thus that Affair ceased. The Ship the Bishop *Loaysa* was aboard of, being a better Sailor, arriv'd at *Panama* on the 20th of *January* this Year 1547, where that Bishop landed, and was visited by the President, who carry'd him to his House, and discoursing about the Affairs of *Peru*, was assur'd by him, that *Pizarro* was not to be reduc'd without Force, but that there were many loyal Gentlemen, who

## 116 *The HISTORY of America.*

seem'd to adhere to him only to save their Lives. The other Ship arriving with *Solis* at the Pearl Islands, *Paul de Meneses* gave him Letters from *Hinojosa* and *Aldana*, wherein they acquainted him, that the Fleet had declar'd for the King; to which *Solis* answer'd, that he should not be against it, but do the like, as became a Gentleman; and accordingly, as soon as landed, he waited on the President, and deliver'd to him all the Dispatches he brought from *Pizarro*.

Tho' most Men had continually been very cautious how they behav'd themselves among the Rebels, at this Time they grew much more reserv'd, for it was not only dangerous to talk, but even to look amiss. The Judge *Zarate*, who had liv'd all this while at *Lima*, expecting some Revolution, was in such Fear, that he neither went out of his House, nor receiv'd any Visits, tho' they had marry'd a Daughter he had against his Will, and talk'd very scandalously of him: He falling sick of a Flux, *Pizarro* visited, and offer'd him some Powder he said he took himself, which that Judge unadvisedly accepted, and died immediately, whence all concluded that he had been poison'd. *Pizarro* and his Adherents growing uneasy, because they had in a long Time receiv'd no Advice from *Panama*, and thinking the Fleet stay'd away too long, they sent Orders to the several Commanders in all Parts to be ready in Arms upon all Occasions, and having receiv'd a satisfactory Answer, *Pizarro* began to think himself very safe. At this Time *Carvajal* came from the Town of *la Plata* to *Lima*, with 150 Spears and 300 Muskets, besides an immense Quantity of Silver, all which he kept to himself, and sav'd his Life by coming at a Time when

when there was so much need of him. *Pizarro* went out to meet him, with a great Number of Horsemen and Musick, for he had then receiv'd Intelligence that six Ships had been seen at the Port of *Manta*, which had stood off to Sea again, and since they did not put into that Harbour, it was concluded for certain that there was a War.

The President being now fully convinc'd, as has been observ'd before, that there was no possibility of reducing that Kingdom without Force, the Ships were refitted, the Artillery mounted, Arms and Provisions were furnish'd, Horses and Mules bought up, and Captain *Vendrel* was sent to the Pearl Islands to build a Galliot of twenty two Oars on each Side. A Council of the prime Commanders being held, it was resolv'd, that since *Pizarro* had no Ships nor Artillery, it would be convenient to send some to scour along the Coast, in order to receive all such Persons as should be desirous to forsake the Rebels; to which purpose four of the best Sailers were chosen, carrying 300 Men, well paid, according to the Rate then practis'd in *Peru*, to vie with *Pizarro's* Extravagancy, and it was found necessary to give the Commanders very considerable Premiums, for their Subsistence in *Panama*, which was a Testimony of the President's Wisdom and Generosity. Upon mature deliberation, *Lawrence de Aldana* was pitch'd upon to command those Ships, as well in regard of his Experience and the Interest he had in *Peru*, as because having been employ'd by *Pizarro* as his Agent, he had gone over to serve the King, which Action of his could not but have much Effect upon many for the great Reputation of his Judgment. *Aldana*

## 118 The HISTORY of America.

*dana* being thus appointed Commadore, the Captains were *John Alonso Palomino*, *Herman Mexia*, and *John de Yllanes*. The Provincial of the *Dominican* Friars was also put aboard to deliver Letters, and make known the Repeal of the new Laws and the general Pardon; and it was order'd that they should not touch at any Port, till they came to the City of *Lima*, to the End that *Pizarro* might be the less upon his Guard, knowing nothing of the Reduction of the Fleet. These Ships sail'd on the 17<sup>th</sup> of *February* 1547, and having spent many Days in foul Weather, could not avoid drawing near to the Coast, and being spy'd by the Ships that were returning with *Paniagua*, these sent a Float to know who the others were, and *Aldana* order'd those Men to be kept aboard his Ship, that he might not be known to be there; then plying up and down they drew near to *Manta*, and then to *Tumbez*, where *Bartholomew de Villalobos* was Governor for *Pizarro*, who suspecting that they were not Friends, since they did not put into the Harbour, sent Advice thereof to *Truxillo*, which is 110 Leagues distant, to Captain *James de Mora*, who forwarded the Intelligence to *Lima*, and set out for that Place himself, having been call'd by *Pizarro*; but turn'd back when he had gone a few Leagues, looking upon it as an ill Omen, that his Sword drop'd out of the Scabbard and lam'd his Horse; and having before sent to engage himself to the King's Service, he pack'd up all he had, and put it aboard a Ship with his Wife, offering to take along with him all that would go over to the King's Party, and so sail'd away for *Panama*. Those that remain'd at *Truxillo*, sent Advice hereof to *Pizarro*. The next Night after he was at Sea, *Mora* saw a  
Light,



Light, and made to it, where he found *Laurence de Aldana*, and they all went to *Truxillo* to take in Provisions, being in Want. *Mora* landed and display'd a Banner for the King, they took in Provisions, and sent Messengers to several Places with the President's Dispatches, especially to *Gomez de Alvarado* at the *Chicchiapoyas*, *John de Saavedra* at *Guanaco*, *John Porcel* at the *Bracamayos*, and *Alonso de Mercadillo* at *Loxa*, directing them to go with their Men to join *James de Mora*, who would expect them at *Caxamalca*, whither the President would come with more Forces.

*Pizarro* was soon advertis'd of what *James de Mora* had done, which convinc'd him that he had lost the Fleet, because *Mora* would not have done it without being sure that the Fleet was for the King. Soon after came a *Mercenarian* Friar with Advice, that *Mora* was return'd with *Aldana*, for which Reason the Licenciate *Leon* was sent with some Soldiers to secure *Truxillo*, and had *Mora's* Estate given him, with directions to send back by the same Ship, under the Conduct of that Friar, the Wives of all those that were fled to *Panama*, without allowing them to take any of their Gold, Silver, or *Indian* Servants; and that the said Friar should require the President to permit *Pizarro's* Agents to pass freely into *Spain*, and not to enter *Peru* himself with a Power till the King had return'd an Answer, and to allow Liberty of Commerce. No sooner was this done, than News was brought that some Men had taken Arms for the King in the Port of *Collao*; and Major *John de Silvera* was commanded to disperse those People, and to burn the Ships that were in the Port, lest the Enemy should come and take them. *Leon* sail'd for *Truxillo* on the 26<sup>th</sup> of

## 120 *The HISTORY of America.*

*April* aboard a Galeon, having near ninety Persons aboard, and being come near to *Sama*, thought fit to make some stay there, to be inform'd how Affairs stood at *Truxillo*; and in Compliance with the Clergyman *Baltassar de Loaysa*, who had got away from *Lima* on pretence of being cur'd of some Distemper, they proceeded to the Port of *Guanape*, seven Leagues from *Truxillo*, where hearing that there were Ships on the Rocky Shore, they were in a Consternation, and for returning to *Lima*; but *Loaysa* diverted them from it, alledging, that they would give a bad Account of themselves, if they return'd without knowing for what Reason. In short, *Loaysa* landed, and went to *Truxillo*, where he found Captain *John Alonso Palomino*, who gave him authentick Copies of the Pardon, and repealing of the new Laws; at the same time informing him, that the President would soon be there with Forces against *Pizarro*. *Loaysa* returning to the Ship, related all he had heard, and perswaded *Leon* and the rest to go join *Aldana*, who having spy'd the Ship was sending two to take it, and being met, they all joyfully herded together, and went away to *Truxillo*, the Priest *Loaysa* urging the Captains, by telling them, he knew that *Pizarro* and his Adherents were in a great Fright and Consternation, that no Time ought to be lost, for if they press'd them, they would certainly fall immediately.

*The End of the second BOOK.*

THE



THE  
General HISTORY

Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of

AMERICA, &c.



DECAD V. BOOK III.



CHAP. I.

*Several Commanders join James de Mora  
to serve the King ; Pizarro's Preparati-  
ons for his Defence.*



AS soon as *Aldana* had landed the sick  
Men that were aboard his Ships, he  
sail'd away for *Lima*, and *James de  
Mora*, with all the Horse and Foot  
he could gather, march'd to *Caxa-  
malca*, whither repair'd *John de Saavedra* from  
*Guanuco*, *Gomez de Alvarado* from the *Chiachapoyas*,  
*John Ponce* from the *Bracamoros*, and *Alonso de  
Merca-*

## 122 The HISTORY of *America*.

*Mercadillo* from *Loxa*, abandoning the Towns, and leading away the serviceable People, all that met there being above 400 Men well arm'd, and many of them well mounted. At the same time *Bartholomew de Villalobos* marching the Mountain Way, with the Forces he had drawn out of *St. Michael*, *Tumbez*, and *Maria Velica*, to serve *Pizarro*, was inform'd that he could not miss meeting *Saavedra* and *Alvarado*, above mention'd, who were stronger than he; whereupon by general Consent of all he return'd to *Piura* to hold that City and Province for the King. This being known to *Francis de Olmos*, who kept *Puerto Viejo* for *Pizarro*, he went to *Guayaquil*, where he kill'd *Emanuel Estacio*, *Pizarro*'s Governor, and declar'd for the King. *Aldana* finding that the *Mercenrian* Friar was bent upon returning to *Lima*, gave him Letters for *Pizarro*, shewing what had been done at *Panama*, and what had mov'd all the Commanders and Gentlemen to espouse the King's Cause; they also gave him Copies of the Repeal of the new Laws, and of the general Pardon, to be dispers'd. The Friar having given *Pizarro* an account of the Loss of *Truxillo*, of the Revolt of his two Ships, and of *James de Mora*'s assembling Forces on the Mountains, he commanded him to keep the same secret; and what *Aldana* had done being spread abroad, he complain'd of him, saying, If he had kill'd him, as he had been advis'd, it would have prevented his betraying him. The falling off of the Fleet being also made publick, and that a War was unavoidable, it was resolv'd to raise Men, and accordingly the Commanders were nam'd, among whom were some whose Crimes and Villainies were the only Merit by which they attain'd Preferment. Drums were beaten, and Proclamation



mation made for all Men to repair to the Colours, and receive Pay, under pain of Death, and *Pizarro* distributed Money, giving his two Captains of Horse 50000 Pieces of Eight, 25000 to Captain *Martin de Robles*, the like to *Machicao*, the same to *Guevara*; 40000 to *John de Acosta*; 12000 to *Martin de Almendras*; the like to *John de la Torre*, and so to *Antony Altamirano*, whom he appointed the Royal Standard-Bearer, and the Money once paid, the Men were soon rais'd. Because the Traders were not to go to the Wars, it was agreed with them that they should find Horses and Arms, and many gave Money. The Forces pass'd Muster, posted their *Corps de Garde*, watch'd the City by Night, and in *Pizarro's* House there was a strong Guard. He appear'd with much State at the Muster, where were found above 900 Men well cloath'd and arm'd, and the Horse well mounted. They had Plenty of very good Powder, and as good Muskets; and being desirous that all the Soldiers should ride, he bought many Mares, and seiz'd others; so that he was computed to have expended 500000 Pieces of Eight, and yet he had much Treasure left, which he carry'd along with him.

Before what has been said, he had sent Major *Silvera* for Men, and Money to the Town of *la Plata*, *Antony de Robles* to *Cuzco*, *Luke Martin* to *Arequipa*, and others to all the several Commanders, directing them how to order their marches, and where to join, giving them an Account of the Posture of Affairs, justifying his own Cause, and saying, That having sent *Aldana* with Dispatches to the King, he had seiz'd his Fleet, which had cost him much Treasure, and was serving against him; that the President *Gasca*, whom

whom the King sent to establish Peace, was coming in Arms to disturb and punish those who had been concern'd in the late Troubles; and therefore they ought to consider, that they were as much concern'd in carrying on that War as himself; and if they should be told that the King forgave all that was pass'd, they might be assur'd it was not true, because when those Orders were given, the Death of the Viceroy *Blasco Nuñez*, was not known there; and for that Reason he design'd to oppose the coming of the President, till he could know what the King would order in Relation to that Affair; besides that he was inform'd, the King did not send him to take the Government out of his Hands, but only to preside in the Royal Court, which he knew perfectly well, being assur'd of it by *Maldonado*, who was return'd from *Spain* and *Flanders*; and that the President would have said as much in the Letters he sent him by *Paniagua*, but that his own Officers had deceiv'd, and perswaded him to enter the Kingdom in Arms. All this the wicked Judge *Zepeda* labour'd to confirm, impudently alledging, that the President had committed Treason in detaining the Agents that were going to the King, and therefore they might safely make War against him. At the same time he found a thousand ways to extort Money, compelling many to go to the War, and then ransoming them, and seizing Deposits, and other Sums. Besides he swore he would chop off the Head of any Person that should speak scandalously of *Pizarro*, or reflect on his Cause; endeavouring at the same time to incense that Rebel against many Gentlemen, desiring he would permit him to put fifty of them to Death, which would bring all the Country in-

to

to Subjection, for he would have no Man to be false to the Person whom he serv'd. Still the more to ingratiate himself, he advis'd to form a Process against the President, and all the Commanders who had deliver'd up the Fleet, to which purpose *Pizarro* assembled all the Lawyers that were in the City, before whom *Zepeda* represented all the Crimes he pretended the President and those Commanders were guilty of; and they being all in fear of their own Lives, readily offer'd to sign the Sentence, which was that the Licentiate *Peter de la Gasca* should lose his Head, and that *Hinojosa*, and the other Officers, should be drawn and quarter'd. The other Lawyers told *Pizarro* they ought not to sign that Sentence, because *Gasca* was a Priest, and they would incur Excommunication; and if those Officers once knew that they were condemn'd, they could conceive no Hopes of ever serving him, which ought not to be despair'd of, because such a Turn of Affairs might happen, as to induce them to come back to him. Thus the Sentence was left sign'd by *Zepeda* alone, who kept all Men in such awe, that they dreaded he would lay hold of the most trivial Motives to take away their Lives, for they little regarded their Estates.

Upon Advice that the Kings Ships were gone from *Truxillo*, *Pizarro* sent Captain *John de Acosta* with fifty Musketeers well mounted to obstruct their watering along the Coast. He stay'd but two Days at *Truxillo*, fearing lest *James de Mora*, who was only thirty Leagues off, at *Caxamalca*, or the Men aboard the Ships might cut off his Retreat; whereupon returning towards *Lima*, he was inform'd, that the Ships were in the Port of *Santa*, those of the Ships having at

## 126 *The HISTORY of America.*

the same time receiv'd Advice of his being in those Parts, for which Reason they laid an Ambush of 150 Musketeers in a Field of Reeds, which he had notice of; as also, that if he kept along the Coast he might take some that were watering, which accordingly he did, and seiz'd about twenty Soldiers and Sailors, whom he sent to *Lima*, those in the Ambush not being able to overtake him, by Reason they were all Foot. *Pizarro* order'd the Prisoners to be cloath'd and arm'd, listing them in his own Forces, and was by them inform'd of all that had happen'd aboard the Fleet, and at *Panama*; and that *F. Peter de Ulloa* was come ashore to seek for Provisions, who being sought after, was found, and detain'd Prisoner some Days, to get farther Intelligence from him. *John de Acosta* was then sent out with 280 Men, but went no farther than *la Barranca*, twenty four Leagues from *Lima*, for such Reasons as shall be mention'd hereafter. About the same time that *John de Saavedra* receiv'd the Dispatches from the Fleet, he had repeated Orders at *Guanuco*, where he then was, to come away to him with what Men he had, whom he warn'd to be in a readiness, and then marching out with them under Arms, declar'd, That he would go serve the King; but as he design'd not to compel any Body, those that would might follow him, as they all did, except *Francis de Espinosa*, and two or three more that went away to *Pizarro*, and gave him an Account of what had happen'd, who order'd the said *Espinosa* to return to *Panuco* with thirty Men to dispeople that Place, and carry away the Beasts of Burden, Horses, and Inhabitants left there, and the *Indian* Servants. He found the *Indians* had revolted, and many of the Townsmen were



were fled, and return'd with those that had stay'd to *Lima*, where *Pizarro* was very thankful, and made him his Gentleman Sewer, which he look'd upon as a great Reward.

After the Departure of *Francis de Carvajal* from the Upper or Southern Provinces, the Country remain'd in a distracted Condition, still expos'd to Oppression, Robberies, and other Calamities; but *Antony de Robles* coming as Governor for *Pizarro*, the state of War began again, for he gather'd all the Men and Money he could, and set out for *Lima*. Being come to *Xaquixaguana*, which is but four Leagues from *Cuzco*, he was inform'd, that *James Centeno* having lain hid in a Cave, almost a Year, with *Lewis de Ribera*, enduring extraordinary Hardships with wonderful Resolution, had ventur'd out, and drawn together about forty of the Soldiers of the former War, besides some others, was marching resolutely for *Cuzco*. Upon this Advice *Robles* return'd to *Cuzco*, where hearing that *Centeno* was near at hand, he drew up 300 Men in the Market Place, and sent *Francis de Aguirre* to view the Enemy; but he stay'd with *Centeno*, and gave him an Account of the Posture of those Forces at *Cuzco*; whereupon he enter'd our Lady's Street in the Night, and alighting from Horseback, gave such a furious onset on the Flank of those Men, being resolv'd either to conquer or to die, that he soon routed the Rebels, killing eight of them, and wounding many, which was an heroick Action, in regard that he durst Attempt it with so small a Number of Men that were meanly arm'd. *Antony de Robles* was taken, and his Head struck off the next Day, *Centeno* being immediately submitted to by the City; where he seiz'd 100000 Pieces of Eight he found  
 belonging

belonging to *Pizarro*, which he distributed among his Men, to buy Arms; appointed Commanders, and march'd out of the City with about 400 Men through the Province of *Collao*, towards the City of *la Plata*, to secure that Place, and endeavour to bring over *Alonso de Mendoza* to serve the King. At this same time *Luke Martin* had set out from *Arequipa* with 130 Men, to go to *Lima* into the Service of *Pizarro*, but his own People secur'd and carry'd him Prisoner to *Ceneno*, choosing *Ferome de Villegas* for their Commander, and they two being join'd, began to treat about reducing of *Mendoza*.

Advice of all these Affairs, and what had been done in other Parts, soon came to the Knowledge of *Pizarro*, who considering that *Peter de Puelles* had a greater Power in the Equinoctial Provinces, and hoping he would not abandon him, as the rest had done, resolv'd to recall *John de Acosta*, and send him into the Southern Provinces against *Ceneno*, designing to follow him in Person, for he had 900 able Soldiers, and among them the Prime Inhabitants of the Country. Thus he judg'd, that when he had subdu'd the Southern Parts, the Forces he had joining those under *Puelles*, would be able to cope with any that should oppose him; and in case of any Disaster in the South, he could from thence retire to *Chile*, or the *Andes*, or some other Part, to save himself. *John de Acosta* returning, the People were in a great Consternation, and 106 of his Men deserted, taking *Ferome de Soria* for their Leader. This mov'd *Acosta* to behead *Alonso Mexia*, Son-in-Law to the Earl of *Gomera*, with another Soldier, and to carry some others he suspected Prisoners to *Lima*; and as soon as he came into the City, *Pizarro*, for some idle  
Stories

## The HISTORY of *America*. 129

Stories of worthless Persons, struck off the Head of *Antony Altamirano*, his own Standard-Bearer, only upon suspicion that he was slack in his Service, so far jealousy had already prevail'd on him, and then gave *Altamirano's* Estate, and the Standard to *Antony de Ribera*, who was come to him from *Guamanga* with thirty or forty Men. The Judge *Zepeda* considering, that the King's General Pardon, and the Repeal of the new Laws would have much Effect upon the People, being all that they had desir'd, and consequently that *Pizarro* would be abandon'd, when he least expected, thought this might be prevented by obliging all Persons to swear, and give it under their Hands, that they would adhere to him against any Person whatsoever. The Inhabitants being accordingly assembled, *Zepeda* declar'd the Occasion of summoning them, and without mentioning the Repeal of the Laws, or the Pardon, represented how much they were oblig'd to *Pizarro* for having discover'd the Country, and hazarded so much in Defence of their Estates, which they had receiv'd from his Brother, and then fell to reviling the President for having detain'd the Agents that were going into *Spain*, and seizing *Pizarro's* Ships; besides, that he was entering the Kingdom in warlike manner, dispersing Letters to raise Mutinies and Seditions; adding, that *Pizarro* was resolv'd to oppose him in defence of them all, since their Lives and Fortunes lay at stake; for that the President would certainly call them to Account for all the Bloodshed and other Disorders that hath happen'd of late; and therefore he desir'd their Advice, promising on the Word of a Gentleman, and if requisite would swear not to touch their Persons or

## 130 *The HISTORY of America.*

Estates, but to permit them to go away freely whithersoever they pleas'd; but that such as design'd to adhere to him should deal plainly, for they were to promise, and give it under their Hands, with this Caution, that they should consider what they promis'd, for that if they ever deviated from that Engagement, till the End of the War, against whomsoever it happen'd to be, they should certainly lose their Heads, upon the slightest Conviction or Jealousy. When he had done, *Pizarro* spoke to the same Effect, confirming all that the other had said, and asking their Advice; and none daring to oppose him, all promis'd to stand by him to the utmost, some adding many Flatteries and fawning Expressions. *Zepeda* then produc'd an Instrument containing a solemn Oath to the Effect of what he had spoken, and having read, was himself the first that sign'd it, and they all did the like, *Pizarro* returning them thanks.

Next it was resolv'd that *John de Acosta* should march by way of the Mountains to *Cuzco* with 300 Men, and accordingly he set out from *Lima* in quest of *Centeno*. *Pizarro* also thought fit to draw out all his Men from the City, as fearing, that the King's Ships being then within fifteen Leagues of the Port of *Lima*, his Soldiers would desert to them, if they drew near, for which Reason care was taken to mount them on Mares and Mules, and Proclamation was made for them all to be in readiness to depart, threatening to put to Death any that stay'd behind; *Carvajal* being to be left there with his Musketeers a Horseback for that purpose, when he was gone. These Proceedings put all Men into such a Consternation, that some hid themselves in the Fields of Reeds, others



others in Caves, some bury'd their Wealth, and others pretended to be sick. When it had been determin'd that *Pizarro* should set out the next Day, being in readiness with many Men, three Ships appear'd in the Harbour, which alarm'd the City, and *Pizarro* call'd his Council, where it was agreed to march immediately a League from the Sea, that none might desert, and that the Intention of *Laurence de Aldana*, who was aboard those Ships, should be known, before they remov'd any farther, because it might happen that they might take those Ships by way of Treaty, or Stratagem, there being no other Method, because they had either burnt or sunk what Ships they had, by Advice of *Zepeda*; which inrag'd *Carvajal*, who said, that tho' those Ships were unrigg'd, he would have gone aboard them with four or five hundred Musketeers, and taken those under *Aldana*. The Forces having been drawn up in the Market Place, *Pizarro* march'd out with Colours flying, and about 550 Men. The next Day he order'd *John Hernandez*, Alcalde of *Lima*, to repair to the Fleet, to remain there as Hostage, for one to be sent ashore, to give an Account of *Aldana's* Intentions. He going aboard Captain *Christopher de Peña*, a discreet and brave Man, was sent to *Pizarro*, who had him brought into his Tent by Night. He carry'd the President's Commission, the General Pardon, and Repeal of the new Laws, and represented, how much it was for the Advantage of the Kingdom to submit to the King's Pleasure, declaring at the same Time, that it was not his Majesty's Will, that *Pizarro* should govern; who ask'd, how he could know it? And he answer'd, That it was certainly so, since the President *Gasca* had such extraordinary Powers

## 132 The HISTORY of America.

given him; and no Alteration had been made in three Years, during all which Time, not one Piece of Eight had been return'd to him of all his Revenue. *Zepeda* then took upon him to speak, and protested he would hang and quarter all that were aboard the Ships, and punish the Licentiate *Gasca* for his Presumption, with many more Extravagancies and Follies, wherein he was seconded by some others. All the Company being order'd to withdraw, and none left with *Pizarro* but Captain *Peña*, he offer'd him 100000 Ducats, if he would contrive to have the *Galeon* deliver'd to him, which he utterly reject'd, and the next Day was exchange'd for the Hostage *John Fernandez*, who brought with him many Copies of the General Pardon, and of the King's Ordinances, some of which he privately deliver'd, and drop'd others about; for *Pizarro* had not shewn those sent to him to any but *Zepeda* and *Carvajal*, but burnt them in the Presence of several Persons, swearing he would punish those that sent them, as severely as he had done others that offended him.



CHAP.

C H A P. II.

*Several Gentlemen and others d'sert from Pizarro ; the City of Lima declares for the King ; James Centeno gathers 1000 Men for his Majesty's Service.*

WHEN Pizarro was ready to march, that his Cruelty might not be disappointed, he made choice of a most barbarous Officer to put it in Execution, which was *Peter Martin de Sicilia*, whom he appointed *Alcalde of Lima*, directing him, if any Man went from the Camp to the City, or stay'd in it, to hang him without asking any Questions. Accordingly *Peter Martin* went about with the Hangman, carrying many Halters, and he himself stab'd a Man dead near the Gallows, so that all Persons had Licenses granted if they went to the City. In that manner Captain *Basco de Guavera*, and several others went to the City with their Horses and Arms, under Colour of buying some Necessaries, and as soon as out of it took the Way to *Truxillo*, but having been discover'd by the Centinels, *Pizarro* sent Captain *John de la Torre* with some Musketters after them, who pursu'd them eight Leagues, and at Midnight overtook two that had stay'd behind to pick up Stragglers ; they threaten'd him, and he made off, considering, that as they were all Men of Quality, there was nothing to be got by them ; but in his return took *Ferdinand Bravo*, whom he carry'd to *Pizarro*, and as they were go-

# 134 The HISTORY of *America*.

ing to strangle him, his Sister, the Lady *Agnes Bravo*, a noble, discreet, and virtuous Woman, came in, and spoke to *Pizarro* so effectually, that he granted her Brother's Life, and she carry'd him away with her to the City. This Gentleman, and *James Pantoja* were the only two whom *Pizarro* pardon'd of all that were taken deserting, and it was much admir'd that any Mercy should be found among that inhuman Crew. The Flight of those Gentlemen alarm'd the whole Camp, for it was never imagin'd that any of them, except *Guevara* and *Ribera*, who always hated *Pizarro*, would have forsaken him, which made him uneasy, and outrageous, and to give Orders that no Man whatsoever should go to the City, and if the Guards happen'd to find any going, they should kill them. The same Night Captain *Martin de Robles* gave Notice to the Rich *James Maldonado*, that *Pizarro* design'd to kill him, which he being suspicious of before, tho' he had several good Horses, walk'd away a-foot, without acquainting any Body, and travelling all Night to a Field of Reeds, hid himself there, but fearing to be found, bestrid a Bundle of Straw, and being conducted by an *Indian*, made his way aboard the Ships, having been very near drowning, by reason that the Straw unbound. In the Morning *Martin de Robles* went to *Maldonado's* Tent, and not finding him, acquainted *Pizarro*, advising him to march the Forces away, lest they should all desert, and to give none leave to go to the City; yet ask'd it for some of his Company that wanted to buy Necessaries, adding, that he would go with them to prevent their deserting, and that, by the way, he would search the Monastery of *St. Dominick*, where *Maldonado* was said



to be, and bring him away, to the end that his Punishment might be a warning to others. *Pizarro* was well pleas'd with this Proposal, granted leave to go to the City, and *Robles* taking two good Horses that belong'd to *Maldonado*, and such Company as he thought fit, as soon as he came near the City of *Lima*, struck off into the Road to *Truxillo*, telling those who were with him, That repenting his having serv'd so long against the King, he was going to beg Pardon for his Offences, and they might follow him, which would be acceptable to God and Man. This unexpected Flight of *Robles* much added to the Confusion in *Pizarro's* Camp, who immediately gave Orders to March, looking upon that Camp as unfortunate to him, and having halted two Leagues from thence, order'd that *Benedict Suarez* should command the Guards that Night; saying, that if once the Army removed twelve Leagues from the City of *Lima*, none would desert; but that same Night the said *Suarez* ran away, with several others; as did also that same Night *Gabriel de Rojas*, with his two Nephews, and divers Commanders and Soldiers. When *Pizarro* was acquainted with it in the Morning, he did not wonder that *Rojas* was fled, tho' he was sorry for it, because he was a Man of Worth and Credit, but was much more concern'd for *Suarez*, blaming the Judge *Zepeda*, and his Major-General *Carvajal*, telling them in his Rage, that they would be the Cause of his Ruin.

This Loss of so many Persons of Note occasion'd such a Consternation in the Camp, that they were all afraid of one another, and began to consider, that since *Suarez*, who was the very Man that had kill'd the late Viceroy, and done so

### 136 The HISTORY of America.

much for *Pizarro* against the King, besides leaving above 15000 Ducats in the Camp, was gone, it must be certain that there was a general Pardon. The next Day, when the Forces were marching, two Soldiers, whose Names were *John Lopez* and *Francis Guillada*, relying on the Goodness of their Horses, went away before *Pizarro's* Face, calling to the Rest to go with them to serve the King; nor were they pursu'd for Fear lest others should follow their Example. Again, the Day after, as they were marching over the Plains towards *Arequipa*, many Musketeers and diverse Horsemen went away, so that the Forces daily declin'd, and still *Pizarro* bore up, saying, That those who remain'd were the more stanch, and that with them he would conquer *Pern* again. Some were taken and hang'd in the Night, and others stabb'd, without allowing them any Preparation for Death. Thus he was reduc'd to less than 300 Men, always dreading lest upon some false Alarm those also should abandon him. Soon after *Pizarro* remov'd from his first Camp, and the Flight of all those that have been mention'd, the Alcalde *Martin Pizarro*, and others that were left at *Lima*, on a sudden brought out the City Banner, and display'd it for the King, publicly reading his Majesty's Ordinances, which *Laurence de Aldana* had then sent to the Magistrates; whereupon abundance of People repair'd to the Sea-Coast, which with those that had lain hid or stay'd with Leave, and such as had fled from the Army, made up a considerable Number; Captain *John Alonso Palomino* being there ashore with 50 Soldiers, and the Boats ready to receive all that fled to the Sea, it being always suspected that *Pizarro* would return. *Aldana* at the same Time took all necessary

## The HISTORY of *America*. 137

sary Precautions for encouraging the Desertion from the Rebels, sending the general Pardon and other Dispatches into all Parts, and ordering all that fled from *Pizarro* to stay in the City and defend it; Things succeeding so well, that there was little Question made of the Shortness of *Pizarro's* Authority: However, *Aldana* still kept at Sea, with the Forces he had carry'd from *Panama*, and being inform'd that *Pizarro* had Advice of all that happen'd at *Lima*, he took care to prevent it for the future. Advice being then brought that *Pizarro* was returning, it soon after appear'd to have been a false Rumour spread abroad by himself, for Fear of being pursu'd, concluding that if he were, he should be left alone. However, the Report of his Return caus'd a mighty Consternation at *Lima*, because as yet no Measures were taken for opposing him, for which Reason most Men fled to the Sea, under the Protection of the Fleet, tho' some went away to hide themselves in several Places; but the Fright being soon over, Intelligence was brought that *Pizarro* took long Marches, being afraid of his own Men, and keeping a strong Guard about his Person, of his greatest Confidants, to prevent the Desertion, carrying none but *Zepeda's* Standard, having laid aside the Royal Arms, and by the Way killing several Persons, and exercising much Cruelty. He had also sent *James Martin*, his favourite Priest, over the Deserts with fifteen Horse-Loads of Gold to be buried, that his Men might not kill him to plunder it. On the 9<sup>th</sup> of September, this Year 1547, the Commadore *Laurence de Aldana* landed with all his Officers and Soldiers, and was receiv'd by the City in solemn Manner, leaving the Ships under the Command of the

## 138 *The HISTORY of America.*

Alcalde *John Fernandez*; and thus the City of *Lima*, to the general Satisfaction of the Inhabitants, return'd to its due Submission to the King, which was celebrated with the utmost Demonstrations of Joy.

*Pizarro* had sent Orders to *John de Acosta* to turn back and join him, and take special Care that his Men should know nothing of those many that had deserted him; and he the better to conceal what began to be whisper'd about, gave out false News in favour of *Pizarro*; as that he was Master of the Ships that came to *Lima*, and such other Inventions. Tho' these Fictions were given out with the greatest Artifice, his Major General *Paez de Sotomoyor* and Captain *Martin de Olmos*, partly by Conjectures, and partly by Advices brought them by *Indians*, came to the Knowledge of the whole Truth; whereupon each of them resolv'd to kill *Acosta*, and having by their Looks discover'd some inklings of their mutual Design, they freely imparted it to each other, concerting the Execution with many Men of Note. When they were upon the Point, *Sotomayor* was inform'd that *Acosta* was in his Tent, with the Captains *James Guillen* and *Martin de Almendras*, as also that he had drawn together a Number of Musketeers, which giving him cause to suspect that the Affair having been communicated to many, might be discover'd, he immediately advertis'd as many as he could, causing them to mount their Horses, and thus about thirty five of them publicly march'd out of the Quarters, riding a great Pace towards *Guamanga*, and in a short Time came to the City of *Lima*. When they departed the Quarters, *Acosta* caus'd an Alarm to be sounded, and sent a Number of Horse-Musketeers after them, who could not  
over-



## The HISTORY of *America*. 139

overtake them. He then examin'd into that Affair, and hang'd some he suspected; proceeding then to *Cuzco* and thence to join *Pizarro*, as he had been commanded, but by the way was deserted by other 30 Soldiers, who also made their way to *Lima*. At his Departure from *Cuzco*, when he had march'd twelve Leagues, Captain *Martin de Almendras* deserted him, with twenty eight of the best Soldiers he had, and return'd to *Cuzco*, where being join'd by those that had stay'd behind, he depos'd the Magistrates *Acosta* had appointed, restoring those that had been before for the King, and went away himself to *Lima*, not thinking fit to join *Centeno*, by Reason of the former Differences between them, and that the other had put to Death his Unkle *Francis de Almendras*. *Acosta* finding his Men desert so fast, made long Marches, keeping a Guard about him, for Fear of being kill'd, and yet so many stole away, that he had not 200 Men when he came to *Arequipa*, where he found *Pizarro* with 280; whereas he had near 1000 when he left *Lima*, and 1500 more about the Kingdom under other Commanders. At *Arequipa* they consulted what was best to be done, their Forces being too weak to stand the Enemy, and too numerous to run away.

Whilst the Rebels are considering how to proceed, we will see what was doing by the loyal Commander *James Centeno*. After having possess'd himself of the City of *Cuzco*, and contented his Men, he departed that Place, as was said before, for the Town of *la Plata*, was join'd by some Soldiers from *Arequipa*, by *James Pacheco* with forty more, and others resorted to him from all Parts. When he had receiv'd the President's Dispatches, he was inform'd of *Pizarro's* March from *Lima*, and

## 140 *The HISTORY of America.*

that *John de Acosta* was making for *Cuzco*. His Affairs being in this Posture, he sent Messengers to the Town of *la Plata*, to acquaint *Alonso de Mendoza* with all that had happened, and represent how acceptable it would be, if he declar'd for the King, since all the Gentlemen and Persons of Note that were about *Pizarro* had forsaken him, putting him in mind of all the Cruelties and Robberies he had committed; and particularly the Dishonour of being in Arms against his Majesty, disobeying his Commands, and refusing to admit of those that came to govern in his Name, advising him to lay aside all former Prejudices to serve his Sovereign. Tho' *Mendoza* did design to embrace the King's Parry, he had not yet resolv'd whether he should go to *Lima* or join *Centeno*, because of the former Animosities between them; but when he had heard what was said to him, he immediately display'd a Standard for the King, and it was agreed that each of them should command his own Men, and that none of his Soldiers should be call'd to Account for the Gold, Silver, Horses, Arms, or any other Thing they had, for being gain'd in War, right or wrong they would keep it, and upon these Terms march'd out of *la Plata* to join *Centeno*, and they met with much Joy and Satisfaction, promising to be true Friends, without any Fraud or Malice. Then having consulted how to proceed, considering that the Event of War is uncertain, and often falls out otherwise than was expected, it was then decreed, since they had above 1000 Men, indifferently arm'd, to march by the Way of *Col-lao*, towards *Pizarro*, and to secure a certain Pass, that he might not escape them; because if they advanc'd farther, they apprehended wanting Provisions. Thus we will leave them and *Pizarro* to return to the President.

CHAP.

C H A P. III.

*The President Gasca sets out from Panama, and arrives at Truxillo; Pizarro's Answer to him; The Rebel Governor, Peter de Puelles, kill'd at Quito; that City declares for the King.*

AFTER the Departure of *Laurence de Aldana*, with the four Ships from *Panama*, the President made all necessary Dispositions to follow in Person with the Rest of the Fleet; and having sent the King Advice of all that had happen'd, and what Hopes there were to expect an happy Conclusion, he sail'd from *Panama* with twenty two Sail, leaving Orders for the Forces that should come from other Places to follow him. When out at Sea, the Sailors not being yet so well acquainted with the Navigation of the *South Sea*, as they are at present, put in, contrary to what had been resolv'd, between the River of *St. John* and the Port of *Buena Ventura*, all Men looking on it as impracticable to proceed from thence to *Pern*, insisted upon returning to *Panama*; but the President was positive not to turn back, to avoid the ill Consequence of Delays, and declar'd, that if no more could be done, he would land at Port *Buena Ventura*. Whilst they were in this Perplexity, the Wind came up so fresh at North, with Gluts of Rain, that they found much Difficulty to come to an Anchor at the Island *Gorgona*; only *Don Peter Lewis de Cabrera's*

## 142 *The HISTORY of America.*

*Cabrera's* Ship putting into *Buenaventura*, and he with his Men pass'd on through many Hardships to *Cali* and *Popayan*, whence several Months after he proceeded to join the President at *Xauxa*. Being sensible of the Difficulty of continuing the Voyage, the President, with General *Hinojosa* and fifty Musketeers went aboard the Galley that had been built at the Islands of *Pearls*, and rowing with much Toil, by Reason of the Currents, arriv'd at the Island *del Gallo*, where he found *Peter Hernandez Paniagua*, who was returning from *Peru* with *Pizarro's* Answer, the Purport whereof was, thanking the President for the good Advice he had given him in his Letter, representing the mighty Services his Brothers and he had perform'd for the King, in which they had spent all they had, having never a Foot of Land, after gaining so much for the Crown, justifying the Proceedings against the late Viceroy, shewing that the Royal Court and the whole Kingdom had compell'd him to accept of the Title of Governor, by which he had given Peace to those Provinces, extending 1000 Leagues from *Pasto* to *Chile*, punishing many who for their private Interest rais'd Commotions; and that he did not covet the Government, but all the Gentlemen in the Kingdom were of Opinion he ought not to part with it till his Majesty having seen the Dispatches given to his Agents, should order otherwise; that he desir'd the President might go into *Peru*, to be convinc'd that those Kingdoms could not be govern'd by any Man that was not thoroughly acquainted with them; and that, tho' he might have cause to resent his writing to the Cities, without having been admitted, as if he design'd to raise Commotions, all those Jealousies were diffi-



dissipated by the good Opinion he had conceiv'd of the Licentiate *Gasca*. All the rest was a Representation of his Loyalty, and how much he desir'd to serve the King, referring himself to *Paniagua*. The President having read *Pizarro's* Letter, sail'd away for the Bay of St. *Matthew*, ordering Captain *Paul de Meneses* to make the same known aboard all the Ships. From that Port he sent Orders to *Popayan* and the new Kingdom of *Granada*, for those Governors to expedite the March of their Forces to his Assistance, and to furnish the Ships with Provisions, whereof there began to be such Want, that many were for landing any where to feed upon Roots; but Captain *Gomez Arias* arriv'd just then with a Ship laden with Provisions, sent by the Court of *Nicaragua*, which set all right again.

The President arriving at the Port of *Manta*, with his own Galley, the Ship of the Adelantado *Pasqual de Andagoya*, that had follow'd him, and some others, was inform'd that the Towns of *Truxillo*, *Pinra*, *Guayaquil* and *Puerto Viejo* had declar'd for the King, and from those Places they sent him Refreshments, with a more particular Account of the coming over of *Mercadillo*, *Porcel*, *Gomez de Alvarado* and *John de Saavedra*, and that they and other Gentlemen were in Arms for the King at *Caxamalca*, with which Advice he was much pleas'd, thinking it a great Happiness that so many had been reduc'd by fair Means, without Force; for which Reason he gave Notice to those Commanders, and to the several Towns, of his Arrival, and encourag'd the Captains of the Ships, putting them all in Hopes of prosperous Success. At this Time Advice was brought to *Puerto Viejo*, that the Inhabitants of *Guayaquil* pray'd

#### 144 The HISTORY of America.

pray'd for Succour, because *Peter de Puelles* was sending Forces against them from *Quito*, under the Command of *Peter Lunar*, an Inhabitant of that Place. The President order'd *Paul de Meneses* to march to their Assistance, with what Men he could spare, and *Antony de Garay* to go to *Puelles*, who was his Friend, and endeavour to persuade him to quit *Pizarro's* Party, offering to forgive all his past Crimes and Cruelties; but there was no Occasion for it, because *Ferdinand de Salazar*, one of *Puelles's* Captains, being inform'd that all the other Cities had express'd their Loyalty by returning to their Duty, and looking upon it as a great Shame that the Rebellion against their lawful Sovereign should be maintain'd in that City of *Quito*, by one brutal Man, combin'd with some Friends to kill him, there being no other Way to be deliver'd from that Oppression. Accordingly one Sunday Morning, under Colour of going to accompany him to Church, they stabb'd him in his Bed, and then going out, tho' oppos'd by another Captain call'd *James de Obando*, they prevail'd by using the King's Name, kill'd some Persons, and cutting off *Puelles's* Head set it up in the same Place where he had caus'd the Viceroy's to be expos'd, and thus ended that Wretch, who, tho' well born, was most perfidious, cruel and avaritious, notwithstanding he had amass'd a vast Treasure by Rapine. The City of *Quito* being thus restor'd to the King's Obedience, *Salazar* recall'd *Peter Lunar*, who was marching against *Guayaquil*, acquainting him with what had been done, and threatening to march against him; if he did not comply, but he obey'd; and thus the lower or Equinoctial Provinces were clear'd to receive the Adelantado *Belalcazar* with  
the

*The HISTORY of America.* 145

the Forces of *Popayan* and those of the new Kingdom of *Granada*.

The President being soon advis'd of what had happen'd at *Quito*, immediately sent to give Thanks for it to Captain *Salazar*, with a Commission to be Governor there for the King, admonishing him to be always upon his Guard against any Rebel that should pretend to espouse *Pizarro's* Quarrel, and to be very friendly to the *Adelantado Belalcázar*. Whilst these Things were in Agitation, he had caus'd all that were sick aboard the Fleet to be landed at *Puerto Viejo*, gather'd all the Provisions he could, and then set out for *Tumbez*, where he arriv'd at the latter End of *June*, this Year 1547; found *Paul de Meneses* had perform'd his Orders, and was told what *James Centeno* had done in the upper or Southern Provinces. He there found Messengers from *Laurence de Aldana*, and from all those that were at *Cochabamba*, all whom he speedily dispatch'd, with Thanks for their Loyal Service to the King, and then sent Messengers to *Popayan* and the new Kingdom of *Granada*, to hasten the March of the Succours from those Parts; and to *Quito* to Captain *Salazar* ordering, since his Presence was no longer requisite there, to come away to join him speedily with the Forces he had, which amounted to 300 good Men, and well arm'd. The Messenger from *Centeno* was also return'd with great Commendations to that Commander, who tho' sometimes unfortunate, was always most zealous against the Rebels, and suffer'd very much on Account of his Loyalty to his Prince. Many private Persons came likewise to *Tumbez*, to offer their Service to the President, and he receiv'd an infinite Number of Letters from all Parts,

some promising to promote the King's Interest, others giving an Account of their Sufferings, and others congratulating his Arrival and their own Deliverance from Tyranny and Oppression; all which he answer'd either in writing or by Word of Mouth, in such favourable Manner that they rested highly satisfy'd. The President having then 500 Men at *Tumbez*, which with those that were expected from *Quito*, and those already at *Cochabamba*, being thought a sufficient Number, besides that *Baltassar de Loaysa*, and many more affirm'd all would forsake *Pizarro*, it was thought that since all the Towns had declar'd for the King, there was no need of making use of any Supplies from abroad, and therefore Advice was sent to *New-Spain*, to *Hispaniola* and other Parts, of the good Posture of the King's Affairs, for which Reason they might forbear sending Succours. Orders were then given for advancing, *Paul de Meneses* being directed how to order the Fleet, some Ships whereof were dismiss'd, there being no farther Occasion for them. *Peter de Hinojosa* had been declar'd General of the Army, and was commanded to march with all the Forces by the Way of the Mountain, to join those at *Cochabamba*, the President with a small Company taking the Way along the Plains to *Truxillo*. Thither came to him *Ventura Beltran* with three or four Companions, who having been appointed by *Pizarro* to secure the Port of *Gaura*, repenting of his past Offences, went away to serve the King. Fuller Information being had of the State of the War in the Southern Provinces, the President commanded General *Hinojosa* not to think of entering into the City of *Lima*, to prevent all Disorders, Expences, and other Inconveniences



## The HISTORY of America. 147

conveniences that might be occasion'd by the Soldiers; but that he should haste away to *Xauxa*, that being thought a proper Post for seconding *James Centeno* and those at *Cuzco*. *Gaspar de Rojas* was sent to draw the Troops out of *Lima*, with Orders to *Aldana* to continue there as Governor, and to secure the Port and Fleet. From *Truxillo* the President proceeded to *Santa*, whence he turn'd off to the Mountains, where he found Captain *Palomino* with 100 Men from the Fleet, and many other Commanders.

They were all overjoy'd to see their Affairs in so hopeful a Posture, and much more for being deliver'd from the Jealousies, Pride, Inhumanity and Avarice of *Pizarro* and his Adherents, and they amounted to 1000 good Soldiers well arm'd, all eager to engage the Rebels as soon as as possible, heartily repenting of their past Behaviour, being convinc'd of their Folly in having contributed towards advancing *Pizarro's* Pride and tyrannical Practices, which had occasion'd so much Effusion of Blood, and the Destruction of so many innocent brave Men; for in the Space of three Years that Mischief had been carry'd on, being at first begun but as a trivial Affair, till the Day of the President's landing 500 Men had been slain in Battles and Rencounters, and 240 hang'd or beheaded, and among them above 70 Men of Estates, the least of whom had above 10000 Pieces of Eight yearly Income, and some of them twenty, and even 30000 or more, and were Men of good Quality, Conquerors, and settled Inhabitants of the Kingdom, for slaughtering of whom so little Formality was us'd, that they were immediately put to Death, and their Estates given away, without being allow'd to dispose of

148 *The HISTORY of America.*

their Fortunes and take Care of their Souls, upon any slight Jealousy conceiv'd against them, or for *Pizarro's* Conveniency, or for doing or saying or even imagining any thing that was not agreeable to him. And when *Pizarro* march'd out of *Lima*, having entirely cast off all Respect to the King, his Cruelty increas'd to such a Pitch, that he could not spare Time to kill Men with the Halter or Ax, but in a barbarous Manner caus'd them to be murder'd by stabbing, allowing any Soldier that found another was not stanch in his Service to slay him; that as they had already merited the Name of Traytors, they might justly be stil'd inhuman Butchers for embuing their Hands in the Blood of their Comrades and Friends, either to get what they had, or to gain the Favour of their tyrannical Master, by that brutal Piece of Service, without laying hold of the general Pardon offer'd them, which came in such good Time, as Providence order'd it, that many of the prime Promoters of those Mischiefs could not reap the Benefit of it, having before destroy'd one another.

*Pizarro* being come to *Arequipa*, as has been said, found it abandon'd, the Inhabitants being gone to serve under *Centeno*, he halted there to be join'd by *Acosta*, and to be better inform'd about the Loyal Party; and understanding that they were near the Lake of *Titicaca*, consisting of the Men of *Cuzco*, *la Plata* and *Arequipa*, to the Number of about 1000, he stay'd seventeen Days for *Acosta*, who on his March was advis'd by the Bishop of *Cuzco* not to let slip so favourable an Opportunity of being restor'd to the King's favour, as was then offer'd, which would secure his Estate, his Life and his Honour; to which he

he answer'd, That he would not be guilty of so base an Action as being false to the Trust his Friend repos'd in him. It was reported, that being a mean Person, he despair'd of gaining any Thing in the King's Service, where so many Persons of Quality were, but on the contrary expected to be despis'd and condemn'd for the many scandalous Crimes he had been guilty of. Upon his Arrival at *Arequipa* with 180 Men, there was a general Muster, and there appear'd 500 able Soldiers, well arm'd, and all rich with the Effects of those that were fled or daily kill'd, all which was distributed among them for their greater Encouragement. *Centeno*, after having join'd *Alonso de Mendoza*, who had 300 Men, understanding that the Enemy was at *Arequipa* consulted what was best to be done, and with the Advice of the Bishop of *Cuzco*, who had join'd them, resolv'd to march from *Hayohaya* to the Drain of the Lake *Titicaca*, and to fortify that Pass. There *Leon* advis'd *Silvera*, who had been Major to *Pizarro*, to murder *Centeno*, who discover'd the same, and *Leon* was strangled. At that Time *Pizarro*, by the Advice of *Zepeda* and *Carvajal*, writ to *Centeno*, offering to pardon all that was past, and to grant him such Terms as he should demand, if he would lay down his Arms, and putting him in mind that he had once sav'd his Life, when advis'd to kill him. Several Reasons were assign'd for *Pizarro's* writing this Letter, but as they are all uncertain, it is needless to repeat them. *Centeno* having read the Letter, answer'd very courteously, returning Thanks for his good Will, acknowledging the Favours he had receiv'd from him, in return for which, in case he should submit to the King, he would

## 150 *The HISTORY of America.*

use all his Interest to save his Life and Estate, and restore him to his Majesty's Favour. He also writ to *Zepeda* and *Carvajal*, inviting them to quit the Rebellion, and offering the Latter 100000 Pieces of Eight, if he did so, as being well acquainted with his Avarice.

---

### C H A P. IV.

*Pizarro marches against Centeno ; sends Acofta to murder him; the Battle of Guarina ; Cruelties of Carvajal.*

**P**IZARRO's Messenger returning to him with *Centeno's* Answer, was met without the Camp by *Carvajal*, who hearing how Affairs stood, charg'd him not to say there were above 700 Men in the King's Army, and not to speak one Word of what he had done to any Person whatsoever. *Pizarro* having been told what Answer *Centeno* return'd, tore his Letters without reading them, and resolv'd to set out from *Arequipa*, some giving out that he design'd to march peaceably into the Province of *los Charcas*, in case *Centeno* would permit him to pass, and that he had desir'd him so to do. Others affirm that it was always his Intention to fight; however that was, he mov'd towards *Centeno*, his Major General *Carvajal* leading the Van. *Centeno* had sent *F. Pantaleo*, a Clergyman, with Letters for the President, giving an Account of the Posture of Affairs in the Southern Provinces, of the advan-  
tagious



The HISTORY of *America*. 151

ragious Agreement he had made with *Alonso de Mendoza*, for his Majesty's Service, and that they were join'd. This Priest being on his Way to the President, fell into the Hands of some of *Pizarro's* advanc'd Parties, and the barbarous *Carvajal* immediately hang'd him, with his Breviary at his Neck, without any regard to his Function, so that his sacrilegious Hands were embu'd in the Blood of Priests and religious Men. Twenty Soldiers also fell into his Clutches in this March, all whom he hang'd without Mercy, or allowing them Time to prepare for Death. When *Pizarro* was come near the King's Army, he again sent a Chaplain to *Centeno*, whom the Bishop of *Cuzco* order'd to be secur'd; but *Centeno*, tho' then very sick, would needs see him, and having receiv'd the Letters, publicly tore them without reading, and after some Questions ask'd, sent him back to the Bishop. Understanding that the Enemy drew near, *Centeno* order'd the Forces to draw up in Battle all Night, which prov'd a good Precaution, because a Resolution having been taken in *Pizarro's* Camp, that *Acosta*, with 20 chosen Men should endeavour that Night to penetrate through the Quarters of the King's Army, and make his Way to *Centeno's* Tent, where they knew he must be, by Reason of his Indisposition, and to murder him, if possible; that Villain manag'd so dexterously, that he seiz'd the Centinels, and being come very near *Centeno's* Tent, was discover'd by some Blacks, who gave the Alarm, whereupon he retir'd without losing one Man, and leaving the Camp in much Confusion.

The next Morning, being *Friday*, the 20<sup>th</sup> of *October*, 1547, *Centeno* sent out advanc'd Parties,

## 152 *The HISTORY of America.*

and order'd the Troops to be in readinefs, which confifted of 200 Horfe, 150 Musketeers, ill furnifh'd with Powder, the reft Pikes, in all amounting to above 900 Men, without any Artillery. *Pizarro* had 80 good Horfe, 280 Musketeers, well disciplin'd, and furnifh'd with good Powder, and the reft Pikes, in all 487. When the two Armies were come in fight of one another, in the Field of *Guarina*, they both advanc'd, the numerous Musick *Pizarro* had of Trumpets and Hautboys founding very loud, till being at the diftance of 600 Paces, *Carvajal* gave Command to halt; and the King's Army having drawn 100 Paces nearer, made a ftand in like manner. Forty of *Pizarro's* Musketeers advanc'd, and two Pelotons of forty Musketeers each were pofted at the Flanks of the Pikes, *Pizarro* taking his Station between that Body and his Cavalry, his Men being fo chearful and eager to engage, that they thought it long before they came to Blows. Thirty Musketeers were detach'd from the King's Forces, who began to skirmifh with *Pizarro's*. Then *Carvajal* obferving that the Loyal Troops did not move, in order to excite them to it, that the Motion might diforder them, commanded his Men to advance ten Paces and no more very slowly. Many of *Ceneno's* obferving that flow Motion, they indiscreetly resolv'd to march againft the Will of their Commanders, and more particularly of *Chriftopher de Herbas*, who was Governor of *Arequipa*, a Soldier of no lefs Experience than *Carvajal*, who was carry'd on a Bier, becaufe he had the Gout, and faid, that if they did not ftand their Ground they would be loft; however fome hot-headed fiery *Basquifh* Clergymen, crying, that they loft Reputation by ftanding ftill; this worft Advice

prevail'd. *Carvajal* having declar'd, how great a Satisfaction it was to him to be among such brave and invincible Men, well knowing how to utter his Thoughts, and having Efficacy to persuade, gave them great Assurances of their Success in that Action, bidding them not to expect to be rewarded for their Bravery with an Horse, a Gold Chain, or such like Trifles, but with all the immense Wealth of those Provinces; for that Gold and Treasures were the Life of Man, which were to be acquir'd by that notable Victory he promis'd them, so that they should not only be rich, but also the most famous and happy Men in the World; and that in case, contrary to all the Reason of War, Fortune should prove cross to them, they should at least endeavour not to die unreveng'd. Then being a most active Man, and always attentive to the Motions of the Enemy, having gain'd his Point in the advancing of the King's Army, he again gave Orders, that they should not stir, and that only four Muskets should be fir'd, by which that subtle Commander still farther provok'd the Loyalists, who never considering at what distance they were from their Enemies, began to march, firing their Muskets, and came on with their Pikes charg'd in a very disorderly manner, the Fire having been of little or no Effect, by reason of the distance. *Carvajal* standing still, when he found that the King's Troops were within a competent distance, mov'd on firing, and gave the signal so opportunely, that at the first Volley 150 of the King's Men fell, and among them the Captains, which made such a *Breach*, that at the second Volley they fled, all that Captain *Retanoso*, who lay wounded on the Ground, was able to say, being of no Effect to

## 154 *The HISTORY of America.*

to stay them. The Loyal Cavalry charg'd *Pizarro's*, and dismounted most of them. *Pizarro's* Horse was kill'd, and *Garzilasso* gave him his. *Peter de los Rios*, and *Antony de Ulloa*, wheel'd about with their Men to attack *Pizarro's* Infantry in the Flank, but seeing their own was fled, the Cavalry follow'd their Example, tho' they had done well till then. *Pizarro's* Men did not quit their Order, till they came to the Royal Camp, killing some of those who having run first had fallen in with the Baggage, and carry'd off abundance of Gold, Silver, Horses and Mules, and many of them escap'd, because *Carvajal* would not permit them to be pursu'd, for fear lest their own Men should desert among those that fled, and therefore he yielded up to them the Enemy's Baggage, which was a very rich Booty. *Centeno* escap'd by the help of good Friends, who stood by him, and recover'd of his Sickness with the Fright, getting safe to *Lima*, nothing of his Courage abated, tho' Misfortunes are very apt to cast a Damp upon the Spirits. Above 350 of his Army were kill'd, including thirty whom *Carvajal* slaughter'd in cold Blood, and among them he hang'd *F. Gonzalo*, a Priest. Of *Pizarro's* Men about 100 were slain.

This Victory being gain'd, contrary to the Expectation of both Parties, through the Management of *Carvajal*, *Pizarro*, in his good Humour, to reward his Followers, divided the Country, giving large Estates, and saying, he coveted all for them; but as Mens Avarice is boundless, he sent Major *Bobadilla* to take all the Gold and Silver at the Mines; *James Carvajal* went on the same Errand to *Arequipa*, and *John de la Torre* to *Cuzco* to secure that City. All *Centeno's* Soldiers  
were



## The HISTORY of America. 155

were order'd to list themselves in his Service, upon pain of Death, *Pizarro* forgiving all that was past, provided that they had not done any thing remarkable in the King's Service. This done he went away himself to the King's Towns at *Chuarito*. The Commanders he sent to the aforesaid Places hang'd some Men by the way; and afterwards the wicked Judge *Zepeda* went to *Cuzco*, where he hang'd the Alcalde *John Vasquez de Tapia*, the Licentiate *Martel* and others; in short, as long as the Memory of the Battle was fresh, all *Pizarro's* Adherents every where exercis'd their Cruelty, gave a loose to their Rage, reveng'd their former Quarrels, and plunder'd all that was in their Way, running still deeper and deeper into all sorts of Villanies. *John de la Torre*, and the Magistrates of *Cuzco* sent *John de Bustinza* with twenty two Men to seize the Caziques of *Andaguaylas*, to oblige them to furnish Provisions for the Troops. A few Days after *Pizarro* thought fit to repair to that City, which he enter'd in triumphant Manner, magnifying his Victory, giving out that it had been gain'd by the Hand of God, and flattering himself with the hopes of much Prosperity. Captain *Ferdinand Machicao*, famous for his Cruelty and Rapine at *Panama* and in other Places, for the Service of *Pizarro*, was not permitted to enjoy any share in the Satisfaction of this Success, for having quitted his Post at the time that the two Armies were going to engage, *Francis de Carvajal* caus'd him to be put to Death as cruelly as the rest, so that he receiv'd the Reward due to his Treason, and other Offences, from the Hands of the Rebels. *Pizarro*, as soon as arriv'd at *Cuzco*, sent his Favourite  
*Francis*

## 156 The HISTORY of America.

*Francis de Espinosa* to the Town of *la Plata*, to bring away what Treasure was there, together with the People and Arms. He plunder'd to the value of 60000 Pieces of Eight, and hang'd three or four he thought were not well affected to *Pizarro*; nor was *James de Carvajal* more merciful at *Arequipa*, for he took every thing he found, to the very Iron Work of the Houses, and carry'd away the Wives of those who had serv'd under *Centeno*, treating them in such abominable manner, that two of them in a Rage murder'd themselves. When those Women came to *Cuzco*, *Doña Maria Calderon*, Wife to Captain *Ferome de Villegas*, resenting her own Calamity, and not able to bear with the Persecution of her Husband, who was one that had been at the Battle of *Guarina*, took a greater liberty in talking than was suitable to those Times, when *Pizarro* and his Gang had entirely laid aside all Thoughts of God and the King, and of all that was reasonable or just, and he being inform'd that she call'd him Tyrant, and said, he could not hold it long, sent *Francis de Carvajal*, who, without any regard to her being a Woman, and of Quality, for which Reason no notice ought to be taken of her Words, caus'd her to be strangled by the Hands of two Blacks, and hang'd out at the Window; those Monsters being so far from conniving at Words, that the very Looks were punish'd with Death, their Rage being so great, that there was no less Punishment.

The President fully come into the Vale of *Xauxa*, and being convinc'd, that as had appear'd from the Beginning, that Controversy was not to be otherwise determin'd than by Force of Arms,

he

he press'd on the furnishing of Muskets, Pikes, and other Weapons, that had been order'd to be made, and his Example made all the Commanders the more diligent. Advice was now brought of the Defeat of *Centeno*, which was the more resented, because it had been so little expected; the Justice of the Cause, the Valour of the Soldiers, the Experience of the Officers, and their Numbers, having been sufficient Motives to hope for better Success; besides the general Hatred conceiv'd against the inhuman Practices of *Pizarro* and his Adherents. The President heard this News with an unshaken Mind, blessing God for his Dispensations, which we cannot dive into, and comforting those that condol'd with him for the Defeat of the Royal Army. He said, " That  
" Effects depended on their Causes, which are  
" of two sorts, either known, or unknown to  
" Man; the known are those, which are pro-  
" duc'd by probable or necessary Reasons, and  
" therefore do not disturb the Mind; the un-  
" known or occult are such as being above the  
" reach of Man, or indeterminate, are hidden  
" from him; for which Reason some judicious  
" Men thought, that Fortune was one of the  
" Number of the second Causes, as ordering and  
" dispensing its Gifts in such manner, that no  
" Reason can be assign'd for it, tho' very often  
" it unjustly injures good Men, and favours the  
" Wicked, and brings ill-concerted Events to an  
" happy Conclusion; and those that were well  
" contriv'd to an unhappy End; whence it must  
" be inferr'd, that the Heavens, the Stars, and  
" all sorts of Things have been produc'd by a  
" superior Cause, and not by Fortune, which  
" some

## 158 The HISTORY of America.

“ some will have to be that Judgment and Reason, that securely leads a Man into the Way  
 “ of acquiring all temporal Goods; and others  
 “ thought to be a natural Power annex’d to an  
 “ happy Man, as Weight is to a Stone, and the  
 “ attractive Virtue to the Magnet; but in reality  
 “ a Thing producing Effects unforeseen, or imagin’d by Men, and proceeding from the mere  
 “ Will of God, which bestows Good and Evil,  
 “ Victories and Losses, as best; and when it pleases  
 “ him, and very often, through his occult Judgments, permits the just Cause to miscarry, as  
 “ had happen’d in the Battel of *Guarina*, because  
 “ the Hour was not yet come for punishing the  
 “ Tyranny, Cruelty, and other Crimes of *Pizarro*, and his Adherents.” This Speech of the President much encourag’d those, who thought *Pizarro* so fortunate, that there could be no Turn in his Affairs, and that of consequence he was invincible. The Council having then consider’d how to proceed, it was resolv’d, that the Captains *Mercadillo*, and *Lope Martin*, should immediately march to *Guamanga* with fifty Musketeers, and beset the Roads, that Intelligence might be had of what was doing at *Cuzco*, and pick up the Men that had escap’d from the Defeat at *Guarina*. When they were arriv’d at that Place, Captain *Lope Martin* advanc’d twenty Leagues farther with fourteen Men, and took *Peter de Bustinza*, who was by Order of *Pizarro* at *Andaguaylas*, hang’d two *Coriscans* that were great Offenders, set at Liberty eight or ten of *Centeno*’s Soldiers, and return’d to *Guamanga*. The Council not thinking it proper that the Army should march without Artillery, the President order’d the Marshal *Alonso de Alvarado*



## *The HISTORY of America.* 159

*rado* to bring away that which was at *Lima*, with all the Train; to draw together the Soldiers he should find in that City that had fled from *Guarina*, or resorted from other Parts, and to gather what Money and Cloaths he could, the Men being in Want, tho' they willingly endur'd all sorts of Hardships.

*The End of the Third BOOK.*



THE



THE  
General HISTORY  
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of  
*AMERICA, &c.*

DECAD V. BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

*Dispositions of the President's Army; Cruelties of the Rebels; both Parties advance; the Royalists lay a Bridge over the River Apurima, pass over it, and take an advantageous Post.*



THE President having given Orders for furnishing his Troops with all Necessaries, resolv'd to appoint all the Commanders, which he did in the following manner: *Peter de Hinojosa* was made Captain-General, as had been before concerted; the Mareschal *Alonso de Alvarado*  
Lieute-

## The HISTORY of America. 161

Lieutenant-General, under the same Restrictions as the Governor *Vaca de Castro* had given that Post to *Peter Alvarez Holguin*; the Licentiate *Benedict Suarez de Carvajal* Ensign-General; *Peter de Villavicencio* Major-General; *Don Peter Lewis de Cabrera*, *Gomez de Alvarado*, *John de Saavedra*, *James de Mora*, *Roderick de Salazar*, and *Alonso de Mendoza*, Captains of Horse; *Don Baltrassar de Castilla*, *Paul de Menesses*, *Ferdinand Mexia de Guzman*, *John Alonso Palomino*, *Gomez de Solis*, *Mosquera*, *Don Francis de Cardenas*, *Francis de Olmos*, *Gomez Arias*, *Porcel*, *Serna de Carrion*, and *Pardave*, Captains of Foot. The Artillery and Ammunition being then come, and a Man of Experience being requisite to command the same, the President considering the Quality and Abilities of *Gabriel de Roxas*, of whose Experience he had been well inform'd, gave the Charge of it to him. With the President were also the Bishops of *Lima* and *Quito*, and he of *Cuzco* was also come to the Army, having very fortunately made his escape from the Battle of *Guarina*: There were also the Provincials of the *Dominican* and *Mercenarian* Friars, and many more Clergy and religious Men. Upon a general Review there appear'd 400 Horse, 500 Pikes, and 700 Musketeers, besides many more that were expected, and daily arriv'd. Now to explain the Method then us'd in the *Spanish* Armies, and what has been mention'd, that the Governor *Vaca de Castro*, and the President *Gasca*, appointed *Maesses de Campo*, that is, Lieutenant-Generals, to have Power only in military Affairs; it is to be observ'd, that it was once the Custom in *Spain* that the *Maesse de Campo*, which was the same as a *Mareschal* in *France*, when there was a great Constable, should have the same Power as

VOL. VI. M the

## 162 *The HISTORY of America.*

the Captain-General, and as next to him order'd all Things as he pleas'd, not excepting the Administration of Justice, and this particularly in the *West Indies*, where they made an ill use of that great Power; for upon any Caprice or trivial Occasion, and very often to satisfy their Passion or Revenge, they inflicted capital Punishment. To prevent this Mischief, the two here mention'd Governors limited that Authority, appointing Auditors, or Judges; and tho' it belongs to them to judge of all Causes among Soldiers, and to the Provost Mareschal to execute the Sentence; both those Employments are subordinate to the *Maesse de Campo*, or Lieutenant-General, who, as next in Authority to the Captain-General, puts in Execution the Resolves of the Council, gives out Orders, appoints the Quarters, marks out the Lodgments, and does every thing else that might be done by the Captain-General. Now for as much as those that commanded the Infantry were call'd Colonels, as was practis'd in the Wars in *Europe* under the Emperor *Charles* the 5<sup>th</sup>; those same were in process of Time call'd *Maesses de Campo*; and the Person who had that Title before, is now for Distinction call'd, *Maesse de Campo General*, that is, Colonel General.

*It is to be observ'd, that since those Days the state of War is much alter'd; for the Person whom our Author describes by the Name of Maesse de Campo, as immediately next to the Captain-General, plainly appears to be no other than a Major-General, whose Office it is to mark out Encampments, and perform other Duties he mentions; and now there are Colonels General of Horse and of Foot, besides all the other General Officers, of which much more might be here said, but this may suffice for answering any Doubts that*



## The HISTORY of *America*. 163

that might arise about those several Posts in the Spanish Army.

It being thought Time to march against the Rebels, and all Things in readines, the Army began to move from *Xauxa* by Companies, on the 29<sup>th</sup> of *December* 1547, being all very eager to put an End to the Cruelties practis'd by those Traytors; for, as before was mention'd, the Number of Persons destroy'd till the first Landing of the President, a second Account was kept to the very Day above, till when there had been hang'd, and otherwise murder'd, 380 Men, and 700 kill'd in Battles and Rencounters, all of them Persons of Worth, Wealthy, and good Soldiers. The Troops advanc'd towards *Guamanga*, in order afterwards to cross the River *Abancay*, to take a view whereof the President sent *Peter Alonso Carrasco*, *Alonso de Messa*, and *Origuella*, Men of Judgment and Experience. He had before sent *John de Espinosa* to use his Endeavours, that the *Caziques* in those Parts should not permit Provisions to be sent to *Pizarro's* Army, and to learn the Motions of the Enemy, wherein he was so diligent, that *Pizarro* finding himself depriv'd of the Supplies he had receiv'd that Way, writ to *Espinosa*, threatening the President and him, using base and foul Expressions, of which it will be sufficient to say, that they were such as became a Man that had renounc'd his Duty to God and his Prince, and was absolutely lost to all Shame, reducing that Kingdom to a most deplorable Condition; and this is what happen'd till the End of this Year 1547.

About the Beginning of *January* 1548, the King's Army advancing towards *Pizarro*, who obstinately persisted in his Rebellion, came to the

# 164 The HISTORY of *America*.

City of *Guamanga*, and proceeded to the Bridge of *Bilcas*, where a great Oversight of *Pizarro's* was observ'd; because had he burnt the said Bridge, as well he might, he would have oblig'd the King's Army to make another, especially considering what means he might have us'd to obstruct it. Having pass'd the Bridge of *Bilcas* without any Opposition, which was look'd upon as a good Beginning, the Army march'd to *Andaguaylas*, where the Adelantado *Belalcazar* overtook the President, having left behind above 300 able Soldiers well arm'd, as did *James Centeno*, with a good Troop of Horse, *Peter de Valdivia*, Governor of *Chile*; the Licentiate *Peter Ramirez de Quiñones*, Judge of the Court of the Confines with 140 Men, and the Controller *John de Caceres* with Plenty of Cloaths and Money for the Men, who suffer'd much because it was Winter, for which Reason many fell sick, and the Army was oblig'd to stay long at *Andaguaylas* waiting for good Weather. The Governor *Peter de Valdivia* was a Man of much Experience and Judgment in martial Affairs, and went over into the *West Indies*, after he had serv'd in all the Wars there were in his Time in *Italy*; for which Reason the whole Army rejoic'd very much at his coming, and the President was more particularly pleas'd, who from that time forward, tho' he still continu'd to call his Captains to Council, began to advise more privately with some few Persons, to resolve what was to be done, and those were the Captain-General *Peter de Hinojosa*, *Gabriel de Rojas* Master of the Ordinance, Major-General *Alonso de Alvarado*, the Adelantado *Sebastian de Belalcazar*, and *Peter de Valdivia*, of whom some say, that he came into *Peru* to serve in this War, upon Advice

## The HISTORY of *America*. 165

vice receiv'd, that the President was in the Kingdom; tho' others say it was accidentally, to furnish himself with Necessaries for carrying on his Conquests. This is certain, that having sent Captain *Antony de Ulloa*, who was kill'd in the King's Service at the Battle of *Guarina*, into *Peru*, for Supplies of Men, Arms, and Horses, perceiving he did not return, by reason of the Troubles, as soon as had been requisite, many great Towns being daily discover'd in the Kingdom of *Chile*, which his Forces were not sufficient to bring under Subjection, he went away to the City of *Santiago*, where he embark'd aboard a Ship that was arriv'd from *Peru*, to procure the largest Supplies he should be able, in order to carry on his Designs. He brought with him 80000 Pieces of Eight in Gold, partly his own, and partly belonging to private Persons, that design'd to return to *Peru*, but he left them behind, and for his Lieutenant, Captain *Francis de Villagra*, who was his Major-General. Arriving at *Lima*, and being inform'd of the state of the War, he went away to the Army, and it was reported that the President gave him the Title of Colonel, by way of Honour, because all the Posts in the Army were dispos'd of.

When the Winter was over, it being thought inconvenient to lose more Time, the King's Army set out from *Andaguaylas* for *Abancay*, which is twenty Leagues from the City of *Cuzco*; and for as much as *Pizarro* had caus'd all the Bridges to be burnt, it was resolv'd rather to lay a Bridge over the River *Apurima*, than to lose Time in marching round to find a Passage with much difficulty at another Place. To this purpose it was order'd, that the laying of Bridges over should

be attempted at four several Places, in order to divide and blind the Enemy, the execution whereof was committed to *Peter Carraſco*, *Lope Martin*, *Don Peter Portocarrero*, *Thomas Vaſquez*, *Antony de Quiñones*, and *John Julio de Ojeda*, who all went to the Places aſſign'd them, to perform the ſame with the Men allotted for that Service; but in regard that the real Paſſage was to be at *Cotabamba*, the Preſident order'd *Gabriel de Rojas*, *Peter de Valdivia*, *James de Mora*, and *Francis Hernandez Giron*, Lieutenant to the Adelantado *Belalcazar* to view that Place, and conſider on the Method of laying the Bridge over, and what Poſts the Enemy might poſſeſs themſelves of, on the other ſide of the River. Being confirm'd in the Opinion, that the Paſſage ought to be at *Cotabamba*; the Commanders who had been appointed for it, were order'd to make ſhew of laying Bridges over at the reſpective Places aſſign'd them; and Captain *Lope Martin*, who was at the Paſs of *Cotabamba*, was directed, that, tho' he was well furniſh'd with the neceſſary Materials for that Work, he ſhould not give any inkling as if he intended to lay a Bridge, and that they ſhould all keep ſtrict Guards, to prevent any paſſing over the River to give *Pizarro* Advice of what was doing. The Directions ſent to Captain *Lope Martin* were of no Effect, becauſe he answer'd, That the Bridge was begun, and would ſoon be finiſh'd. The Preſident would not have had him ſo over diligent; but to prevent the Enemy's diſcovering it, or receiving any Intelligence, the Council gave Orders, that *Peter de Valdivia*, and Captain *John Alonſo Palomino*, ſhould advance with a convenient Number of Men to maintain the Bridge; and that the Army ſhould  
march



*The HISTORY of America.* 167

march with all speed. Just at this time Advice was brought, that three of *Pizarro's* Soldiers, with some *Indians*, had, during the Night, burnt part of the Materials provided for laying the Bridge, which gave much uneasiness, considering the neglect of those that were to have guarded it; for which Reason it was resolv'd, that General *Peter de Hinojosa* should go immediately to forward that Work, with two Companies of Musketeers; and that *Gabriel de Rojas* should follow with the Artillery for the greater Security, and advancing of the Bridge. It was also decreed, that a greater Number of Musketeers should march after General *Hinojosa*, under the Captains *Ferdinand Mexia*, and *Paul de Meneses*, who caus'd some Soldiers to swim over the River, prevented others of *Pizarro's* Men that were coming with some *Indians* to burn what was left of the Bridge, from putting that in Execution. Here *Pizarro* was found to have committed another Error, which was the sending of so small a Number of Men upon an Affair of that Consequence, whereas that which so highly concern'd him, requir'd a much greater Power; for had he shewn himself on the other side of the River with his Army, his Men could not have deserted, nor the King's Forces pass'd over by Reason of the largeness of the River, and the Royal Army must have been put to much Hardship; but *Pizarro* and his Adherents being grown vain and exalted with Prosperity, were blinded and knew not what they did. The aforesaid Commanders launch'd a Float into the River, and tho' the Danger was very great, by reason of the violent Current, 200 Men ventur'd on it, and had the good Fortune to pass over, as some Horses did

swimming, yet others were lost, by which means, and the Industry us'd, the Bridge advanc'd. *Pizarro* had been in a quandary, seeing it attempted to lay Bridges over in four several Places, and as soon as he had certain Advice, that the Bridge at *Cotabamba* advanc'd, tho' it was late, he sent Captain *John de Acosta*, with thirty Horse, and 150 Musketeers, to obstruct it, ordering more Forces to follow him. *Acosta* observing that some of the King's Troops were on the other side of the River, resolv'd to show himself with five or six Horsemen, leaving all the rest of his Men behind in Ambush; and his Contrivance would have succeeded had not *John Nuñez de Prado*, who was with him, clapp'd Spurs to his Horse, and going over to the Royal Party, discover'd the whole Intrigue; whereupon *Acosta* seeing himself betray'd, retir'd, and so the Bridge was finish'd, which the Army and Artillery pass'd over very hastily, and in the same manner advanc'd two Leagues up the Hill. The General *Hinojosa*, and *Peter de Valdivia* possess'd themselves of the Top of it with 900 Men, because had the Enemy secur'd that Post, it would have been a very difficult Matter to proceed any farther, by reason of the Strength of the Situation, which was another great Error in *Pizarro*.

CHAP. II.

*The two Armies come in Sight of each other; Order of Battle on both Sides; in marching to engage Pizarro's Forces forsake him.*

AS soon as the Day began to break, *John de Acosta* appear'd with 300 Musketeers, and some Horse, thinking to have taken the Post where General *Hinojosa* and *Valdivia* were, and seeing them in Possession retir'd, being sensible of his own Oversight. The King's Commanders forwarded the drawing up of the Artillery, and to be join'd by the rest of the Army, which took up three Days by Reason of the Unevenness of the Ground, and Difficulty of the Ascent. *Pizarro* was still at *Cuzco*, very solicitous to know the Number of the Horse and Foot there were in the King's Army, and what Officers led it; because among many other Precautions taken in the Royal Camp, one was that he should have no Intelligence, nor any Person pass to give him the least Account; whereupon *Pizarro*, under Colour of sending to require the President not to proceed any farther, employ'd two Clergymen to go and observe what they could; but their Intention being known, the President would not permit them to return. In the mean Time it was debated in *Pizarro's* Army how they should proceed; his Major General *Carvajal* was of Opinion that since the Royalists advanc'd so boldly to meet him, their Power must be great, and therefore

therefore it was not convenient to hazard their all in one Battle, but to prolong the War as much as possible, because Delays might be advantageous upon all Occasions, and it was dangerous to leave their Affairs at the Disposal of Fortune, and the Danger was still much greater in approaching the King's Army, because they knew by Experience that their Men deserted: Others, who depended on their Valour, and stood upon Reputation, said, that they ought to venture and pursue that good Fortune that had always attended them, because their all depending on that Battle, one Victory would for ever secure and render them absolute Masters of that Kingdom: Besides, that it was Cowardise to be continually seeking new Encampments, and ranging from one Province to another, of which the least Token ought not to be given to the Enemy, who having been so often vanquish'd, dreaded those Victorious Soldiers and their Colours. *Pizarro* approving of this Advice and rejecting that of the crafty *Carvajal*, resolv'd to march out of *Cuzco* with 900 good Soldiers, Horse and Foot, well arm'd and mounted, and 500 of them Musketeers of great Experience, and six Pieces of Cannon; and accordingly advanc'd with all the said Forces to *Xaquixaguana*, four Leagues from *Cuzco*, where he possess'd himself of a strong Post on the Way the King's Army was to pass, which he did too late, because his departure from the City, whether in Order to gain Time by retiring, or put a stop to the March of the Royal Forces, and seek some favourable Conjunction to defeat them, was too late; and this was the fifth Error he committed, by not following the Advice of old *Carvajal*.



## The HISTORY of *America*. 171

The Royal Army that was on the Eminence, began to move, and *Pizarro* descending a great Hill, drew his Forces out of his Camp in Order of Battle. Some said this was a Bravade to daunt his Enemies, that they might see his Skill and Power; others, that thinking the King's Soldiers would be oblig'd to file off in coming down, and that they must be tir'd, that would be an advantageous Opportunity to attack them; but it fell out contrary to his Expectation, for he found the Royalists in better Order, and more numerous than he had expected; for which Reason, by the Advice of his Officers, he resolv'd not to give them too much Time to breath, but to attack them at Night in three several Places, by way of Surprise, wherein he was also disappointed, because two of his Soldiers deserting, it was concluded that the Design was discover'd; tho' others say, they durst not trust their own Men, fearing that they would desert in the Night. The next Day they sent a strong Detachment of Musketeers, along a Ridge, thinking to clear a Passage that Way to come at the King's Army; but the Captains *Ferdinand Mexia* and *John Alonso Palomino*, oppos'd them with 300 Musketeers, whereupon they desisted and retir'd. *Gabriel de Rojas* then judging, that the said Eminence might be prejudicial to his Party, order'd four Field-Pieces to be drawn thither, which he fir'd so incessantly, that they occasion'd some Disorder in *Pizarro's* Army, because the Balls flew among the Men, and kill'd two Servants and an Horse near his Tent, for which Reason Orders were given to throw down all the Tents and Baracks; the loyal Gunners being very active, and levelling well, because *Gabriel de Rojas* rewarded them.

*Pizarro*

## 172 *The HISTORY of America.*

*Pizarro* turn'd his Artillery against them, and tho' often fir'd, it did no Execution. As soon as all the Army was come down, it drew up immediately in Order of Battle, as had been before concerted; for in that Particular all the Commanders submitted to the Discretion and Experience of *Valdivia*, who had seriously consider'd his own Part, and what others were to do. They first form'd a Battallion of 300 Pikes, with 125 Musketeers on each Flank, under the Command of the Captains *Ferdinand Mexia* and *John Alonso Palomino*; and before them another Body of 150 Musketeers, who were order'd to be examin'd, to see whether they were sufficiently furnish'd with Powder, Ball and Match. In the Rear of this Detachment, which was to charge the Front of the Enemy's Infantry that was all drawn up in one Body, was the Royal Standard with 200 Horse, who were to make their Way from thence, when the Action was begun, and attack the Enemy's Horse without incumbering themselves with the Infantry, since there was room enough. Another Battallion was form'd of 200 Pikes, with 220 Musketeers on their Flanks, under the Command of Captain *Valentine Pardave*, with Orders to fall in upon the Flank of the Enemy's Infantry. Two other Squadrons of Cavalry were likewise form'd, the one of 120 Horse, the other of 80, who kept at a good Distance on the Flanks, so that they might not hinder one another, or be obstructed by any other; and in the Rear of the lesser Battallion of Foot was another Squadron of 150 Horse, commanded by the Adelantado *Sebastian de Belalcazar*, with Orders that as soon as the lesser Battallion of Royal Infantry had began the Charge, he should fall upon

## The HISTORY of *America*. 173

upon *Pizarro's* lesser Squadron of Horse, and not before, which being a Matter of Consequence, and to be executed just in due Time and Season, was therefore committed to *Belalcazar*, warning him that at the Time of issuing out he should take Ground enough to avoid being foul of his own Infantry, and disorder them. Captain *Alonso de Mendoza*, who had a Troop of above 50 Horse, was order'd to keep as a Reserve, to fall in where he should judge there was most need, when he should think most proper, leaving the Management to his own Discretion and the Opinion of Captain *James Centeno*, who was to be with him. Captain *Paul de Menesses* was appointed to head a separate Detachment of 120 Musketeers, to skirmish as Occasion requir'd. *Gabriel de Rojas* planted seven Field-Pieces on the Right of the Army, and the four brought down from the Eminence on the left, that the Front of the Army might be clear and without Encumbrance. In this Order they advanc'd towards the Enemy, till they came into a low cover'd ground, where *Pizarro's* Artillery could not hurt them. *Gabriel de Rojas* perceiving that the Enemy was drawn near, and began to lie open, order'd his Artillery to be fir'd, which did Execution, but the Enemy's Shot flew over their Heads, by Reason of the low Situation of the Royal Army. *Francis de Carvajal* having view'd the same, being a sharp Man, and of a great Experience, said, it was impossible, but that *Peter de Valdivia* must be there; for tho' there were very many Commanders of much Experience in *Peru*, their Skill was in the Wars of that Country, but that of *European* Soldiers there were none but Captain *Christopher de Herbas*, who kill'd was at the Battle of

## 174 *The HISTORY of America.*

*Guarina*, that was lost for not following his Advice, *Peter de Valdivia* and himself, who was sensible that no other was capable of drawing up those Forces in such a Manner, besides the said *Valdivia*.

The next Day, being the 9<sup>th</sup> of *April* 1548, the Royal Army drew up in the same Order as it had been the Day before, the Soldiers shewing themselves very ready and expert. Then the President said, "All things were subservient to the  
" Law of Arms, that martial Men, to their eter-  
" nal Honor, subdu'd the World, and Conque-  
" rors were immense Gainers, for in a Moment  
" they had the Disposal and Possession of Men,  
" Treasures, Kingdoms and Provinces." Whilst he was yet speaking, *Garcilasso*, a Kinsman of his, and some others deserted from *Pizarro's* Army to the King's, after whom follow'd the often mention'd wicked Judge *Zepeda*, pursu'd in order to take or kill him, by *Peter Martin de Sicilia*, who struck his Horse through with a Spear, and would have done as much by him, had he not been rescu'd by the Loyalists; in which Action it is thought that *Peter Martin* was kill'd, for it is certain he died that Day. Soon after came over Captain *James Guillen* with twelve Musketeers, and *Zepeda* advis'd the President not to fight, because all *Pizarro's* Men, or the greater Part of them would come over to him at Night, which was look'd upon as good Counsel. On the other Hand *Pizarro* and *Carvajal* thought it not convenient to delay giving Battle, and advanc'd to charge the King's Army, whereupon Captain *Paul de Menesses* began the Action, and the Pelotons of Musketeers fir'd succesfully; but in a Moment the Rebels, like People in Confusion  
and



## The HISTORY of America. 175

and Despair, began to quit their Order and fly, abandoning *Pizarro* and *Carvajal*, who both stood astonish'd, without knowing whether to fight or run away, considering how they were disappointed in the Confidence they had repos'd in those People. The King's Soldiers fell in among the Rebels; Major *Villavicencio* took *Pizarro*, who deliver'd his Arms; *John de Acosta*, the Batchelor *Guevara*, *Francis Maldonado*, who had gone from *Pizarro* to *Flanders*, and return'd, and others were taken. *Pizarro* was carried before the President, who represented to him his Offence, yet with comfortable Words: But he went about to excuse himself in an arrogant proud Manner. The President answer'd, That there was nothing in Nature which could justify the Crime of Rebellion and Disobedience to our natural Prince, with the Addition of so much Cruelty and Tyranny as he had been guilty of; and without permitting him to reply, order'd *James Centeno* to secure him. *Carvajal* was taken flying, and carry'd to the President, by *Peter de Valdivia*, so closely beset with Soldiers, and with so much shouting and Noise, that had not *Valdivia's* Authority protected him, they would have torn him Piecemeal, in an outrageous Manner, so heinously were they incens'd against him; and they reproach'd and revil'd him, repeating his Robberies, Murders and Inhumanities, resenting the barbarous Slaughter by him made of their Brothers, Relations and Friends, for which they would fain have kill'd him, and he would have been glad of it, but spoke not one Word. It was reflected on, that tho' this Man was so outrageous and inhuman, and had provok'd so many, yet none of the many Conspiracies made to kill him  
succeed

succeeded, which some attribute to his Fortune; and others to his Sagacity and Craftiness, which was very singular, and doubtless avail'd him very much; but it is most certain that Providence deliver'd him upon those Occasions, that he might be publickly executed for his most grievous Offences. He was order'd to be strongly guarded, and then the President assembled his Council, consisting of the Bishops and prime Commanders, General *Hinojosa*, *Gabriel de Rojas*, *Alonso de Alvarado*, the Adalantado *Belalcazar*, and *Peter de Valdivia*, where it was order'd to return Thanks to God, to know the Number of the Dead, and bury them, and to take Care of the Wounded, which being committed to *Alonso de Alvarado*, he found only fifteen or twenty slain on both Sides. Upon considering whether the Prisoners should be immediately executed, or reserve it to be done at *Cuzco*, all agreed in admitting no Delay, as to *Pizarro* and the Commanders, to prevent their Escape, and because many turbulent Persons would never rest whilst they were alive; and accordingly that whole Affair was committed to *Alonso de Alvarado*, and the Judge *Ciama*. They sate upon their Commission, and declar'd *Pizarro* a Rebel and Traytor, ordering him to be beheaded, and his Head to be set upon the Pillory at *Lima*, his House to be demolish'd, and the Ground sown with Salt, with an Inscription erected declaring his Crimes, as a Note of perpetual Infamy, which was accordingly executed; and thus ended the *Pizarros*, for Traytors generally meet with their deserv'd Punishment, tho' they be prosperous for some Time. The next Day *Carvajal* was drawn and quarter'd, his Head sent to be set up with *Pizarro's* at *Lima*,  
and

## The HISTORY of *America*. 177

and his Quarters at *Cuzco*, his House cast down, and sown with Salt, and an Inscription as above; all People wonderfully rejoycing at his Execution by Reason of his Inhumanity. Captain *Guevara* and *John de Acosta* were also executed there. The President dispatch'd Expresses to all Parts, with Advice of the Victory, ordering Thanks to be return'd to God, and all that had been concern'd in the Rebellion to be secur'd. The next Day he enter'd *Cuzco* in triumphant Manner, the People there calling him *Fortunate Conqueror, Father of Liberty, and blessed*. At *Cuzco* were put to Death *Francis Maldonado*, Captain *John de la Torre*, *Vergara* and twelve more noted Rebels; others were whipp'd, sent to the Gallies, banish'd to *Spain* or several Parts of the *West Indies*, and fin'd; some were proclaim'd Rebels, being fled, and seventeen notorious bloody Traytors were stigmatiz'd and their Estates seiz'd. Some were of Opinion that *Zepeda* having been a Judge, and committed so many Villanies, ought not to enjoy the King's Pardon, notwithstanding his coming over; but the President referr'd that to the King, and he being sent into *Spain*, was committed to Goal, where finding some Favour, he died in Prison. Now *Peru* is again reduc'd to the King's Obedience, we will see what happen'd during this Time in other Parts.



## C H A P. III.

*What was doing in the new Kingdom of Granada; Conquest, and particular Account of the Nations of the Musos and Colimas.*

WHILST what has been said happen'd in Peru, the Reduction of the several Nations in the new Kingdom of Granada, especially the *Musos* and *Colimas* was carry'd on, and several Expeditions against them having fail'd, the Licentiate *Michael Diaz de Armendariz* being come thither as Governor and Judge, and order'd by the President *Gasca* not to enter the Government of *Popayan*, for Fear of giving any Jealousy to the Adelantado *Belalcazar*, who was serving the King in Peru: He commanded his Nephew, Captain *Peter de Orsua* to make an Excursion with 200 Men, who accordingly built the Town of *Tudela* in that Province, on a Plain near the River *Zarbi*; which being near the Mountains, the *Indians* after their usual Manner gave him so much Disturbance, that he could not go abroad to get Provisions; and being sensible that he could not subsist there, he pray'd his said Unkle to give him Leave to go to discover the Country of *Dorado*, and thus the Colony of *Tudela* was abandon'd, and the Natives grew so haughty, that they durst presume to go out to meet the *Spaniards* on the Roads, and the *Indians* call'd *Moscas*, that went from *Tunja* to *Velez*, and from *Velez* to *Santa Fe*, tho' they were six or eight Leagues distant



distant from their Province; and to this Effect they enter'd into a Confederacy with the Cazique of *Saboya*, a *Mosca Indian*, by means of which Confederacy they made War on the *Spaniards*, and grew so enrag'd, that some of the *Mosca Indians*, supported by the *Musos*, kill'd their *Spanish* Landlords; and the *Musos* were so much delighted with human Flesh, that they often surpriz'd the *Moscas* in the Night under Shew of Peace, and drove away Men and Women, like Flocks of Sheep, whom when they had slaughter'd and eaten, they return'd for more, growing so outrageous, that by Degrees they consumn'd the neighbouring *Moscas*. The Councils of the Cities of *Santa Fe*, *Tunja* and *Velez*, being sensible of the great Decay of the Native *Moscas*, in their Divisions, had Recourse to the King's Officers for Redress, praying they would curb the barbarous Cruelty of the *Musos*, chastising them with the utmost Severity. The Damages receiv'd having been sufficiently made out, a general Assembly was held of Prelates, Religious Men and Persons of other Condition, where after some Debates concerning the Justice of the War, that was resolv'd to be justifiable, as being against *Cannibal Indians* that did eat human Flesh, and that a Commander ought to be appointed to march with Forces to chastise the *Muso Indians*, for the many Robberies, Murders, and other Mischiefs they had committed against the Neighbouring People, which had occasion'd such mighty Complaints, and that the same Commander should build a Town to be a Check upon the *Musos*. Accordingly Captain *Lewis Lanchero* being approv'd of, some Time after what is here related had happen'd, he undertook that War

with sixty brave Soldiers, well arm'd, and furnish'd with all Necessaries.

These being come with their Commander to the District of *Paya*, of *Mosca Indians*, in the Territory of *Velez*, and putting them under the Protection of the blessed Trinity, resolving to behave themselves as became good and sincere Christians, enter'd upon the Conquest of those Provinces, and, with the Loss of some Men, came to the Ridge of an Hill, and as they were marching along it, an Arrow was shot at Captain *Lanchero*, which hitting him on the Shoulder, penetrated a Coat of Armour he had on quilted with Cotton four Fingers thick; whereupon they halted, and the Captain growing stiff with the virulency of the Poyson, the Soldiers concluding he must die of that Wound, intreated him as a Reward of their Labours, to plant a Colony on that Hill, upon Condition it might be remov'd upon occasion to any more proper Place, which was accordingly done, and it was call'd the Town of the *Trinity*. The Captain recovering went to view the Ground, where Captain *Peter de Orsua* had before built his Town; and whilst he lay there, Captain *John de Ribera* arriv'd with some Recruits of Men, because *Lanchero* had lost many of his, and with this Supply they went to view the Hole where the Town now stands, well furnish'd with Wood, Water, and Grass, besides an healthy Air; the Situation of *Tudela* not being thought convenient, because it was without the Boundaries of the Country. The Place was well chosen, and therefore the Town has ever since subsisted, tho' the *Spaniards* have been much fatigu'd with War, the Natives often revolting. This Province is generally hot and moist,

## The HISTORY of America, 181

as abounding with Waters. There are two Summers and two Winters in the Year; not that the Weather is hotter or colder at one time than another; but one Summer begins with the Month of *December*, and lasts till the end of *February*, then the Winter from the beginning of *March* till the end of *May*; then follows another Summer till the end of *September*, and the other Winter from that time again till *December*. The Difference between the Winter and the Summer is, that the Winter is rainy, and the Summer dry; but generally it rains in the Night, and seldom in the Day. The Winds that do most harm are Hurricanes, blowing from North to South, and from South to North, with dreadful Thunder and Lightning, the Flashes whereof often do harm. There are many Mountains, with great and small Rivers and Lakes, and there is plenty of Provisions, but not much Pasture for Cattle.

Since they have been debarr'd eating Human Flesh, those *Indians* multiply; they are a People little addicted to Trade or Country Affairs, of indifferent Judgment, well Shap'd, and of a good Stature; formerly they went naked, never own'd any Lord, follow'd the Advice of the Antientest, paying respect to those that were bravest; now they wear Mantles, and short Tunicks, having been prevail'd upon so to do by the *Spaniards*; live in Villages and Hamlets, and some by themselves, for where an *Indian* tills the Ground, there he builds his House. They are slothful, delight much in drinking, and when drunk have been apt to quarrel, being naturally so cruel, that Fathers would not spare their Sons; however, those Vices are now corrected, but are still so covetous, that they will put up any Wrong for Gain. Those

## 182 The HISTORY of *America*.

that bear the same Surname seldom fall out. The Widow carries away all the Children with her, and they take her Surname; and if they happen'd to kill an *Indian*, according to their antient Customs, the Relations of the Father were not oblig'd to revenge it, but only the Mother's, and all those that bore the same Surname. One Language is generally spoken throughout all this Province.

The City of the *Trinity* is in 7 Deg. of N. Lat. so that from the Tops of the Mountains the North and South Stars next the Poles are to be seen, and the Sun at Noon makes no Shade any way about the latter end of *August* and the middle of *March*. The distance of this Town from *Santa Fe* is twenty four Leagues, its Territory join'd to the Territory of that, as it does to those of *Tunja*, *Velez*, and *la Palma*. As to the Original of human Race, the Barbarians of this Country believ'd, that a Man they call'd *Are*, who always lay down, and was not really a Man, but as it were the Shadow of Man, carv'd the Faces of Men and Women on pieces of Wood, and casting them into the Water, they came out alive, and he marry'd them, they went away from him, began to till the Ground, and they never saw that *Are* again; and this they say happen'd on the other side of the great River of the *Magdalen*. Their Prayers and Devotions were perform'd on the Water, and the Devil strangely deluded them, and they talk'd with him, who persuaded them that it was not good to go to Heaven, besides many more Absurdities. They accounted the Sun their Father, and the Moon their Mother; and when she was eclips'd, they wept, saying, *Whither are you going, Mother, and leaving us? Come back and comfort us, for without you we are left*



## The HISTORY of *America*. 183

*left desolate*; and then they made a noise with their Trumpets, Pipes, Drums, and other Instruments; and the Devil persuaded them, that the Heaven with all its Light would be turn'd upside down. The same they did when the Sun happen'd to be eclips'd, but did not look upon him as a God, like the other *Indian* Nations, saying, they were created before the Sun and Moon, and never knew who was their Creator, till they were taught it together with Christianity. When there happen'd to be any Storms of Thunder, Lightning, Rain, or Wind, they beg'd Aid of the Moon, blew that way the Storm came from, which they thought would drive it away to some other Place; and if it did not they concluded, that the Moon would not hear their Prayers.

When the Women were deliver'd of a Child, they were wont to go immediately to the Brooks and wash themselves, as also the Infants, whom they wrap'd up in Leaves of *Vihao*, which are large and green, carrying them in their Arms only three Days, saying, they did so lest those Children become slothful; after which time they lay'd them in little Cradles made of Reeds, just big enough to contain that little Body, binding their Wrists, and the brawny Parts of the Arms, as also their Legs at the Ankles and the Calves, placing them with the Head downward, and the Feet up, the Cradle resting against a Wall stooping, that their Heads might grow hard and round; and never taught them to go, till they, after crawling about on all four, would stand up and begin to walk of themselves, being prompted to it by Nature, which they were wont to do at a Year old. At four or five Years of Age they gave them the Names of Trees, Stones, Plants,

## 184 *The HISTORY of America.*

or Animals, taken from their Kindred. At sixteen or seventeen Years of Age Parents dispos'd of their Daughters in Marriage, the Relations making up the Match, without the Knowledge of the Bride, which done, the Bridegroom went to the Place where she was, and spent three Days caressing her, she in the mean time scolding, striking him with her Fist, or cudgelling him. When the three Days were over, she grew good humour'd, dress'd the Mear, sent it him by her Mother, or some Kinswoman, and then he lay by her during all that Moon, without consummating the Marriage, sow'd a piece of Ground with *Indian* Wheat for the Bride and her Mother; gave the String of Beads which was the Portion, and if he were a rich Man, presented Clouts to wrap about them with Hawks-bells after their Fashion, which made a dull Noise as they mov'd; but if the Matrimony happen'd to be consummated during the first three Days, they look'd upon the Woman as lewd and wicked. In case the Wife were guilty of Adultery, many of them were wont in a Rage to shoot themselves with their Arrows; others would be satisfy'd with breaking all the Pots, Pans, and other Vessels they had in the House, and then went away to the thickest Wood, where the Man built an Hut, and stay'd in it during one Moon, till the Wife had provided other Vessels, and then went to look for him, laid hold of his Hair, drag'd and kick'd him till she was weary, after which they return'd home Hand in Hand. If those other Husbands who shot themselves happen'd to die, their Kindred laid the Body on the adulterous Wives Knees, and she was to lament him three Days, without eating any thing, only drinking a little Chicha, which

which is the Liquor made of *Indian* Wheat, and at the three Days end she was turn'd out of Doors and the Husband bury'd, or roasted between two great Fires, and then laid on a Barba-coa with his Arms, being a Bow, Arrows, a Macana, and a Coat of Mail, when having continu'd so a Year, they bury'd him, the Wife not being allow'd to be present by reason of her Offence, she strolling about, because none in the Town would give her any thing to eat; and therefore she was oblig'd to sow a spot of Ground with *Indian* Wheat, in some very lonesome Place, for her Support, till such time as hers and the Husband's Relations were reconcil'd, when they repair'd to, brought her back in honourable manner, and she was marry'd again. At the Funeral of the dead Man they danc'd, and sang his brave Actions in a doleful Tone, drinking his Liquor till they could not stand.

---

C H A P. IV.

*Manners, Customs, &c. of the Musos and Colimas continu'd; and the Product of their Country.*

**W**HEN a marry'd Man dy'd a natural Death, the Brother inherited his Wives, for those People had two, three, or more; but if he dy'd on the Wife's Account, the Heir was not oblig'd to take her. If a Person of Distinction dy'd, the Wife that had been most belov'd laid his Head on her Lap, and the others took the Body, so  
that

that they all held it on their Laps; and when they went to eat, they left Kinswomen in their Places; and for the space of three Days all drank and perform'd the usual Ceremonies, roasted the Body, and embalm'd it with a sort of stinking Bitumen they have. They were very apt to hang or shoot themselves, and some did it because their Wives were too long dressing the Dinner, or because their Liquor did not prove good; they did also upon slight Occasions put away their Wives, and they were left at liberty to marry again. They were not restrain'd by any Laws or Precepts, nor subject to any Penalty, any farther than what the Person damnify'd was able to inflict on the guilty Person by way of Revenge. As to religious Affairs, they had no Temples or Places of Worship, nor did they know God; but the Devil was so familiar among them that he danc'd with them, and pretended to drink. They saw him lame, with a Foot like a Cock, a Dog's Head, an human Body; Hands like Claws, with Eagles Talons. They were easily brought over to the Christian Faith, and after being baptiz'd did not see the Devil, God of his infinite Goodness having withdrawn them from their Errors. These *Indians* were always very Martial, as appears by their having expelled the *Moscas* and the *Nauras* from their own Lands, notwithstanding that those People were warlike, and us'd Stratagems, as digging deep Pits, and sticking them full of sharp Stakes standing upright, & sub'd with deadly Poison, as also very hidden Traps at the entrance into the Woods, which destroy'd abundance of Men. Those *Nauras* withdrew into a Province lying between the great River, and that of *Carare*; being a rich People, tho' then naked, and are now cloath'd



## The HISTORY of *America*. 187

cloath'd like the *Moscas*. The *Naures* flew some *Spaniards* under the Command of Captain *Peter de Orsua*, and devour'd them, but they all dy'd of the Flux, for which reason they would never after eat the Flesh of *Spaniards*; bating that some would eat the Heart among many of them, thinking it made them courageous. Among all those Nations of *Indians* there are many Sorcerers, and others that learn the Nature of Plants; they are very superstitious in matter of Omens; they look upon it as no Crime to poison or kill one another any way, and it often happen'd that the Son was an Inhabitant of one Town, and the Father of another, and when they met in War, would let fly their Arrows furiously at each other, and lie together at Night, but return to their Post in the Morning; and if any Mediators happen'd to conclude a Peace between them, they made Satisfaction by giving one another Mantles or Beads; then they thresh'd one another with long Rods till they broke them, and were Friends, went to drink together, and that drunken bout lasted a Month. After that, they were wont to go to Hunt *Indians* of some other Nations to eat, and if they took none, would kill Father, or Son, or Wife, to entertain their Guests. This Province is call'd *Munsa*, whence the *Indians* took the Name of *Musos*; the Bottom encompass'd with Mountains, where the Town stands, is call'd *Chiguachi*; the Language they speak is plain, well sounding, and easy to learn.

These *Indians* always built their Towns on high open Grounds, with some Woods, which they destroy'd to till the Ground; because that is the better Soil near to clear Springs, where they made proper Places for bathing, which they are much  
addicted

addicted to; always seeking healthy Places to inhabit, and they are very rarely sick, unless sometimes of Fluxes, proceeding from Colds they get by bathing when they are in a Sweat, which also occasions violent Fevers. In some of the Vales there are *Indians* who have Gullets as big as Melons at their Throats, for which they could never find a Cure, so that in the end they choak them.

The Devil endeavour'd to persuade them, that the Christians infected them with those Distempers, for which they had Medicines of Herbs, but would not teach the *Spaniards*; yet if they gave them any, they were pounded, that they might not know them. They had no Antidote against the Venom of their Arrows, the only Remedy being to cut off the Flesh, which they did in a cruel manner, yet few escap'd. Those that were cut wash'd the Wounds three Days with hot Water, stroking them downwards; and yet if any happen'd to escape, they were Cripples as long as they liv'd. The Town of the *Trinity* is three Leagues from the cold Ridge of Mountains in the new Kingdom of *Granada*, which is call'd *Paramo*, or the Desert, on Account of its Frost, Height, and Openness, and there the hot Country parts from the Cold. This Ridge of Mountains lies to the East, South East, and South of the *Trinity*; and runs North East and South West to the Mountains of *Santa Marta*, and extends as far as *Chile*.

One League from the *Trinity* is the River *Zar-bique*, which being join'd by other Streams, grows very considerable, and running to the Northward, passes between two high Rocks, that look like Towers, call'd *Furatena*, where the *Indians* had their places of Worship. The bigger Rock is call'd

call'd *Tena*, that is Husband, and the smaller *Fura*, which is Wife, so that both put together imply Husband and Wife, where great offerings of Gold were said to be made. Captain *John de Ribera*, with two Soldiers, having been inform'd of that Gold, when they came to the Place, were set upon by three thousand *Indians*, the Captain being a Horseback, and the Soldiers by his Stirrups, and thus they made a Retreat six Leagues, tho' they kill'd his Horse, and one of the Soldiers flying from him, the *Indians* overtook and kill'd him; but the Captain and the other Soldier, whose Name was *Antony de Palma*, got off safe, having kill'd the *Cazique*, for otherwise they could not have escap'd. The *Indians* to this Day preserve the Memory of, and relate this as a wonderful Action, for *Ribera* kill'd many of them.

As for Trees, they have a sort of large headed Almond Trees, like Pines, the Almonds growing on them, being like a Sheep's Kidney, the Kernel as thick as a Finger, as sweet as the *Spanish* Almonds, and it is usual to extract the Milk to boil up with Seeds and other Things to a Consistence for sick Persons. The *Coaque* is another Tree, the Fruit of it as big as a Goose Egg, and is eaten; there are Cedars of a very sweet Scent, of which they make Chests, Windows, and Door Frames, &c. The *Cariuri* is hard Wood, large and spreading, put to the same uses as the Cedar; the *Guayacan* is us'd for Posts, and the like, being incorruptible, and the *Namore* serves for the same, being extraordinary hard. The *Xagua* was us'd by the Natives for colouring themselves black, tho' the Juice squeez'd from the Fruit call'd by the same Name, is clear as Water, and  
an

## 190 The HISTORY of America.

an unlucky Lad once happen'd to squeeze one of them into an Holy Water Pot in a Church, and all the People wonder'd to find their Faces and Fingers black'd, till they call'd to Mind that it was *Xagua*. The *Higuerones*, or great Fig-trees, of whose Roots good Targets are made, produce very sweet Figs as big as Oranges. Any Man that lies down to sleep under the *Aguapa*, swells up; and the *Indians*, when they were naked, did quite burst. There is another Tree whose Bark serves like Hemp to make Ropes. The *Hobo* is tall, and has a great Head, the Bark and Sprouts of it are good against Swellings, and Sores in the Legs; the Shoots are eaten, and good against the Flux. There are Oaks, and wild Walnut-trees, which would be good if ingrafted; as also three sorts of *Ceybas*, and several of Palm-trees, the Wood whereof is as black as Ebony; besides the Trees that yield Turpentine and Gum Anime. Here is found the Palm-tree, which produces the Fruit call'd *Cahepais*, being the Food of the Natives, beside *Curopaltas* and *Aguacates*, which are as big as Bergamot Pears. The Medlar-trees grow in moist Grounds; the *Guayamero* is like *Madroños*, which are like Strawberries; another Tree like a Plumb-tree, produces Fruit like a Lupin, as big as a Walnut. The *Guamo* is as large as a Walnut-tree, the Fruit of it a long Cod like a measuring Yard, containing Grains like Beans, as sweet as Sugar, of a cold Nature. Another tall Tree whose Wood is hard, the Fruit like a long Knife, sweet, and has a scent like Musk. Other Trees have a prickly Shell, like that of the Chestnut, as big as an Orange, contain'd three or four Chestnuts, in Taste like the *Spanish*, all which sorts of Fruit are eaten whilst fresh, because they soon spoil, except



## *The HISTORY of America.* 191

cept only the Almonds. There are several other sorts of Fruit which the Natives make use of, that have neither Taste nor Scent, nor any peculiar Virtue. Orange, sweet and sour Lemon, Citron, and Fig-trees have throve well there, as also Vines, and there are wild Grapes, and Sugar Canes.

The main Sustenance of those People consists in *Indian* Wheat, Kidney Beans, Yucu, Batatas, and Pignuts, besides the Pine Apples, which are sweet and well scented. The Papayos are like Melons, the Tree tall, the Fruit tender and cool, the Seeds of the Colour of Pepper, and taste like Garden Cresses. The Plantans and Maney have been carry'd from other Parts. Sprouts, Radishes, Lettice, Melons, Berengenas, Cucumbers, Gourds, Turnips, Mustard, Parsley, Coriander, Onions, Purslane, Mint, Rice, thrive well, and are more valu'd by the Natives than their own Plants. There are many more Trees and sorts of Fruit and Herbs, too tedious to mention, but those are the principal.

As to Animals, there are great numbers of grey Swine, that have the Navel on the Back, and a smaller sort of several Colours much like Wild Boars; Tigers, not numerous, but very fierce; Lions that do no harm, except only among the Cattle, and two other sorts of Tigers that are inoffensive, besides another sort that are always in the Water, like Greyhounds, and all their four Feet are like those of a Goose. The black wild Cats seize the Hens, carry them away under one of their four Legs, and run away on the other three. The black Bears, like those in *Spain*, do no hurt, but only to the small Cattle. The Ant-Bears, when they go, lay their Tail, which is  
long,

long, on their Heads, winding them about their Necks, and so walk from Ant-hill to Ant-hill, stretch out their Tongues near half a Yard, which are soon cover'd with Pismires, then they draw them back and eat them. There are Dantas and Deer like ours in *Europe*, and others red like wild Goats, and the Bezoar Stones found in them are best. The Guadatinajas are like Hares; and the Zorrillas, or little Foxes, that have a Purse under their Belly, in which they carry their Cubs, tho' ever so many, are very mischievous to the Henroosts. The little Creatures call'd *Umaxia*, have a Dug growing out for every one of their young, and they stick to it till bred up. The Armadillo, which has been before spoken of, having five Claws on each fore Foot, with which it throws up the Earth, is tame, and eaten. The Perico Ligerio is three Hours climbing a Tree, goes about in the Night, gives a cry every time it lifts a Foot, and is half an Hour between every Step, is as big as a *Barbary* Monkey, and fierce, yet does no harm. There are Cats that sleep all the Day, and all the Night catch Birds and Mice. The Pizma about as big as a large Lap Dog, has a bad Countenance, a long Snout, its Voice like a Bird, defends it self against Dogs, and the *Spaniards* call them Badgers. The Hedgehogs are like those in *Spain*, the largest like Porcupines, darting out their Prickles. There are many sorts of Apes, Squirrels, Partridges, Ring-Doves, with Turkeys, *Spanish* Swine, Cows, Dogs, and Cats; Mares, Sheep, and Goats increase moderately; but all bred with some Trouble, by reason of the Worms they breed as soon as brought forth, and afterwards, abundance of them die if the least Blood happens to be drawn from them by any Accident.

In

## *The HISTORY of America.* 193

In this Province there are Gold Mines that run in Veins, where no Towns have been built, because they are in low Grounds, which are sickly; the Gold taken out of them is twenty one Carats fine, it is thought that there are Silver Mines. Here are also the Emerald Mines, which are wrought by Trenches of Water, with little Toil of the Natives. Among the Emeralds are found some Pieces of Chrystal like Diamonds, as hard as the Emeralds, and some Emerald Veins are found among Calcedony Stone, which is a white Marble, and an immense Treasure has been drawn from that Hill, which is call'd of *Ytoco*, in the Territory of the *Trinity*. Other Mines were discover'd, at a League or half a League Distance from thence; and there are others of Emeralds on the Hill of *Abipi*, three Leagues from *Itoco*, which are not wrought, for want of Water. There are also Mines of small, and among them some large and very bright Chrystals. There are Copper and Iron Mines, and a black Sort of Earth, with which the *Indians* dye their Cloth, and they say it grows like a Plant, when sow'd. There is Alum, Indigo and Pastel, besides several other Sorts of Dyes. There is also a Quarry of Stones, us'd for Altar Stones, with Gold and Silver Veins in them.

All the Country abounds in Springs of Salt-Water, some whereof consolidate, and others do not; and six Leagues from the *Trinity* is a Spring call'd *Topa*, where much very good Salt is made, which occasion'd many Wars among the *Indians*, some defending and others endeavouring to gain it; and it is worth observing, that all the Springs of Salt in that Province are found in Breaks of Fresh-Water. Some Cotton Cloth is made in



this Province, because much Cotton grows; some Pita is also spun, and there are Sugar Mills. The *Indian* Houses were like Cottages of Mud-Walls, but an hundred Foot in length, and twenty Foot wide, somewhat arch'd and very strong. All the Goods that are carry'd to the Trinity and the other Towns of the new Kingdom of *Granada*, go up the great River in that Sort of Boats call'd Canoes, which were always us'd by the *Indians*, tho' now they are larger, being about four Foot wide, and sixty in length, all of one Piece of Timber, and that Cedar; they contain 100 of those Jars Wine is generally sent over in from *Spain*, and some more, with twelve *Indians* to row and navigate, and Provision, for twenty Days they are going up to the Port of *Angostura* and returning to *Tamala-meque*, the aforefaid Port as near the City of *Mariquita*, twenty five Leagues from *Santa Fe*, and call'd *del Angostura*, because there the great River contracts, having a great Rock on the one Side, and on the other an Hill that confines it, and they cannot pass beyond it. The Trade of this new Kingdom of *Granada* being much enlarg'd, as well by Reason of the great River's being render'd more navigable, is of the many *Spanish* Towns built there, and Experience having taught, that neither the Management of *Corregidores* and Governors, nor that of Judges Examiners produc'd the desir'd Effect, which was the Conversion of the Natives to the Christian Faith, and the establishing of temporal Polity, the King thought it requisite to establish there a Royal Court and Chancery, to reside in the City of *Santa Fe de Bogota*, which was accordingly done. His Majesty being inform'd of the extraordinary Service per-

form'd



## *The HISTORY of America. 195*

form'd by the Licenciate *Gonzalo Ximenes de Quessa* in the Discovery of that wealthy Kingdom; and his great Sufferings in that Enterprize, gave him the Title of Marshal thereof, with a Salary of 2000 Ducats a Year, and several Privileges allow'd him:

*The End of the Fourth BOOK:*





THE  
General HISTORY  
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of  
*AMERICA, &c.*

\*\*\*\*\*

DECAD V. BOOK V.

\*\*\*\*\*

CHAP. I.

*Contracts made in Spain for carrying Supplies to the River of Plate.*



OW *Dominick de Irala* behav'd himself at the *River of Plate* has been mention'd before; and tho' he artfully press'd to have his Conduct examin'd, thinking by that Means to baffle the Complaints brought over against him, all his Subtleties prov'd ineffectual; for at length the King was inform'd of all that had been done in those Parts, and yet could not order the sending

## The HISTORY of America. 197

sending Supplies thither, till *John de Sanabria*, a Native of *Medellin*, petition'd his Majesty to constitute him Governor and Captain General of the *River of Plate*, offering to carry over, at his own Cost and Charges, an hundred marry'd Men, with their Wives and Families, and 250 Soldiers besides, promising to settle a Colony on the River of *St. Francis*, near the Island of *St. Catherine*, and another at the Mouth of the *River of Plate*, in such Place as should be thought most convenient by those that were the most competent Judges; to carry Wheat, Barley, Rye and other Sorts of Grain for sowing; to take nothing of any Person for their Passage, saving eight Ducats Freight a Head, and six for a Child, every one being allow'd a Chest; to carry eight *Franciscan* Friars at his own Expence, to perform the divine Service and attend the Conversion of the *Indians*; to take with him four or five good Ships for transporting the People, and four Brigantines in Pieces, with all the necessary Tackle for them; Goods to barter with the *Indians*, 2000 Yards of Cloth, 1000 Shirts, 2000 Pair of Shoes, and 500 red Caps, with Certificates of all the Prices, to be paid three Times the first Cost, by the People at the *River of Plate*, whom he would trust, they being bound for one another by ten and ten. The King accepted of these Terms, and order'd that he should also carry 100000 Weight of Iron, and 10000 Weight of Steel, to make Tools and Instruments for Tillage and Forges and all Sorts of Mechanicks, with sufficient Provisions for the Voyage, and to maintain them eight Months after, till such Time as what they sow'd could be reap'd. as also six compleat Suits of Church

## 198 *The HISTORY of America.*

Stuff for saying Mass. Upon these Conditions his Majesty granted *John de Sanabria* leave to make Settlements and Discoveries, with the Title of *Adelantado* or Lord Lieutenant, the Government of such Forts as he should build, the Office of Chief *Alguazil*, with the usual Salaries, and Power to dispose of Lands, ordaining that there should not be above twelve Regidores or Aldermen in the Town where the Governor resided; that the *Alguaziles* should not exact any higher Dues than five *per Cent.* for Executions. *Sanabria* having thus dispatch'd his Affairs, went away to make all Things ready at *Sevil*, which whilst he was doing, the King receiv'd Advice that the *Portuguese* were sending Men to *Brazil*, whereof he gave him Notice, with Orders to hasten his Departure, and to take Care that those People did not encroach upon his Borders; that religious Men should be carry'd over at the King's Expence, that three Ducats should be laid out on Church Stuff, and that they should have Wine and Oyl for six Years. After all, as *Sanabria* was making the necessary Preparations for his Voyage, he died, and his Son was left to his Choice to carry on his Father's Contract. This was a great Misfortune, because it disappointed all the Hopes conceiv'd of bringing into good Order the Affairs of the *River of Plate*, where they never ceas'd from making Excursions, and attempting new Discoveries, and the *Spaniards* liv'd easy, by Reason of the great Numbers and Tameness of the neighbouring *Indians*, and marrying *Indian* Women, had abundance of Children, which are call'd *Mestizos*, that is, a mixt Race; but the frequent Advices brought them of the immense Wealth of *Peru*, disturb'd their Minds;



## The HISTORY of America. 199

and among other Reasons that induc'd *Dominick de Irala* never to permit the Soldiers to be idle, one was, that they might not forsake him, and therefore he sent out the Commanders with Parties, sometimes one Way, and sometimes another; and when *Nuslo de Chaves* return'd from *Brasil*, he order'd him with eighty Men into those Parts where *John de Ayolas* had been kill'd, and he made large Discoveries, subdu'd the Natives, and found several Nations addicted to Husbandry. Thus far in the Year 1547.

*Irala* still purposing to keep his Men in continual Employment, resolv'd to make an Excursion from the Port of *St. Ferdinand*, through the Country of the *Mayas*, Captain *Nuslo de Chaves*, who, as was said above, had been that Way with eighty Men, said there was Plenty of Provisions; upon these Considerations, and because the Soldiers of *Philip Gutierrez* and *James de Rojas* had penetrated as far as *Paraguay*, under the Command of *Francis de Mendoza*, *Irala*, resolv'd in his Turn to make his Way to the Provinces of *Peru*, of which many Accounts had been brought from several Parts. Accordingly, in the Year 1548, he set out from the City of the *Assumption*, with 250 Spaniards and 3000 Confederate Indians, entering the Province of the *Mayas*, at the Port of *St. Ferdinand*, and holding on his Way as far as the *Tamacoas*, through the Lands of several Nations, with much Information of many Silver Mines; the Men growing weary of that long and troublesome March, and imagining it impossible that so great a Treasure should not be discover'd and possess'd by others, it was resolv'd to turn back. However, *Irala* would not altogether abandon that Enterprize, and therefore in order to be thoroughly inform'd

form'd of what there was, to know whither those lands extended, and the Truth of the mighty Things the *Indians* reported concerning them, he resolv'd that Captain *Nuflo de Chaves*, with some Companions should prosecute what was begun. In fine, that Commander was so resolute and intent upon what had been committed to him, that, tho' with immense Danger and Toil, he at length arriv'd at the Province of *los Charcas* in *Peru*, which was the Country the *Indians* spoke of. I must here observe that *Augustin de Zarate* was in the wrong, in saying that *Dominick de Irala* was the Man that penetrated to the Province of *los Charcas*, because being Governor of the Provinces of the *River of Plate*, tho' after an usurp'd manner; it is not to be suppos'd that he would abandon the same and his Forces, to enter into a Country, which as he rightly guess'd, was already in the Possession of others, or depart from the Country he had so artfully made himself master of; so that, as it also appears by the Accounts and Memorials of that Kingdom, *Irala* return'd and *Nuflo de Chaves* resorted to the President *Peter de la Gasca*, and gave him a particular Relation of his Expedition, for which that great Man honour'd him, and was much pleas'd with the Discovery; for tho' *Philip Gutierrez's* Men proceeded as far as *Paraguay*, they neither went out nor return'd from thence any Way that could open a Trade and Communication with those Provinces, from that of *los Charcas*, as was wish'd, and perform'd by *Nuflo de Chaves*. The President therefore considering the great Importance of the Discovery, order'd *Nuflo de Chaves* to return to the City of the *Assumption*, the same Way he came, that it might be the more plain, certain and well known, and

and supply'd him with Money to furnish him with Necessaries. The President having been inform'd, before the Arrival of *Nuslo de Chaves*, of the Uneasiness which reign'd in those Provinces of the *River of Plate*, and the manner of Government that prevail'd there, which ought of Necessity to be corrected, and the Commerce to be open'd, was resolv'd to send thither a good Governor, with a considerable Number of Men, and pitch'd upon Captain *James Centeno*, as well in regard of his being an Inhabitant of the Province of *los Charcas*, where he had an Estate, and through which the Commerce and Intercourse between those vast Nations was to be establish'd, as because he was a Person of much Merit, discreet and fit for greater Undertakings, whose Loyalty was so well known and approv'd under the greatest Tryals. *Nuslo de Chaves* return'd safe to the City of the *Assumption*, and the President *Gasca* appointed *James Centeno* Governor, assigning him for his District all the Lands lying East and West, from the Borders of *Cuzco* and *los Charcas* to the Boundaries of *Brasil*, between the two Parallels, one answering to the Tropick of *Capricorn*, otherwise call'd the *Antarctick*, which is 23 Degrees 33 Minutes beyond the Equinoctial to the Southward, and the other Parallel that is 14 Degrees from the said Equinoctical North and South upon a direct Meridian, upon Condition that if any Town or Towns should be built beyond those Limits prescrib'd, supposing the same to be within his Government, he should enjoy the same till farther Orders.

The Instructions given *Centeno*, by the President *Gasca*, for the Discovery, Conquest and inhabiting of the Provinces of the *River of Plate*,  
were

were, that he should use his utmost Endeavours to bring the Natives to the Knowledge of the true Christian Faith; and that he should permit the Preachers to perform their Function without any Let, directing him to take their Advice in all Things relating to the Conquest, but that in case the Conversion could not be brought about without Compulsion, he was enjoin'd not to use any Severity or Rigor, but rather all Moderation, in order to reduce those People; that as he went on subduing Countries, he should build Colonies, dividing the Lands, because the Consequence of only marching through the Country without settling *Spanish* Towns, was prejudicial to the Service of God, as destroying the Natives, or causing them to withdraw into other Parts, leaving the *Spaniards* altogether unprovided, so that they often return'd Beggars from such Conquests, after having undergone many Fatigues, and that the Lands distributed should be given to good and conscientious Men, who had serv'd well; that he should take special Care that the Natives were preserv'd and well treated, so that they should not be molested or oppress'd, and that the Duties they paid should be so moderate, that the good Usage and the Justice done them might induce them to embrace our Holy Faith, and to follow our good Customs, and the said Duties to be impos'd with the Advice of Churchmen, because it would be unseemly to oblige those poor People to pay more than they were able; that the Men who went from *Peru* upon that Expedition, should do no Harm in the Country, nor carry away the Natives; that he should not take along with him any Man that had been in *Pizarro's* Rebellion, which was to  
be



be understood of those that were excluded from the General Pardon. These were the Heads of the Instructions the President gave *Centeno*, who died as he was preparing for his Journey, which was a great Loss, because he would have set all right in the Provinces of the *River of Plate*, for he was a Gentleman of a virtuous Inclination and loyal to his King, for whose Service he had gone through many Hardships with much Constancy, and was the only Person that rais'd a Power and gave the Rebels Battle.

*James de Sanabria* holding the Contract made with the King by his Father, as was said above, arriv'd at the Mouth of the *River of Plate* about the Beginning of this Year 1542. when his two Ships were cast away, and few of the Men reach'd the City of the *Assumption*, the same Way that *Cabeza de Vaca* had gone before. *Irala* thus continuing in the Government by the Death of *Centeno* and the Misfortune of *Sanabria*, there being a great Number of *Mestizos* or Sons of *Spaniards* by *Indian* Women, and the Horses having multiply'd very much, the Power of the *Spaniards* was increas'd, as also because through the Zeal of the Bishop abundance of the Natives were converted; so that several Excursions were made, one of them to the Westward, where they fell into vast Deserts, and so return'd with much Difficulty. Captain *Nuflo de Chaves* went up the *Paraguay* to the Northward, with several Vessels and Canoes, 150 Musketeers, and 200 Horse, discovering above 300 Leagues in Length, and turn'd to the W. N. W. through the Country of the *Javes*, meeting several Races of *Indians*, with whom he had some Rencounters, some of his Men being kill'd with the poison'd Arrows,  
and

and eighty *Spaniards* return'd to the *Assumption*, worn out with Hardships. Captain *Chaves* with 2000 Confederate *Indians*, and fifty *Spaniards* he had left, came into the Province of *Taguamacis*, and planted a Colony on the River *Guapay*, to procure Succours from *Peru*, where he found Captain *Andrew Manso*, who had built a Town on the Ridge of Mountains, by order of the then Viceroy the Marques *de Cañete*; and to avoid Controversies they repair'd to the said Viceroy, who to reward *Nuslo de Chaves*, gave him the Government of the *Moxos*. Captain *Chaves* returning to the *Taguamacis*, subdu'd them, and founded the City he call'd *Santa Cruz de la Sierra*, or Holy Cross on the Mountain, which Town has continu'd, and is of great use for carrying on the Trade with *Paraguay*, and the adjacent Provinces. Captain *Chaves* having occasion to go to the Town of *la Plata*, left Captain *Salazar* in his stead at *Santa Cruz*, and in the mean time the *Indians* call'd *Chivichicocis*, with others of their Neighbours, revolted, kill'd some *Spaniards*, and assembled in a Fort they had made in order to attack *Santa Cruz*; but Captain *Chaves* returning, vanquish'd them and others that were coming to their Assistance, and destroy'd their Fort, whereupon they submitted. When the Earl *de Nieva* was Viceroy, the *Cheriquanaes* rebell'd, kill'd Captain *Manso*, and ruin'd the Towns of *New Rioja*, and *Barranca*; Captain *Chaves* march'd against them through the Province of the *Tipiones* with sixty Musketeers, and having quell'd them, discover'd the Province of *Ytatin*, thirty Leagues from *Santa Cruz*, in which were several sorts of Ore, upon which account he return'd thither with sixty Soldiers, Forges, and proper Instruments,

to

to be better inform'd about the Mines; and when he had suppress'd the *Cberiguanaes*, as he was discourfing with the Caziques about their Government and Ufage, one of thofe *Indians* ftep'd up unperceiv'd, and gave him a ftroke on the Head with a *Macana*, of which he dy'd. This has been continu'd fo far beyond the Years we have been fpeaking of in relation to other Parts, to avoid too frequent Interruptions.

---

C H A P. II.

*Ordinances and Regulations made by the Council in Spain, for feveral Parts of the Weft Indies.*

THE King having been inform'd of what had been done in the Iflands to the Weftward of *America*, being the *Moluccos* and others in thofe Seas, by thofe the Viceroy of *New Spain* had fent thither, of which the *Portuguefe* made Complaint, as an encroachment on the Limits affign'd them; his Majefty fent Directions to the faid Viceroy, that in cafe it appear'd, that the Iflands his Ships had taken Poffeffion of were within the Borders agreed on between him and the King of *Portugal*, he fhould defend them; but if not, that he fhould abandon them, being refolv'd not to intrude upon any thing that belong'd to *Portugal*, or in the leaft to infringe what had been ftipulated. Now it being as vifible as the Sun, that all thofe *Western Iflands* are within the Limits of the



Crown of Spain, the Viceroy immediately concluded to send a Force to subdue all those Islands; except the *Moluccos*, which tho' within the *Spanish* Allotment could not be meddled with by Reason of the Contract made with *Portugal*; however other Affairs obstructed the present Viceroy *Don Antonio de Mendoza* from putting that Design in Execution, which was therefore put off till *Don Lewis de Velasco* was Viceroy.

*Don Francis Marroquin*, a Man of holy Life, and zealous for the Service of God, was now Bishop of *Guatemala*, who knowing the King and his Council to be very intent upon the Conversion of the *Indians*, had given a particular Account of all that was requisite for promoting that good Work; pursuant to which, Orders were sent to *F. Thomas Casillas*, Vicar-General of the Order of *St. Dominick* in *New Spain*, and to other religious Men of the same Order, residing within the Territories of *Chiapa*; that for as much as there was a Province of revolted *Indians* between the Borders of *Goazacoalco*, *Tabasco*, and *Chiapa*, at the Back of the *Zapotecas*, the Natives of which Province had no Trade nor Conversation with any Christians; for which Reason they could not be brought to the Knowledge of the true Catholick Faith; that they should use the utmost Diligence and Charity to reduce those People to live peaceably and securely in their Towns, and for the more easy bringing them under Subjection to the King, the said religious Men were commission'd, to assure them in his Majesty's Name, that in case they would be quiet and submissive, they should never be dispos'd of as Vassals to any private Persons, but that they and their Successors should be for ever annex'd to the Crown; and farther-

more,



more, that for six Years to come they should pay no Tribute. The religious Men piously undertook this Holy Work, and through the Grace of God, together with their own good Example, Prudence, and Discretion, they soon reduc'd and converted all that Nation to Christianity.

The *Caribbee Indians* of the Windward Islands still continu'd very much to infest the Islands of *Hispaniola*, *Jamaica*, and more especially that of *St. John de Puerto Rico*, as also the Coast of the Continent; and their Insolency increas'd the more, in regard that the Christians being prohibited by the new Laws, did not make War upon, nor take them for Slaves, which is what most grieves them, for they reckon it glorious to be kill'd in Battle: And for as much as the Law made to this Effect was so severe, as to declare, that the *Indians* might not be made Slaves upon Account of War, nor on pretence of Rebellion, or of Purchase, or any other way whatsoever; the *Spanish* Inhabitants of the Island of *Puerto Rico* having complain'd, that great Numbers of *Caribbee*, or *Canibal Indians*, went abroad from the Islands of the *Trinity*, *Guadalupe*, *Dominica*, *Santa Cruz*, *Martinica*, &c. doing them much Mischief, the King, notwithstanding the afore said Law, granted leave to the *Spanish* Inhabitants of the Island of *St. John de Puerto Rico*, to make War on them, declaring, that they might be taken as Slaves, as publick Enemies and Man-eaters, the Officers of Justice intervening to prove them such, to the End that others might not be depriv'd of their Liberty under this Pretext. These Things happen'd in the Year 1547.

## 208 *The HISTORY of America.*

Three new Judges being appointed for the Court of *Peru*, in the room of those who had so basely prevaricated, as has been mention'd in its Place, the King directed they should be told, that they ought to value their Election to that Employment the more, on account of the ill Behaviour of their Predecessors the Judges *Zepeda*, *Liscon*, and *Alvarez*; and that the viler the Proceedings of those Persons had been, the greater the Obligation was on them to manage uprightly, that their Worth and Virtue might be the more conspicuous; that tho' Instructions were given them suitable to the Advices receiv'd from *Peru*, such different Accidents and Circumstances might be produc'd by Time, that the best Instruction must be the Prudence with which they were to behave themselves as Occasions offer'd, for that discreet Men ought always to be careful to act according to such Emergencies; and since Com-motions were so frequent in *Peru*, they ought to be always very attentive to all Discourses and Rumours, making it their principal Care, not to give any Body occasion by their Words, or other exterior Tokens, to conceive an ill Opinion of the Court, or of any Member of it, for fear of provoking or disgusting them, and lessening the great Respect that ought to be paid to that Court, choosing rather in such Case to act than to talk, for that the former would appear to proceed from a pure Zeal for Justice; whereas the latter would be look'd upon as the Effect of Prejudice, which is apt to abridge the Liberty of an upright Minister, the proper Remedy for avoiding whereof was to shun too much Familiarity and Company; because it not only occasion'd Envy, especially among such jealous, changeable, and insolent People

ple as the *Spaniards* in the *West Indies*, but also much lessen'd that Authority which they ought to support, in order to be respected; all which was very necessary to preserve Peace and Tranquillity in those Parts; for if they supported their Government with Justice, Uprightness, Modesty, and a good Example in all sorts of Virtues, it would certainly prove prosperous, peaceable, and happy; but that if they gave way to Negligence, Passion, Avarice, Pleasure, and other Vices that attend them, they might be assur'd of meeting with worse Success than their Predecessors had done. At the same Time other Ordinances were made for the good Government not only of *Pern*, but of other Parts of the *West Indies*.

In the first Place, the Court of the City of *Lima* was directed, to make it known to the *Indians* they should find in *Pern*, that had been carry'd from *Guatemala*, and *Nicaragua*, that they were free to dispose of themselves as they pleas'd, so that no Person should have Power to molest or obstruct them. That those who carry'd over Women from *Spain* to the *Indies*, should make Proof that they were really marry'd to them, or else not be permitted to go over. That none should be permitted to go over from the *Canary Islands* without leave; that no Man should employ in his Service any *Indians* that were annex'd to the Crown; there being information of some Abuse in that Particular, and the King expecting that they should be treated as his own; that the Laws establish'd in *Spain* in cases of Adultery, should be put in Execution against Women of the mix'd *Spanish* and *Indian* Races marry'd to *Spaniards*; and in regard that when a Man became an Inhabitant of any Place, or went to live there,



## 210 *The HISTORY of America.*

the Governors would not permit him to go whether he pleas'd, it was order'd that all Persons should be free to remove at their Wills. That all Courts, Chanceries, and Governors, should take special Care to cause the *Indians* to Work, because it was reported, that they had, upon occasion of the late Wars, addicted themselves to Idleness; that in case of any Pestilence among the *Indians*, the Impositions should be so moderated, that they might be able to pay; that the President *Gasca* should provide, that for the present the Native Christians of *Peru* should pay nothing for Burials, and to concert with the Bishop how the same should be manag'd. The King also sent Directions to his Embassador at *Rome*, to intreat the Pope to grant some Indulgences, and other Immunities to the Hospital that was founding at *Lima*, under the Invocation of the *Conception of our Lady*, for the Improvement thereof, as had been done to other Hospitals in those Parts.

The Licentiate *Cerrato* was now President of the Court of the Confines, that is, the Provinces between *New Spain* and *Panama*, and order'd, That in disposing of *Indians* in *Commendam*, the Conquerors should have the Preference before those that only went over to settle there, tho' they were not marry'd, that Court having been dubious in that Case; and that whereas the sending of the *Indians* to work in the Mines of *Honduras*, *Guatemala*, *Nicaragua*, and *Chiapa*, was a great Obstacle to their Conversion, the same should not be practis'd on any account for the future; nor that they should not be compel'd to carry Burdens; and as for Slaves taken in War, it was enjoin'd, that without any Delay, or farther Proof, and notwithstanding any Claim or  
Pre-



Prescription, by way of Possession as Slaves, or their having been branded as such, the Court should set at Liberty all the Women, and all the Males that were under fourteen Years of Age when taken upon occasion of any War, or upon any Excursions made in the Countries of *Indian* Friends or Enemies; because those could not be rightfully made Slaves, tho' it were on account of Rebellion; and also as to all other Slaves taken in War, which were not of the aforesaid Sort, if the Possessor could not prove that the Slave he had was taken in just War, and that in making the same all the Formalities prescrib'd by the King had been observ'd, they should be set at Liberty, tho' the *Indians* themselves could make no Proofs, which should all be put upon the Possessors, and not upon the Slaves, tho' they should happen to be branded, and the Possessor should produce any Bill of Sale, or other thing to entitle him; because such Persons are free upon the Presumption of being so, as they are Subjects of the Crown; and that notwithstanding there should be any one among such *Indians* that had been sold for the King's Fifth, the Judges should nevertheless do him Justice, after hearing the King's Attorney; and if the matter were prov'd, the Party concern'd should be paid what was due out of the King's Reventue. As for all others who had not been made Slaves in War, but upon other Pretences, being only Slaves by Possession, the Judges should reclaim them, and having heard both Parties, Justice should be done them, according to the Law lately made in relation to Slaves. The Blacks in the Town of *St. Peter*, which is in the Government of *Honduras*, had revolted, but the Court immediately appointed a Captain to march against them,

## 212 The HISTORY of America.

who routed them, and hang'd their Leader, where-  
in the Expedition us'd was of great Moment, for  
had that Affair been delay'd, so many Blacks  
would have come from other Parts, that it  
would have been a more difficult matter to sub-  
due them.

It was farther ordain'd, that the Bishop should  
be respected, and supported in the Execution of  
his Office, and that the President should take care  
that the *Indians* should not be misus'd, and that  
the Judges should not take upon them any thing  
of Commerce, or go upon Discoveries, it being  
their Business to attend the Administration of  
Justice; that the *Indians* should live in great  
Towns, in order to be the better instructed in  
the Christian Faith; and that for the greater En-  
couragement of those People, they should be ex-  
empted from paying any Tribute to the King,  
and the Landlords should not be permitted to sell  
or exchange the Towns, because when they were  
chang'd the *Indians* grew uneasy; and for as much  
as the Adelantado *Don Francisco de Montejo* refus'd  
to quit a Colony he had founded in the Province  
of *Verapaz*, tho' he had been commanded to re-  
move the same, because it had been decreed, that  
none should presume to enter that Province,  
which was to remain entire to the *Dominican Fri-  
ers*, that they might attend the Conversion of the  
Natives, the King commanded the Viceroy of  
*New Spain* to destroy that Town, and in order  
to it to make use of all the Regal Authority, and  
to punish the Adelantado and take away his *In-  
dians*.

This same Year 1548. the *Indians* being still  
somewhat addicted to their former Course of Life,  
and watching all Opportunities to cast off the Spa-  
nish

nish Yoke, those of *Titiquipa* in the Province of *Guaraca*, in the Kingdom of *New Spain*, revolted, under the leading of a *Cazique*, relying on the uncoothness of the Mountains, never considering, that the difficulty of Access alone was not sufficient to defend them. As soon as the Viceroy *Don Antonio de Mendoza* was inform'd of this Commotion, being sensible that Expedition, in such Cases, is the best Remedy, he immediately sent Captain *Tristan de Arellano*, with a Number of Men well arm'd and equip'd, who manag'd so well, that he soon took the *Cazique*, whose Name was *Don Sebastian*, and executed him; and thus that Insurrection was quell'd without any farther Effusion of Blood; the Viceroy having, among other things charg'd him to reduce those People in the mildest manner, punishing only the Ring-leaders, and to perform it with the utmost Celerity. Thus much as to these Affairs may suffice, it is time to return to what was doing in *Peru*.

---

C H A P. III.

*The President Gasca divides the Lands in Peru; many not satisfy'd; the City of Chuquiabo founded.*

SOME time after the Defeat and Execution of *Pizarro*, the President thought it requisite to reward those who had serv'd, because they desir'd and press'd for it; besides, that Gra-

## 214. The HISTORY of America.

titude is a proper and necessary Virtue for supporting of the State. In the first Place, he confirm'd *Peter de Valdivia* Governor of *Chile*, giving him that Title, because he had it not before legally, and the Extent of his Province was limited, from the Vale of *Copiapo* to 41 Deg. of S. Lat. in Length North and South, and 100 Leagues in Breadth East and West, with full Power to make Discoveries, plant Colonies, and divide the Lands; and *Valdivia* was the first dispatch'd, that he might return into that Country, where he was much wanted, and order'd to take Soldiers with him. For the better dispersing of the Army, Governors were sent to all the Cities in the Kingdom. The Adelantado *Belalcazar* was dismiss'd, that he might return to his Government, with Thanks for his faithful Service perform'd, and others were sent to their several Provinces, with hopes that the Lands should be soon divided. Orders were dispatch'd to Captain *Vanegas*, who was coming from the *New Kingdom of Granada* with 100 Horse, to serve the King, to return home. *Gabriel de Rojas*, *Alonso de Mendoza*, and *James de Mora*, went to gather the King's Tribute and Fifths, and to draw some Money from those who had cause to be apprehensive of severer Punishment, for having sided with *Pizarro*, because they were not to suffer corporal Punishment; and having settled these Affairs, the President went away to the City of *Lima* to establish the Royal Court, for the Administration of Justice. And for as much as Favours generally raise the Expectation, he resolv'd to make that Repartition upon mature Consideration, and with the Advice of *Don Jerome de Loaysa*, Bishop of *Lima*, resolving upon it at the Post of *Guayna-*  
*rima*,



## The HISTORY of *America*. 215

*rima*, and committing the Publication of it to the said Archbishop, with Orders to distribute much Money, and writ a general Letter to all those that had deserv'd well, which was read in the Pulpit of a Church in *Lima*, by *F. Thomas of St. Martin*, the Purport whereof was,

“ That he had made that Repartition of an hundred and fifty Commendams, or Estates there  
“ were, with regard to Service, and Merit, and  
“ no other Thing, in the most equal and upright manner he had been able, and that he  
“ would in the same manner distribute all that  
“ should be found vacant during his stay in  
“ *Peru*, altogether and solely among the Inhabitants of that Country, taking special care,  
“ that none should come in from abroad, or have  
“ any share in it; concluding, that those who  
“ had not been provided for this Time, would  
“ be afterwards taken care of; and since he had  
“ omitted nothing he was able to do to serve  
“ them, he intreated them, that considering there  
“ had never been so much expended on such a  
“ small Number of People, and in so short a  
“ Time, and that he had no other Part in it  
“ than the Trouble of serving them, they would  
“ rest satisfy'd with what was done, since he  
“ sought for, and aim'd at nothing more than  
“ performing his Duty as a Christian, in the Service of God and his King.

This Repartition, tho' it amounted to above the yearly value of a Million of Pieces of Eight, and some say a Million and an half, did not satisfy all Men for some Reasons, and particularly because the Poor always envy the Rich. The President departing from *Guaynarima*, gave some Directions, by the Advice of those who

## 216 The HISTORY of *America*.

were best acquainted with the Country, and resolv'd to build a Town in the Province of *Chuquiabo*, because it is in the mid-way from *Arequipa* to *los Charcas*, being 170 Leagues Distance, and in the midst of the Road from *Cuzco* to *los Charcas*, which are 160 Leagues asunder, it being proper and convenient that there should be a *Spanish* Town in that great Distance, the Trade between those Places being so very great, which might obviate many inconveniences they were liable to, by being so remote from each other. *Alonso de Mendoza* was pitch'd upon to plant this Colony, and order'd to call it *Nuestra Señora de la Paz*, that is, our Lady of Peace, because founded in time of Peace, after so many Commotions. On the 17<sup>th</sup> of *September* 1548. he made his Entry into the City of *Lima*, under a Canopy born by the *Alcaldes* and *Regidores*, being the chief Magistrates of the City, the Royal Seal being carry'd on his right Hand on an Horse, in a Box cover'd with Brocade. His Reception was very Solemn, the People universally rejoicing for their Deliverance from Oppressors, and they all with loud Acclamations bless'd the President, calling him, *Father, Restorer, and Peacemaker*, and praising God for having aveng'd the Injuries done to his Divine Majesty.

*Peter de Valdivia* was not long before he set out for *Chile*, taking his Way by Land to *Arequipa*, and sending some Men, Arms and other Necessaries by Sea. The *Spanish* Inhabitants of *Chile*, from whom he had taken the Gold he brought into *Pern*, as has been mention'd in its Place, arriving afterwards at *Lima*, complain'd to the President, and exhibited some Articles, the Substance where-  
of

of was, That he had taken their Gold; that he had committed Murders; that he had held Intelligence with *Pizarro*, and gave an ill Example as to his Person; to all this was added the Report of some People, that he went away in Rebellion, because he had admitted some Offenders into his Company, besides those that were banish'd to *Chile*, conniving at the Insolencies they committed by the Way, and that he did not seem to have paid the due Respect to the President's Commands. Hereupon *Peter de Hinojosa* was sent with Orders to overtake him, under Colour that the Soldiers he had with him should not commit any Disorders or offer Injury to the People; and to prevail on him by fair Means to return to *Lima*, and in case of Refusal, that he should make Use of the Royal Authority he had given him to that Purpose. *Hinojosa* overtook him in the Vale of *Atacama*, and in a courteous Manner acquainted him with his Commission, whereupon they both return'd together, without any Disturbance, to the City of *Lima*, by Sea, the Men that were going to *Chile*, being left under the Command of Captain *Francis de Ulloa*. *Valdivia* being inform'd of the Complaints exhibited against him, fully satisfy'd the President, and having clear'd himself, the President order'd him to return to his Government, provided that the Criminals who were with him should be left behind, and to that Purpose furnish'd him with *Pizarro's* Galeon, and a Galley he had carry'd from the Continent, aboard which he embark'd fifty or sixty Soldiers more than he had before, with Ammunition and Stores, and arriv'd in the Ports of *Chile* at the latter End of this Year 1548.

## 218 *The HISTORY of America.*

The President us'd the utmost Expedition in settling the Administration of Justice, in such a Method and Form as might bear Authority and be honour'd, and Affairs began to be dispatch'd by the Court, the Judge *Cianca* being come to the City of *Lima*, where the Licenciado *Benedict Suarez de Carvajal* was Corregidor, and held frequent Consultations with the Prelates and Provincials of religious Orders, to contrive such Means as might be most convenient for the effectual Conversion of the *Indians*. The Advice of *Peter de Hinojosa*, *Gabriel de Roxas*, *Laurence de Aldana* and *Alonso de Alvarado* was taken, in what related to the easing of the Tributes and reforming all the Abuses of the past Time, which had been so full of Confusion.

In the mean Time, the Soldiers at *Cuzco*, who had been most Loyal, and therefore thought they had deserv'd best, were highly discontented; for believing that they alone deserv'd to be rewarded, they look'd upon it as a Wrong done them, that those who had ever been disloyal to the King should have any Share in the Favours bestow'd, which occasion'd many Complaints, utter'd with that Liberty that is natural to martial Men, not sticking to reproach private Persons, to threaten new Commotions, and to revile the President as unjust and ungrateful, wherein they were encourag'd by some Religious Men, who ought to have appeas'd them. Captain *Francis Hernandez Giron* was the most impatient, and express'd himself with the greatest Arrogancy, tho' he had the Estate of *Guaynarima*, worth 9000 Pieces of Eight a Year, being part of that which had belong'd to *Pizarro*. He utter'd such Words as shew'd his ill Intentions, and that in such an audacious Manner,



01

*The HISTORY of America.* 219

ner, that having been one of the Loyallest, who had suffer'd very much in the Rebellions, and a Man of known Valour and Reputation, all the Malecontents pitch'd upon him as their Head; and he either as sensible of his Error, and declining to be the Ringleader of another Rebellion, or designing to represent the Injury done him, would not stay at *Cuzco*, but ask'd leave of the Archbishop *Loaysa* to go signify to the President that what he had given him was too inconsiderable, with Respect to the Service he had done, and the great Expence he had been at, which had run him much in Debt, and the Archbishop refusing to grant his Request, he went away to *Xaquixaguana* with some Soldiers. The Licentiate *Cianca*, who was Chief Justice at *Cuzco*, sent him a courteous Letter by an Alguazil, to come back; but he would not return, bidding the Alguazil go his Way, and he would send an Answer, which he did soon after, by another Hand, saying, he would have gone on his Knees in Obedience to his Command, if he had thought it for the Service of the King; adding, that being so well acquainted with the Temper of the *Spaniards* in that Kingdom, he had gone out of the Way to avoid being drawn into any thing dishonourable, tho' he was reduc'd to great Want, and had lost his Reputation, being necessitated to withdraw himself, having heard the Soldiers in his Way utter such Expressions as might give the Judge *Cianca* sufficient cause to take care of his Person. That Judge having read this Letter, and being inform'd that there were Cabals and Entertainments by Night in the City, at which such Subjects were handled as afforded Occasion to apprehend evil Consequences, gave Notice to his Friends,  
that

that they might be ready in case of need, to stand by him, and order'd *Alonso de Mendoza* to go secure *Francis Hernandez Giron*; then proceeding against the common Disturbers, he hang'd *John de Estrada*, as a Mutineer, and banish'd Captain *Ferdinand de Benavente*, *James de Avalos*, and *Ferome de Torres* for not discovering those Practices; after which he did not think fit to proceed any farther, but to connive at the rest. Captain *Alonso de Mendoza* found *Francis Hernandez*, and brought him away to *Cuzco*, he alledging that he went away to avoid being chosen Head of the Mutineers, however he was confin'd to the House of *John de Saavedra*, and the Process being drawn up, he solemnly engag'd that he would appear before the President, to whom the Cause was referr'd. Accordingly he went away immediately to *Lima*, taking along with him his great Friend *Don Baltassar de Castilla*, Son to the Earl de la *Gomera*. When he was nine Leagues from *Cuzco*, he receiv'd Orders from the President not to go to *Lima*, which he endeavour'd still to obtain by the Interposition of his Friends, and stay'd for it three Months; when not prevailing he return'd to *Cuzco*, whither at length that Permission was brought him, and he accordingly made his Appearance at *Lima*, where the President doing him much Honor, he seem'd to be pacify'd, stay'd a long Time in that City, outwardly appearing well pleas'd and satisfy'd. The President admir'd that *Spaniards* in *New Spain*, and all other Parts having been appeas'd with the Expedients that had been found, the People in *Pern* were still restless, alledging several Pretexs for their Disorders and Seditions, which was ascrib'd to the immense Wealth of that Country.

*Alonso*

## The HISTORY of *America*. 221

*Alonso de Mendoza*, whom, as was said before, the President had appointed to build a Town at *Chuquiabo*, which Word signifies Land of Gold, because of the Mines there are in that Place, repair'd into that Country call'd the Province of the *Pacasas*, which is very populous, and the Inhabitants rich and well furnish'd with Cattle, to execute his Commission, and accordingly on the 20<sup>th</sup> of *October* 1548, he laid the Foundation. That Country is cold and dry, the Rains fall from *December* to *March*, and from *April* till *August* the Weather is very cold, and there is so much Frost that the Plants and Trees are quite nipp'd and wither'd. The Months of *September*, *October*, and *November* are temperate, and the Trees grow green as they do in the Spring in *Spain*. The Wind is never troublesome, and the Air temperate, except only in the Cold Season, when People are subject to Defluxions and Pleurifies. The City was founded in a deep Vale, the Descent to which is half a League, all Champion without Woods, and on the Side of an Hill that shelters it from the Winds; there are many Springs of good Water, and a small River that runs through the Vale, but is rapid when there are Floods. There is much Pasture and good watering for the Cattle, which is numerous, as well *Spanish* as *Indian* Sheep, and some Cows. There are large Plantations of *Spanish* Trees or Corn of both Sorts, and of the Herb Coca, so much valu'd by the *Indians*, besides Sugar Canes all which is water'd. The Fruit begins to ripen in *January*, and the Vintage is in *April* and *May*; sometimes when the Rains begin and at their going off, there are such Storms of Hail that not a Grape is left on the Vines. In *October* they sow *Papas* and gather them in  
May,



## 222 The HISTORY of *America*.

*May*, being a Sort of Roots which they eat boil'd and are very nourishing for the *Indians*. The Root of the *Coca* is a more delicious Food, and there are other Sorts eaten.

This is one of the most populous Provinces in the Kingdom, every Race, Clan, or as they call it *Aillo*, liv'd by itself, but the Viceroy *Don Francis de Toledo* brought them into Towns, to live in a regular Manner, by which means Christianity was more easily introduc'd. The Natives are of a mean Capacity and pusillanimous, cloath'd like the rest in *Pern*, ready to learn and as apt to forget, speak the general Language call'd *Aymaran*, and that of the *Ingas*. The Province lies in 23 and 24 Degrees of South Latitude, their longest Day is the 13<sup>th</sup> of *December*, and the 13<sup>th</sup> of *June* the shortest, just contrary to *Europe*. This City is 220 Leagues Southward of *Lima*, in the Way to the *Charcas*; eighty Leagues from *Potosi*, fifty from *Oropesa*, which is in the Vale of *Cochabamba*, and 100 from *Cuzco*; those Leagues are somewhat longer than the *Spanish*. This Country was subject to the *Ingas*, and paid Tribute to them; those that were above thirty Years of Age went to the Wars, those that were of twenty five were employ'd in the King's Works, those of twenty in clearing the Roads and the Stones out of Fields, to make them fit for sowing, at ten Years of Age they catch'd Birds of all Sorts to present to the *Inga*, at fifty they till'd the Ground. Their Religion, Dancing, Drinking, and other such Customs were like the rest in that Kingdom. The *Caziques* or *Curacas* had a regular Succession before their Subjection to the *Ingas*, after which it was as those Monarchs pleas'd, now they are govern'd by the Laws of

I

*Spain*.



## The HISTORY of *America*. 223

*Spain*. Twelve Leagues to the Northward of this City is the great snowy Ridge of Mountains, which runs along the whole Kingdom from *Cartagena* to the *Streights of Magellan*. In this Territory are several wild Trees that yield Fruit, not disagreeable to the Taste, and all *Spanish* Plants and Trees grow, but the Olive Trees bear no Olives : In the Mountain Part there are Bears, Tigers, Lions, and Deer, and in the cold *Guanacos* and *Vicunas* that yield the Bezoar Stone ; there are abundance of Horses, Mules, Asses, Cows, Goats, and Sheep ; also Mines of Gold and Salt-Pits. Besides the Parish Church, there are in the City three Monasteries, viz. of *Franciscans*, *Augustinians*, and *Mercenarians*, an House of *Jesuits*, and an Hospital for both *Spaniards* and *Indians*. Four and twenty Leagues from this City of *Peace*, is the Place the *Indians* call *Copavana*, on one side of the Province of *Chuquito*, on a Point the Land forms, running into a great Lake, on which a Church stands, very much resorted to, on Account of the frequent Miracles said to be there wrought.



## C H A P. IV.

*Methods taken by the President for settling the Affairs of Peru, his Instructions to Captain Nuñez de Prado, for subduing the Province of Tucuman.*

ABOUT the beginning of the Year 1549, the Judges *Melchior Bravo de Saravia*, *Ferdinand de Santillan*, and *Peter Maldonado* arriv'd at *Lima*, and being made up four by *Cianca*, who was return'd from *Cuzco*, where, as has been said, the Licentiate *Benedict Suarez de Carvajal* was left Corregidor, or chief Magistrate; the President then seriously apply'd himself to settling the Administration of Justice, and raising its Reputation as the Basis of all that can be call'd good in this World. Many resorted thither to sue for their Right, and were dispatch'd with the utmost Fairness and Expedition, which made People sensible of the Difference there was between those Times, and that when the Rebels rul'd; and that the Ringleaders of Mischief were not to pass unpunish'd. In regard that the principal Affair, equal if not superior to the former, related to the Conversion of the *Indians*, and the Propagation of the Holy Gospel, tho' the President had already order'd the Prelates to repair to their respective Dioceses, he detain'd them some time, to advise about the Advancement of that Business to the greater Glory of God, and for the Ease of the King's Conscience, and had many Consultations with  
I them

them and the Judges of the Royal Court, the Result whereof was, the sending of Visitors throughout the whole Kingdom, to inquire and find out how Matters stood in Relation to Christianity, and how those who were intrusted to advance it perform'd their Duty; all Things having been brought into Disorder by the Wars. The Visitors were also directed to receive Informations concerning the Wrongs done, and Oppressions of the *Spanish* Landlords towards the *Indians*, what Tribute they paid, and to examine in the Towns that were Heads of Districts, how far they were able to pay such Tributes, in what sorts, and how they paid the same to the *Ingas* and their Lords whilst they were Gentiles, to the end that those Particulars might be regulated without doing Wrong to either Party. When the Visitors were gone, the next Things taken into Consideration were, the obliging of *Indians* to carry Burdens, making Slaves of them, and carrying them out of their Native Country into different Climates. The first Point was much debated in an Assembly of the Prelates, the Judges, some religious Men and *Alonso de Alvarado*, *Gabriel de Rojas*, *Aldana*, *Hinojosa*, *James de Mora*, and other Persons of Experience and good Intentions; for it was thought an unreasonable Thing that Men should be loaded like Beasts, when, through the Industry of the *Spaniards*, there was a multitude of Horses and Mules that might perform that Labour; but in case there were any Parts where such Beasts of Burden were still scarce, then the use of Men might be conniv'd at for some time till they were increas'd, since it was according to the Custom of the Country, provided that the Mountain *Indians* should not be brought down into the Plains, nor those of the Plains carry'd up

into the Mountains, nor any way forc'd out of their Native Climates, because the different Dispositions of the Air were very prejudicial to them, as removing them from hot into cold Countries, or from the cold into such as were hot; but above all, that they should not be taken out of *Peru* into any other Parts whatsoever. That as for the entire abrogating of personal Service, it could not be then brought to pass, till there was a greater Number of Blacks and other Labourers, as also Beasts of Burden, as was said above; for as much as Persons and Things were necessary for the Preservation of the Commonwealth, the Persons to govern, defend, and improve it, and the Things to support and furnish it, without which it could not subsist. As to the Point of Slaves, tho' the People in *Peru* were sufficiently convinc'd that there were to be none, for tho' there were still some that had been carry'd from other Parts, and the Custom was not fully abolish'd of the Caziques making Slaves of their own Subjects upon slight Pretences; however the President and the Court issu'd such Orders, that from thence forward there was no such thing mention'd as Slaves, but the *Indians* were Free throughout the whole Kingdom.

Lastly, in relation to the Tribute, or Taxes, the Visitors having, pursuant to their Oath, faithfully perform'd their Office, and reported what they had found, the President held several Consultations with the Judges, the Religious, and the Gentlemen above-mention'd, and upon mature deliberation it was establish'd what every *Indian* should pay, that the Tribute should be of such Things as he had, and no other, without making any Distinction of Persons, as that those who had been conquer'd should be otherwise treated than they that



that had voluntarily submitted, but that they should be all alike; all which Regulations were most pleasing to the *Indians*, who very much rejoic'd, finding that they pay'd much less than they had done in the Days of the *Ingas*, and enjoy'd more Liberty. The *Spanish* Landlords were enjoin'd not to take any more than had been rated, under the Penalty of being oblig'd to restore the same, and four times as much for the first Offence, and for the second to forfeit their whole Estate; because the People bear no Affection to their Sovereigns, when they are overburden'd with Taxes. At the same time that the President was intent upon these Affairs, he apply'd himself to make some Provision for several *Spaniards*, who had serv'd well in their Stations, but whom he had not been able to gratify with Lands; and accordingly dispos'd of many rich Widows, to the great Satisfaction of those that had them; and through the Industry of *Gabriel de Rojas*, *Alonso de Mendoza*, and *James de Mora*, to whom, as being Persons in Authority, he had committed the Receipt of the King's Fifths, and other Sums due to the Crown, he gather'd so great a Sum of Money, as to pay off nine hundred thousand pieces of Eight, it appear'd he had expended from the Day of his Arrival at *Panama*, till the Conclusion of the War, all which he had borrow'd. It was very remarkable, that this President *Gasca* should land on the Continent without any Cash, and yet be able to borrow so much Treasure to carry on the War, and reduce the Kingdom, and to repay the same in so short a time. Having thus discharg'd the Debt, and a Million three hundred thousand Ducats still remaining in his Hands to carry to the King, who had receiv'd nothing since the first breaking out

of the Rebellion; seeing all things in a good Disposition for carrying on the Conversion of the Natives, and the Administration of Justice, by means of the good Judges that were in the Royal Court, whom he particularly charg'd, that in all Cases to which the known Laws would extend, they should not use any arbitrary Methods, or Force; and having settled the Rate of the Tributes, he began to think of returning into *Spain*, without expecting Orders from the King, for as much as he had them before to return home whensoever he thought things were settled in a peaceable Condition. And whereas there remain'd nothing for him to dispose of, but what related to the Provinces of *Tucuman*, *Chuguimayo*, and the *Chunchos*, call'd the Expedition of *James de Rojas*; he gave the first to Captain *John Nuñez de Prado*, the second to Captain *James Palomino*, and the third to Captain *Francis Hernandez Giron*, whom he had still kept about his Person, doing him much Honour, as believing that might appease his turbulent Spirit, which conceited all that was given away from him, to be his due, and there was no better way of ridding the Country of him, than by employing him on that Conquest, to prevent his taking some desperate Course; and for as much as at this time the Captains *Gabriel de Rojas*, *James Centeno*, and others were dead, and by their Decease several Lands became vacant, he resolv'd to distribute them, to gratify those who had got nothing in the former Partition; but he would not make the same publick till his Departure.

The Instructions the President gave to Captain *John Nuñez de Prado*, for subduing and planting Colonies in the Province of *Tucuman*, were as follows: That he should take along with him  
Reli-

*The HISTORY of America.* 229

Religious and Clergymen of good Lives, and exemplary for Preaching and Converting of the Natives; and that at the same time he should be careful that the *Indians* were well us'd, treated as Brethren, and favour'd, without permitting them to be robb'd, or any way injur'd or offended, but that he should punish any Person that wrong'd them. That he should not suffer any *Indians* brought from other Ports to be detain'd within his District, either as *Yanaconas*, that is, to carry Burdens, or upon any other Account against their own Wills; and that therein he should follow such Methods as should seem proper to the Council of the City of *la Plata*, that there might be no Deceit in the Execution thereof. That he should reduce the People with the Advice of the religious Men, using his utmost Endeavours to prevail with the Natives to consent to the preaching of the Doctrine of the Holy Gospel, and being instructed in good Manners and Polity, what appertain'd to the Law of Nature, good Government, the Administration of Justice, and their Duty to the King, without any Declaration of War; and in case that could not be done, such War should be manag'd with the least havock, and most Industry for the Preservation of the Natives. That to the end the Reduction might be compass'd with more safety of Conscience, he should, by means of the Interpreters, give them to understand, that the principal Motive of his coming was to instruct them in the Christian Faith, good Manners, a proper Form of Government, and Administration of Justice, that they might live as became rational Men; and how advantageous it would be for them to those Purposes to be subject to the King; all this to be

## 230 *The HISTORY of America.*

signify'd to them two, three, or more times, as the Clergy and Religious Men should think fit, to avoid laying any Burden on the King's Conscience; as he the same *John Nuñez*, and the Religious, and Clergymen would be answerable for the same. That in trading with the Natives the *Spaniards* should offer no Violence, but give them an equivalent to their Satisfaction that they might not be disgusted. That when the Province was subdu'd, and the Town built, he should not permit the Natives to be carry'd by force to the Gold, Silver, or other Mines, nor to the Fisheries; but in case those *Indians* would go to work of their own accords, they might be permitted to do it; so that the Conquerors and Inhabitants among whom they were divided, might have the Benefit of them, as of free Persons, treating them as such, without imposing too much Labour on them, but taking care to preserve their Life and Health, as much as if they were *Spaniards*. That he should acquaint the Royal Court at *Lima* with the Particulars of all the Lands he distributed, and of all the Magistrates and Officers he appointed, to the end that what he did might be examin'd and approv'd, and such Orders given as should be most for the Service of God and the King, and for the Advantage of the Province, as was enjoin'd him in his Commission to be Captain and Chief Justice. That he should be very industrious in taking care of the collecting and securing of the King's Dues and Fifths, till proper Officers for that purpose should be otherwise constituted. That in case any *Spaniards* should happen to have Lands about the Place where he was going to make a Settlement or Colony, where the *Indians* would not submit, or live peaceably, he



*The HISTORY of America.* 231

he should require them to reduce such *Indians*; and in case they did it not, he should give those Lands to others that would perform that Conquest; excepting only *Lewis de Soto*, Publick Notary, and of the Council of the Town of *la Plata*, who should only be oblig'd to send a Man with Arms and Horses, in consideration of the Necessity they had of him in the said Town, for dispatch of Affairs that occur'd.

*The End of the Fifth BOOK.*





THE  
General HISTORY

Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of

*AMERICA, &c.*



DECAD V. BOOK VI.



CHAP. I.

*The Description of the Province of Tucuman ; the Government and City of Santa Cruz ; and that of Chuquimayo.*



HAVING concluded the last Book with the Instructions given by the President *Gasca* to Captain *John Nuñez*, for subduing the Province of *Tucuman*, we will proceed to the Description of the same. It commences beyond the Borders of the People call'd *Chichas*, who serve the

the Imperial Town of *Potosi*, in others call'd *Moreta*, *Cochinoca*, *Sococha*, and *Casabindo*, beyond which is a Desert extending fifteen or twenty Leagues, a very cold Country, properly call'd *la Cordillera*, that is, the Ridge of Mountains, below which is a temperate warm Country, through which is the Road from *Peru* to *Tucuman*, at a distance from the *Indian* Towns, for the greater Security of those that travel into, or from that Province. The *Spanish* Towns founded in this Government are *Santiago del Estero*, *San Miguel de Tucuman*, *Nuestra Señora de Talavera*, and *Cordova*. *Santiago* is the Metropolis, and was the first built in 28 Deg. of S. Lat. The Natives are cloath'd and very peaceable, living along two great Rivers, one of them running near the City, and call'd *El Estero*, that is, the Marsh, because when there are Floods it rises above the Channel, and spreads into many Branches and Marshes, and the Country being very flat, it overflows much Land, and when it falls again, abundance of Wheat, *Maiz*, *Barley*, and other Grain, is sow'd on the wet Soil, so that the Country abounds in Provisions, for tho' no Rain falls from the Clouds, the Inundations of the River fertilize the Land. The other River is call'd *el Salado*, or the Salt, because the Water is brackish, and they both run from West to East, through great Plains, and about ten or twelve Leagues distant from each other, yielding much good Fish, great and small, which is the chief Food of the Natives. Between the two Rivers there is much Honey, Wax, Cotton, and Carobs, which last are eaten, and last all the Year; there is also *Cochineal* and *Indigo* for dying of Cloth. The *Spanish* Inhabitants have abundance of Cattle of all sorts, and there are vast Numbers of red and fallow

## 234 The HISTORY of America.

fallow Deer, Tigers, Lions, and other Beasts; Partridges, Pigeons, and many more large and small Birds, and good Salt Pits. The greatest Improvement the *Spaniards* have found in that Country, is Cotton for Cloathing, and us'd instead of Linen, with which they Trade, and it is rated at half a Piece of Eight, or four Royals a Yard, whereof very much is carry'd to be sold at *Potosi*. The Climate of the City is hot, but healthy, the Situation sandy and mix'd with Saltpetre, for which Reason there can be no good Structures, there being no Stone. They have cut a good Trench which waters many Vineyards and Orchards, and there are woollen Manufactures of black and colour'd Cloth, Sackcloth, Baife, and Blankets, besides Goats Skins, but there are no Mines of Gold or Silver in the Territory of this City.

The second City founded within this Government, was that of *St. Michael of Tucuman*, in 27 Deg. 30 Min. of S. Lat. at the Foot of the steep Mountains, a good Situation, and has a Trench that Waters the Vineyards, Orchards, and Corn Fields; on the one side of it runs the River of the Break of *Calchaqui*, and about it, from two to six Leagues distance, are several other Rivers falling from the Mountains, which form the River that runs by *Santiago del Estero*. The Country abounds in *Spanish* and *Indian* Wheat and Barley; yields Wine, has Cattle of several sorts, produces Cotton and Flax, of which they make good Linen. The Climate is better than that of the other Towns in the Government; there is good Timber for building, and it is believ'd there are Gold Mines. The third Town founded is *Nuestra Señora de Talavera*, in the Language of the County call'd



## The HISTORY of *America*. 235

call'd *Estero*, where is a better Trench for watering the Lands, than any of those belonging to the other Towns, the product much the same as has been mention'd before, without any Mines; its Latitude 26 Degrees. The last Town is *Cordova*, in 32 Deg. 30 Min. of S. Lat. seated in a good Climate, having Summer and Winter, has large Plains of good Pasture, where all sorts of Cattle increase very much. On one side of it runs a River that has good Fish, and a League and half from it is a Mountain, with many populous Vales, where there are Silver Mines, the other product much as above. This Town is in a good Territory, fifty Leagues to the Eastward of it is the City of *Santa Fe*, belonging to the Government of *Paraguay*, and the River of *Plate*, and fifty Leagues to the Westward of it is the City of *St. John de la Frontera*, in the Province of *Cuyo*, and the Government of *Chile*. This Town is the Passage and Mart of many Places in going to the River of *Plate*, in order to sail for *Spain*, this way being shorter and safer, less chargeable, and through a more healthy and plentiful Country. There was another Town call'd *London*, in the Road from *Tucuman* to the Province of *Chile*, which was abandon'd for want of Inhabitants; it stood in the Vale of *Quinmibil*, the Soil fruitful, in the Lands of the People call'd *Diagnitas*, who are cloath'd, have much Cattle, and Mines of Gold and Silver. Another Town might be conveniently built at the Foot of the Mountains of the Vale of *Tarija*, and the Vale of *Omaguaza*, in the Plains that go down towards *Paraguay*, near the River *Bermejo*, where is both Plain and Mountain, abundance of People cloath'd, and much Cattle; the Land good and temperate in the neighbourhood of the Provinces of *Pern* and *Paraguay*. This

## 236 The HISTORY of America.

This Province and Government of *Tucuman*, on the one side extends to *Chile*, and on the other to the *River of Plate*, which receives the Waters of many other considerable Rivers, and has its rise in the Vale of *Jujuy*, which the *Indians* call of *Xibixibe*. Towards *Chile* there is a vast Tract of uninhabited Land, and much towards the Streights of *Magellan* still undiscover'd, tho' they know much of it in the City of *Santiago del Estero*, commonly call'd *la Trapalanda*, and in *Chile*, *la Sal*. From this City of *Santiago* to the Port of *Buenos Ayres*, the Port to the North Sea, they reckon 180 Leagues, the nearest Part of the *River of Plate* being eighty Leagues distant; and from the same City to the South Sea, or Coast of the Kingdom of *Chile*, is 120 Leagues. Formerly these *Indians* liv'd in Places they call *Taqueras*, and gather'd the Rain-Water in Ponds to drink, so that sometimes they perish'd with Thirst, or kill'd one another for the Water. They were much infested by the *Cheriguanaes* who border on them, and by the *Titanes*, who are thirty five Leagues from *Santa Cruz*, in a good and fruitful Country, where are Mines of Gold, Silver, and Lead. The *Chiquito Indians* are Martial, well Temper'd, and good Husbandmen, who sow much *Indian* Wheat, Kidney Beans, and Cotton, besides other sorts of Grain; their Women all Cloath'd; they us'd poison'd Weapons, but were subdu'd, and transplanted with many of the *Cheriguanaes* to inhabit the Country about *Santa Cruz de la Sierra*; because the *Cheriguanaes* of the Ridge of Mountains of *Vitague*, the *Titanes*, and the *Pirataguries* were so inhuman, that they us'd to devour them. The Natives of the Mountain of *Santa Cruz* have much good Cotton, and black, yellow, red, and blew Dyes for it,

it, made of Roots, and the Leaf of a little Tree, which they boil, work together, and make up into Loaves for dying, and the Tree lasts many Years.

The City of *Santa Cruz*, or the Holy Cross, is seated in a Plain at the Foot of a Mountain, beyond which the wooded and waterless Downs begin; some of the Houses are cover'd with Palm-Tree Leaves. Near the City is a Spring flowing from certain Rocks, about the bulk of a Man's Arm; it runs to a parcel of Lakes, that are four Leagues distant, and they yield such a vast quantity of Fish that it is wonderful, all of it very delicious and palatable. The Native sorts of Fruit are *Plantans*, *Guayabas*, *Pine-Apples*, *Granadillas*, *Ambabayas*, *Luvimas*, *Tucumay*, very pleasant and agreeable. There is a sort of Palm-Trees bearing Fruit, from which a sort of Meal is taken in great Plenty, and very nourishing. Of *Spanish* Fruit there are Grapes, Melons, and abundance of Figs; the Trees do not hold long; Pomgranates and Quinces have not throve, and Wheat does not answer, but the *Indian* Corn generally yields an hundred for one. Among the *Indians* call'd *Paicanos*, twenty Leagues from the City, there grow vast Calabashes or Gourds most lovely to the Eye, as large as Water Jars, us'd to lay Cloaths in them. The Country is very hot and cold, the Cold from *May* till the beginning of *August*, which is sometimes so sharp that all the Cotton freezes, and the Trees call'd *Ambaibas* have been penetrated with the Frost down to their very Roots; which happens when the South Wind prevails, which is generally from the middle of *June* till the end of *July*; the greatest Heat being about *Christmas*. The Rains begin to fall in *October*, the Seed time

## 238 *The HISTORY of America.*

is at *All-Hallows*, the Harvest about the End of *March*. In the rainy Season there is generally no travelling along the Rivers, because twenty Leagues of Palm-trees and other Woods are overflow'd, which is twenty five Leagues short of *Santa Cruz*; nor do they travel from *June* till *October* for want of Water, some have dy'd with Thirst, and others carry Water in the great Gourds above-mention'd. Sugar Canes thrive well in the Territory of *Santa Cruz*, last many Years, and excellent Sugar is made of them. In a Slough, or low Ground near the City, there are abundance of small Deer, Cows, Wild Boars, Partridges, Turkeys, Pheasants, Parrots, Birds call'd *Tozenes*, as big as Magpies, having such extraordinary large Bills, that of the Tops of them they make very pretty yellow transparent Bottles. There are many Tortoises, and other wild Creatures, as Bears, like those in *Spain*, Tigers, Dantas, those Creatures that carry about their young in Bags under their Bellies, Hares, Rabbits, and several sorts of Apes; much variety of Birds; as also Vipers, and other very venomous Creatures, and large Snakes; good Cassiafistola Trees, Carobs, Bark for tanning to great Perfection. *Guayacan* Trees are extraordinary plentiful, as are others accounted medicinal, and that they call *Aziga*, being the Turpentine of those Parts, extracted from large Trees. All the *Indians* of these Provinces, and that of *Tucuman* are an humble People, and plain Dealers, easily brought to the Christian Faith; they speak the Language of the *Diaguistas*, which is universal among them, tho' they have four other peculiar Tongues. The Men were wont to cloath themselves in Ostrich Feathers, having large Mantles; the Women wore smaller, made of Straw, and the Wool of their



*The HISTORY of America.* 232

Sheep. They had Caziques, but were not very submissive to them, and bred tame Ostriches, Hens, and Geese, but now they cloath like the *Indians* of *Peru*, because the *Spaniards* have taught them to make their Advantage of the Cotton. They are a well dispos'd People, drove a Trade, not for Gain, but to supply their Wants; but now those that are best skill'd in *Spanish*, drive their Commerce farther. Thus much may suffice as to those Provinces, let us remove to that of

*Chuquimayo*, which, as has been said, was assign'd to Captain *James Palomino*, who on the 10<sup>th</sup> of *April* 1549, came with 150 Men to the Pass of *Chenchipe* on the River of *Chuquimayo*, where a Cazique was settled with his People, having, instead of Houses, a sort of Arbours set on great Forks with flat Coverings, where they liv'd, when it did not rain, because of the Heat; and to defend themselves against the Rain, they had other round Houses thatch'd. These People living on the Bank of the River, which is very large, have their till'd Lands close to it, and are wonderful expert in the Water, for they would cast Darts, or pointed Rods at the *Spaniards* with Slings as they were swimming, which they do with one Hand above the Water, in which they carry their Weapons, or what else they have Occasion for, or else on their Heads; and as soon as they can go they swim, both Men and Women, the latter whereof, tho' but just deliver'd, will swim over the River with their Infant, and if shot at with a Gun or Crossbow, would dive and come up again at a great distance; they carry over Provisions, tho' the Burden be considerable, with only one of the large Gourds before-mention'd under their

## 240 *The HISTORY of America.*

their Arm or Breast. The River is so rapid, and full of Water, that the best *Spanish* Swimmer is afraid to pass it; and if he does is carry'd down far below the Place where he went in. The *Indians* that trade along it never go by Land, tho' it be three or four Leagues, provided it be down the Stream, and therefore they are generally naked, tho' they have Cotton Cloaths, as Tunicks and Mantles, which they take upon their Arm, seldom wearing them, as being so much in the Water. They cut their Hair short, and many clip it close, and the Women wrap'd a Clout about them, that reach'd from the Navel half way down the Thigh, having a narrow Cotton Swathe about their Breast, and abundance of Chaquira, or little Shells bound tight about the Calves of their Legs, and the brawny part of their Arms, with many Rounds of small Cord, and the Men do the same by way of Ornament.

There is great Plenty of *Indian* Wheat, which grows up every four Months, as also of *Tuca* and other Roots, and of the common *Indian* Fruit, besides Jaquas, that serve to dye themselves all over like Blacks, or paint Figures on them. There are very good Tunas without the Vale where the River runs, which is about half a League over, saving some Meadows and Outlets of the River; the rest is hilly, and on both sides of the River there are Spots of woody Ground. In the River there is abundance of Fish, which is taken in Nets; and in the Vale there are great Numbers of Deer which are likewise catch'd in Nets and Gins. Captain *Palomino* designing to pass this great and dangerous River, sent for the *Cazique*, who came immediately in a peaceable manner with abundance of *Indians*, and Provisions, and they made six  
Floats

Floats of light Wood, whereon the Baggage, and such *Spaniards* as could not swim were carry'd over; the others keeping close to the Floats, and the *Indians* went before towing along each Float with Cords; the Horses also swimming over. Six Days were spent in this Passage, the *Indians* constantly bringing Provisions, and coming to pay their Respects to the Captain, whom they call *Mocha*; which Ceremony they perform, asking for his Hand, and instead of kissing, they lick it. When over the River, they went up the Mountain three Leagues, to a Province call'd *Perico*, so nam'd by the first *Spaniards* that discover'd it. The Natives wear Jerkins that reach only to their Navels, and narrow Mantles, their Hair clipp'd short, their Language different from that spoke about the River; they fought with Spears, Macanas, Darts and Slings; have good Houses thatch'd; the Country is not very cold, but plentiful, well till'd, and populous. There is no chief Lord, but only Heads of eight or ten Houses, and every House contains three or four Inhabitants. The Chief wears a Collar of Muscle Shells put together like the rising Ornaments on Armour; they lye on Barbicans, that is Wooden Frames with Petates, or Mats made of Rushes under them. The Women are habited like those of *Chenchique*, having a great Shell as broad as a Man's Hand on their Breast instead of a Jewel, and have two or three Tunicks one over another; at their Ears hang small longish Pipes, and the under Lip being bor'd they run a Straw through it; others have a Hole in their Nose, at which hangs a small Piece of Mother of Pearl, or Silver bobbing at the Mouth. When they pay their Respects to the Captain, they name him, turn their

## 242 *The HISTORY of America.*

Back, and he must blow upon them, and so they go away well pleased, looking upon it as a Token of Peace and Civility. They have Fruit Trees before their Houses.

From this Province to that of *Cherinos* is seven Leagues; it is very populous along the Rocks of a mighty River; the Soil fruitfull, the Natives Martial, cloathed like the last above, have a particular Language of their own, use Spears 30 Spans long, Bucklers and wooden Targets, Darts and Macanas. There is much Gold in this River of *Cherinos*; the Province is divided into four Clans; their Manners like those of *Perico*, and they behav'd themselves peaceably. From *Cherinos* Capt. *Palomino* proceeded to the Province of *Silla* and *Chocainga*, where he founded the City of *Faen*. It is mountainous high Land, but not very uneven and temperate. The Inhabitants wore Cotton Tunicks down to their Knees, had no Head-Lord, and in all Particulars were like those of *Perico* and *Cherinos*, drank a Sort of Liquor, in other Parts call'd *Chicha*, made of *Indian* Wheat, which they pounded in Stone and wooden Mortars. The Province of *Copallen* is of the same Sort, bating that they wear Breeches, are a warlike People, cut off their Hair, their Arms the same as before, went to War with great Plumes of Feathers; the Country is plentiful, they have many Sheep, the Women wear long Mantles like Gipsies, with long Hair, go to the Wars with Macanas, and lick the Hand in Token of Peace. The Province of *Lanque* or *Lança*, is in all Respects the same; and the People of the Hill *Del Vienio* like those of *Cusco*, and wear their Hair long and loose; they have the same Sorts of Arms,



## *The HISTORY of America.* 243

Arms, and Macanas, Daggers of Bone, and wooden Targets. The *Tomependas* are well shap'd People, and *Tungas*, cloath'd like the others, great Swimmers, have much Honey; the Women make Tresses of their Hair like the *Spaniards*. Those of the Vale of *Vagua* are also *Tungas*, the same as the others, very peaceable People, the Country very plentiful, having much Honey and Fruit. At that Time the Provinces of *Anta*, *Coanda*, *Tabancaras*, *Palanda*, *Xaroca*, and *Combinbinanama*, were not discover'd; all Mountain People much the same as the *Cherinos*, a Country abounding in Flesh, and all Sorts of Provisions, and rich in Mines of Gold, and other Metals.

---

### C H A P. II.

*The founding of the City of Zamora;  
Description of its Territory, and of  
four Dominican Friars that went to  
preach in Florida.*

THE City of *Zamora* is 20 Leagues from *Loxa*, beyond the *Cordillera*, or long Ridge of Mountains that runs through all *South America*; the Vale where it stands is in the *Indian* Language call'd *Zamora*, the Accent over the last Syllable; it was founded in the Year 1549, by Capt. *Alonso de Mercadillo*, and he call'd it so for the likeness of the *Indian* Name, and be-

## 244 *The HISTORY of America.*

cause he was himself born at *Zamora* in *Spain*. He returning to his Government of *Loxa*, with some Men, after having serv'd the King at the Battle of *Xaquixaguana*, employ'd those Men he had brought, being joyn'd in Partnership with Capt. *Ferdinand de Benavente*. The Spot of Ground on which he built was call'd *Poroauca*, that is, Warlike *Indians*. The Territory of this City extends about 30 Leagues, and it stands 70 Leagues from the *South Sea*, in 6 Deg. of South Lat. 90 Leagues from the City of *Quito*; the Climate hot and moist, the Wind that generally prevails is the North, and is not troublesome; when it does not rain the Sky is very serene, and the Rains which are frequent, bring up Fogs; there are no Contagious Distempers, and for such Diseases as they have, the Natives use Tobacco, and *Aguacolla*, another Herb they apply to all Uses. There is a Sort of Nuts, which eaten raw are a mortal Poison, and boiled are good Nourishment. The Country in some Places is Champaign, and in some Parts rising into Hills and Mountains, on which there are Cedars, and other incomparable Trees, which are never spoil'd by Moisture. In all these Parts Gold Mines have been found, out of which Grains and long Pieces have been taken of a wonderful Magnitude, whereof one was presented to King *Phillip* the 2d. that weigh'd 18 Pounds; no other Metals have been sought after, all being taken up in following the Gold Mines, which have yielded much Treasure, and were unknown to the *Indians*. Salt is here made of brackish Water, and three Rivers come down from the long Ridge of Mountains, which run West and East, being navigated with Canoes, their Water good,

2

and

and thin passing through Gold Mines, and carrying some of it along with it. The Country is generally full of Groves of Fruit, and other Trees, both cultivated and wild; and there are several Sorts of *Spanish* Fruit. Below, the Land is Zabana, or open, and on the Mountain wooded, abounding in Mayz, Yuca, and all the Country Provisions; but Wheat and Barley do not thrive; yet, most *Spanish* Plants do. There are some few Tigers, and little Lions, and Plenty of Sheep, Cows, Swine, Goats, Hens, Pigeons, Patridges, and other good Fowl; much good Fish in the Rivers; the Bees do not sting, and make much Honey; as for Snakes and Vipers there are very few. Since the Conquest of the Country spacious High-Ways have been made, for there were only Paths before: And tho' the City is founded on a Plain, the Country about it is so rugged, that no Carts, nor Gangs of Horses can be us'd; for which Reason the *Indians* carry in the Provisions of their own Accord, because of the great Profit they find in it. The City is very regularly contriv'd, built of Wood and Stone, being the Materials they have there; the Inhabitants are well furnish'd with Horses, and Arms; but there are no Inns, unless those in the *Indian* Towns call'd Tambos, which are appointed to entertain Travellers, where all Provisions are furnish'd at a certain Rate set by the Magistrates. There is a good Church in the Place, and a Monastery of the Order of St. *Dominick*, built by the Inhabitants, at their own Cost; both the Church and Monastery well furnish'd with Vestments, and all other Necessaries for the Divine Worship; and in the Country about there are Clergymen, and

## 246 *The HISTORY of America.*

Friars to instruct the Natives, being maintain'd by the Landlords. A Treasurer and a Controller reside in this City, to receive the King's Fifths, and mark the Gold brought from the Mines, in which Blacks are employ'd in a very regular Manner, there being Ordinances made for their Government, and good Usage. As for the Manners of the Natives they differ very little therein, or in their Habit, Shape, Features and Language from their Neighbours, of whom enough has been said already; nor was there any other Superiority among them, than that every Town acknowledg'd its Cazique, or Leader, and each of them had his Boundaries mark'd out, and those Towns are not all standing together, but are divided into Hamlets, or Wards in Sight of one another, and many of them out of mere Sloathfulness rambled about from one Town to another, forsaking their native Soil. They were dull and lazy, and 'till the *Spaniards* taught them more Humanity, nothing was more common than to rob and murder one another; but now they are cloath'd, and grown more modest and rational. As to Rites and Sacrifices they knew little, or if they had any Worship it was directed to the Sun, whom they look'd upon as the Giver of all they had. They us'd dancing, rejoicing, and Drunkenness at certain Times, and particularly when they return'd victorious from War, and their Weapons were Spears, Targets, Darts, Copper Axes, and Macanas like our Hangers. Their Computation of Time was by the Moon, and by her they regulated their sowing, and they bred abundance of the *Peru* Sheep. Sons and Brothers were Heirs to the Deceas'd; they lay on Barbacans, or wooden Frames, and Hammacks;



Hammacks; had large Vessels for their Liquor; the Causes depending between them are now decided upon an hearing either by the Magistrates, or else by the Visitors that go yearly to right those that are injur'd.

Since we are come so near the Line, we will now cross it to proceed Northward as far as *Florida*. Some *Dominican* Friars being desirous that the *Floridans* should not be left destitute of the Light of the Gospel, which had so far spread itself through other Parts of the *West-Indies*, and persuading themselves, that they should be admitted, and reduce the Country without the help of Soldiers, *F. Lewis Cancer* propos'd this pious Design to the King; which being very agreeable to his Christian Inclination, his Majesty order'd, that the said Father, and those that would go with him should be furnish'd by the *India* House at *Sevil*, with all Necessaries whatsoever, proper for their Undertaking; or else that they should be supply'd in *New-Spain* as they should think fit, which they thought most expedient to receive in *New-Spain*. Accordingly the requisite Provision was made for *F. Cancer*, and his three Companions, being *F. Gregory de Beteta*, *F. James de Tolosa*, and *F. John Garcia*, who embarking on a Vessel fitted out for that Purpose, arriv'd safe at *Havana*, and from thence, on the Eve of the Ascension came to an Anchor on the Coast of *Florida*, in 28 Deg. or little more or less of N. Lat. the next Day the Boat went ashore with five or six Seamen, being order'd only to seek out whether there was an Harbour for the Ship; but they did quite contrary; for seeing very agreeable Groves, they resolv'd to land; and immediately one of them

## 248 *The HISTORY of Amriecca.*

spying three of the Natives, cry'd out, *Indians,*  
*Indians,* and the rest, without minding where  
 they were, or which way they went, hoisted the  
 Sail, laid hold of the Oars, and made off; but  
 before they could reach their Ship, they had  
 such a Scud of Wind, that they fell off, and it  
 was requisite to make away to their Assistance.  
 When they had recover'd the Boat, and the  
 Weather grew better, perceiving they could not  
 there find the Port they sought for, tho' it was  
 near, they held along the Coast towards the Bay  
 of *Miruelo*, or of *Apalache*, came into 28 Deg.  
 30 Min. and the Boat went ashore, because the  
 Ship could not come within six Leagues of it.  
 Here the Friars landed, and upon ill Advice  
 went away into the Wood, where they were  
 in Danger of being shot with more ease than  
 if they had been in the open Fields. That Night  
 they lay in a little Island, at a small Distance  
 from the Continent. In the Morning they  
 proceeded three Leagues farther, in quest of the  
 Harbour, and not finding it, return'd to the  
 Ship, and therefore came back too near the Place  
 where they had first view'd the Land, and the  
 Pilot, taking the Seamen along with him almost  
 by Compulsion, for they approach'd the Land  
 with an ill Will, for Fear of the *Indians*, went  
 upon Discovery, and with him the Fathers *Can-*  
*cer* and *James de Tolosa*. Entering into a Bay,  
 they saw three or four Fishermen's Huts, and  
 F. *James de Tolosa*, and a good Man, whose  
 Name was *Fuentes*, making Instance to F. *Cancer*  
 to let them go ashore, the other Father joining  
 with them in that Request, desiring to go ashore  
 and get into the Woods; F. *Cancer* was fain to  
 comply with the Religious Man, ordering, That  
 in

*The HISTORY of America.* 249

in case they saw no *Indians*, he should climb a Tree, whence he might make some Discovery without advancing too far into the Country. When the Friar was upon the Tree, about 15 or 20 *Indians* came out of a Thicket, whereupon *Fuentes* went ashore hastily, with an *Indian* Woman they had carry'd from the *Havana* for an Interpreter, being a Native of that Province, for fear lest those Natives should kill the Religious Man, without hearing him. *F. Cancer* also landed, and when he came near those People, taking some Toys out of his Sleeve, distributed the same among them, which they highly valuing, drew near to him, and *F. Tolosa*, and *Fuentes* joining them with the *Indian* Woman, they knelt down, began the Litany, and offer'd themselves up to God, the Natives also kneeling, and when they had done, began to discourse them, deliver'd their Intention, and were told that the Bay of the Holy Ghost was a Day and a half's Journey from thence.

The *Indian* Woman, seeing all so peaceable, was very joyful, and *F. Cancer*, the better to pry into the Designs of those People, said, He had more to give them aboard the Ship, and would go for it: He did so, return'd, and found so great a Number coming to embrace him that he was astonished, tho' sensible, that it was for what they expected to receive; but that being an Introduction to his Design, he was pleas'd, admiring that being all so fond of Hatchets, Knives, and Beads, they did not snatch them away; and therefore he gave those Things to the *Cazique's* Brother to distribute, but he would have the Father do it himself. The Pilot then taking away *F. Cancer*, he was oblig'd to go on  
aboard,

## 250 *The HISTORY of America.*

aboard, and *F. Tolosa, Fuentes*, and the *Indian* Woman stay'd ashore very peaceably, desiring to serve God. The next Day the *Spaniards* return'd to see what was become of the Religious Man, and not thinking there was any safety there, kept aloof with the Boat, tho' four *Indians* offer'd them Fish. Then one of the Seamen, without saying any Thing, threw himself into the Water, and as soon as landed, those People carry'd him from one Place to another, the *Spaniards* calling to him to return to them; the poor Wretch answer'd, That they would not let him, but would have the Father come ashore with the Cross. In fine the Natives carry'd him away, and the Ship proceeded to find the Bay of the Holy Ghost. They spent eight Days in coming to it, and eight more in getting in, the same being 6 or 7 Leagues in Length. On *Corpus Christi* Day the three Fathers went ashore, to say Mass, and saw a *Bohio*, or Cottage, on a little Hill, with an *Indian* at the Door, and tho' they made Signs to him to come for a Shirt, he would not stir, so that they left it hanging on a Pole for him. Advancing a League and half farther, they saw Cottages without any People, and when they were going away, an *Indian* came out running with a Bunch of Feathers made fast to a Wand, crying out, *Friends, Friends, you are wellcome hither, no Sword*; this in broken *Spanish*, meaning that he was peaceable. At length, both Parties drew near, not without Fear, the *Indians* deliver'd the Wand with the Feathers, and the Fathers gave them Shirts, desiring they would bring the other Religious Man, *Fuentes*, and the *Indian* Woman, which they promis'd to do, and 20 or 30 more *Indians* came forward in peaceable,



*The HISTORY of America.* 251

peaceable Manner from the Wood, without Bows or Arrows. Then they retir'd up the Land, and the Fathers to their Ship, where they found a *Spaniard* that had stay'd in the Country ever since the Time that *Ferdinand de Soto* was there, having run away from his Master, his Name was *John Muñoz*, and he had almost forgot his Native Language, and said, That the *Indians*, who had receiv'd *F. James de Tolosa*, and *Fuentes*, had kill'd them immediately, but that they had the Sailor alive.

The *Indians* having promis'd to restore the Friar, and the other Man, they resolv'd, notwithstanding what the *Spaniard* had told them, to land again on the 23d of *June*, 1549, the *Indians* being gone over to the opposite East Side, and lay hid expecting that the *Spaniards* would land; but observing them to stay in the Boat, 8 or 10 of them came out from among the Fir-Trees, and were to come into the open Place, where the Boat made to the Shore. When it was close, an *Indian* walk'd into the Sea very boldly, and gave *F. Cancer* the Fish he had, receiving a Shirt in return for it; another came with Fish, which the Father not accepting of, he begg'd a Cross about half a Yard long he had, which was given him, the *Indian* kiss'd it very affectionately, went ashore, and gave it to the *Indian* Woman Interpreter to kiss, having brought her thither, but being naked, the *Spaniards* did not know her, however the Man handed about the Cross for all the Natives to kiss. The Woman cry'd, Come hither, for these Men have no Cross-bows; one in the Boat said, That is *Magdalen*, and tho' the Fathers call'd to her to run into the Sea, she did not, because the *Indians* hinder'd

hinder'd her. The Fathers drew near, and went up to their Waistes in the Water, knew her to be the same; and she said, That the Father and the two Christians were together in the Ca-zique's House; if she ly'd it was because they threatned her in case she told them that they were dead. *Magdalen*, the Interpreter added, That all the Country had been in an Uproar, thinking a Fleet was come, but she told them, there were only four Friars that come to preach Matters of great Moment, for which Reason about 60 Men had assembled there. *F. Lewis Cancer* being eager to be ashore, leap'd out of the Boat without asking Leave, the Water being up to his Middle, saying, God be with you. *F. John Garcia* was going after him, whom with much Importunity, *F. Beteta* perswaded to come back before he was near the *Indians*, having been always jealous of their Slyness, and order'd many Toys to be brought to give them, agreed with *F. Cancer* to see one another the next Day, and that he should endeavour to have *F. James* and the two other *Spaniards* brought thither. Whilst this was concerting, several *Indians* were in the Boat with *F. John Garcia*, *F. Gregory* admiring that they came thither, and that the Sailors had permitted them, but some small Things being given them, they went away very contentedly. Those that were ashore would not permit the Father to stay with them, tho' he desir'd it, but perswaded him to return to the Boat, as he did, and they went away as if they would restore the other Friar, and the *Spaniards*. However, by the Relation of the *Spaniard* that made his Escape in the Canoe, there was reason to believe, that those Persons were kill'd; where-  
upon

upon the Ship being ill provided, and unfit to lye on that Coast, it was thought requisite to return to *New Spain*, or some other Part, having first the next Day made an Enquiry after their Companions. On *Tuesday* the 25th of *June* the Boat went off, and met with such a Storm, that the Man who had made his Escape, told *F. Cancer*, it had happen'd to shew that God would not have him land, because he would certainly be kill'd. The 26th *F. Cancer* persisting in his Resolution, the Boat went again, and they saw several *Indians* passing along with their Bows and Arrows. The *Spaniards* ask'd for the Interpreter, and were told he was far off; then the *Indians* enquir'd for their Slave, meaning the *Spaniard* that had escap'd, and he standing up said, Here I am, will you kill me as you did the other? At which they were startled, and *F. Cancer* bid him not provoke them, and then leap'd into the Water, and went on, tho' earnestly intreated to forbear. An *Indian* rush'd out of the Wood, embrac'd and led him by the Arm, others came after and hurry'd him on; one took off his Hat, and they saw he was kill'd with many heavy Strokes; after which all the *Indians* came out with a great Cry, shooting their Arrows at those in the Boat, shewing the Habits of the Friars. After this, on the 28th of *June*, the Ship sail'd for the *Havana*, but the Wind forc'd them away to *St. John de Ulva* in *New Spain*, where they arriv'd on the 19th of *July* the aforesaid Year 1549, and so ended that Religious Enterprize for converting of those barbarous *Indians*.

## C H A P. III.

*The President Gasca departs from Lima, and arrives at Panama; Discontents in Peru; Confusions at Cuzco.*

NOT to leave the Affairs of *Peru* too far behind, at the Beginning of the Year 1550, the President *Gasca* being resolv'd to return into *Spain*, as concluding that Kingdom to be thoroughly pacify'd, which was the only Intent of his going over, he order'd the Ship to be made ready to carry him to *Panama*, and gave his Dispatches to *Francis Hernandez Giron*, for the Conquest of the *Chunchos*, causing the same to be immediately proclaim'd in the City of *Lima*, to give him the greater Reputation, and oblige him to be loyal. Then having embark'd the Plate and Gold, there was nothing wanting but the publishing of the Repartition made of such Estates as had become vacant since the former Distribution made at *Guayarima*, all which was fix'd by the President, and all Men were in great Expectation to see whether this Partition would prove more acceptable than the former, which occasion'd much Noise in the City of *Lima*, where were many Soldiers, who all looking upon themselves to have deserv'd well, every one certainly concluded that they should be rewarded; but the President to avoid hearing the Complaints of those that should happen to be dissatisfy'd,



risfy'd, which he knew would be utter'd with such Boldness as is natural to martial Men, resolv'd to leave Orders for publishing the Partition after he was gone; and being just in readiness to set out for *Collao*, which is the Port to the City of *Lima*, he then receiv'd a Dispatch from the King, commanding him, among other Things, entirely to suppress the Personal Service of the *Indians*, the Execution whereof the President earnestly recommended to the four Judges *Cianca*, *Saravia*, *Santillan*, and *Maldonado*, who immediately started several Objections against it, and particularly the Danger of publishing the same at a Time when the Minds of Men were scarce settled after the late Rebellion, and before the *Spaniards* were furnish'd with sufficient Numbers of Blacks, or other Servants, and of Beasts of Burden; wherefore they thought it adviseable to suspend the Execution, and acquaint his Majesty therewith, only moderating the Taxes for the present, and by Degrees lessening the Personal Service as much as possibly might be. The President then went away to embark, having deliver'd the Instrument of the Partition to a Secretary of the Royal Court, and as soon as the President was sail'd, being about the Beginning of *February*, the said Secretary open'd it by Order of the Court, notifying the same to the Persons concern'd, and the Archbishop of *Lima*, deliver'd the Warrants, by Commission from the President, to the End, that the Court might not deliver them by regal Authority, tho' afterwards the said Court issu'd out Orders for the Magistrates to put those Persons into Possession; for it was then, and afterwards look'd upon as inconvenient that the Grants of Estates should be given by Warrants from the King. When the President  
was

## 256 The HISTORY of *America*.

was gone, those Kingdoms, to his immortal Honour, remain'd in perfect Tranquillity, being the greatest Dominions that ever Prince had upon Earth; for the Line assign'd to limit the *Indies* contain the one-half of all the Earth, where all was then subservient to his Majesty, who had the justest Title to the same, on Account of having taken such special Care for converting all those Nations from their Barbarity and Infidelity, to the Christian Faith; for which Reason it has pleas'd God that the said Empire has been the most obedient and submissive of any that ever was; for tho' at so vast a Distance all the regal Commands are as punctually obey'd as they would be in his own Palace; besides it is as fruitful and abounding in all Things God has created for the Food and Nourishment of Man, and for his Health and Recreation, as all the other Parts of the World that were before discover'd, and in many Parts much better, as appears by all that lies under the Tropicks, and the Equinoctial; the Natives have been, and are most dutiful, and submissive, and by the Grace of God learn and embrace the Christian Doctrine as readily as it is taught them, and freely; without any Compulsion pay the Tribute, or Taxes impos'd on them, having produc'd those immense Treasures which have enrich'd the Crown of *Spain*, and from thence all *Europe*, and part of *Asia* and *Africa*, the greatest Quantity of Gold and Silver is now current, being brought from the Empire of the *West Indies*.

To come to the Partition, it appear'd upon the Publication thereof, that those who had entertain'd vast Expectations, found themselves disappointed of their mighty Hopes, and some who had promis'd themselves less came off better than they had

had imagin'd; whereupon those that had been provided for rejoyc'd, and the others in Rage and Despair revil'd the President, and curs'd their ill Fortune; so that there was nothing to be heard but raving, storming, and furious Discourses, as is usual in such cases among People so ungovernable as Soldiers. *Francis Hernandez Giron* being at this Time in the City of *Lima*, look'd upon as a Commander of Reputation, and then going to the Conquest of the *Chunchos*, there being no other Remedy, all those People so disappointed, put themselves under his Command, and he went away with them to *Cuzco*, to provide for his Enterprize, having sent to the Cities of *Arequipa* and *la Plata*, to raise Men. When he came to *Cuzco* many thought it was not discreetly done to put Arms into his Hands, considering how much cause there was to suspect his Loyalty, and apprehend his restless Spirit; and they said, it had been much better to have carry'd him away into *Spain*; and as it is reasonable to believe that the President *Gasca*, being so wise a Man had consider'd all these Particulars, it may be justly concluded, that he would not take such a violent Course, for fear of giving the People of *Peru* occasion to find Fault; and whether it was upon some Intimations from others, or that the Judges did it of their own Impulse, that Court writ to the Corregidor, or chief Magistrate of *Cuzco*, being then *John de Saavedra*, for the Licenciado *Carvajal* was then dead, to be very vigilant and upon his Guard, that in case any Disturbance should happen, the same might be quash'd in good Time; for which Reason that Magistrate went the Rounds at Night with a good Number of Men, and kept them in readiness all the Day, to be provided against whatsoever might happen.

## 258 The HISTORY of America.

The Precautions taken by *John de Saavedra* at *Cuzco*, gave some Jealousy to Capt. *Francis Hernandez Giron*, and tho' at first he did not seem much to regard the same, he afterwards began to fear, kept more Company about him going abroad, and had a Guard in his House, where he made a Speech to those desperate People, who were ready for any Mischief, and desirous of some Commotions, representing how much they were oblig'd to him, since for their Sake he quitted his own Ease, and was going upon a new Conquest, recommending himself to them, as suspecting that those extraordinary Night-Rounds, and Preparations by Day were in order to kill him; in answer to which they all promis'd to sacrifice their Lives in his Defence. His Jealousy still increasing afterwards *Francis Hernandez* utter'd some Threats, and proceeded so far as to appear in Arms, and the Corregidor went into the Market-Place with arm'd Men, when to prevent coming to a Rupture, the Alcalde *John de Berrio*, Capt. *Basco de Guevara*, and others interpos'd, and it was agreed that the Corregidor and *Francis Hernandez* should have an Interview in the Church, where *Saavedra* told him, he much admir'd that he should take Offence at his going the Rounds, which he had done before his coming to *Cuzco*. *Francis Hernandez* answer'd, that he look'd upon it as a Novelty; besides that he had been told, that there was a Design to kill him, for which reason he had fortify'd his House, to defend himself. The Corregidor reply'd, that he had been misinform'd, for every Body was desirous to serve him; and therefore he might turn his Men out of the City, and prepare for his Enterprize, and he would aid and assist him therein to the utmost of his Power.

*Francis*



*Francis Hernandez* rejoyn'd, that his Intentions ever were to respect the Citizens, and to lay down his Life for them; and thus they parted, the Jealousies and Precautions on both Sides nothing abated. Two Days after an *Alguazil* going about to execute a Warrant from the *Corregidor*, upon a Soldier call'd *Sanisteuan*, in a civil Cause, the Soldier standing upon his Defence, the Officer and he came to Blows; but the *Corregidor* appearing in Person, the Soldier was taken. Word was immediately carry'd to *Francis Hernandez*, that the *Corregidor* design'd to hang the Soldier, and the *Alcalde Berrio* and *James de Silva* being with him at that Time, he desir'd the latter to go quickly to the *Corregidor*, and tell him, he would pay what *Sanisteuan* ow'd, provided he would dismiss him; and at the same Time the Soldiers made ready their Arms. *Silva* coming to the Market-Place, perswaded the *Corregidor* not to think of hanging that Soldier, lest it should give Occasion to promote the Mutiny they were endeavouring to prevent, for the Soldiers were taking their Arms against him, and therefore pray'd he would deliver him that Soldier. The *Corregidor* did so, saying, he willingly comply'd to obviate any Comotions, tho' it was contrary to the Severity requisite in that Case; but he must take Notice that the Pardon would make those People worse, and more Insolent. The *Alcalde* carry'd the Soldier to *Hernandez's* House, and perceiving that there was a great Rumour of Arms, for *Hernandez* had already conceiv'd wicked Designs, he return'd to the *Corregidor*, and gave him Notice of it, who thereupon causing the Royal Standard to be brought out, summon'd all the People in the City, and order'd four of the Prime Inhabitants to go to Capt. *Her-*

## 260 *The History of America.*

*h*ernandez's House, with two Notaries, to observe what was doing there; who return'd and reported, that he had many Men, and all in an uproar. He again sent *Garcilasso*, and *Basco de Guevara*, with Orders to command *Francis Hernandez*, as he was his Majesty's Captain, and Subject, to repair immediately to his Royal Standard. Those Persons found *Hernandez* unarm'd, pretending to be much concern'd at that Commotion, and offer'd to obey the Corregidor's Command; but being about to mount his Horse, the Soldiers would not consent, and obstructed him with their Arms, affirming, that if he went, the Corregidor would smite off his Head; those Soldiers being then bent upon beginning another Rebellion.

*Saavedra* being inform'd of it, again directed, that *Hernandez* should be summon'd, and the Soldiers with him, requiring them to permit their Captain to obey his Call; which done he drew up his Men in order of Battle, appointing Capt. *John Alonso Palomino* to command the Foot, and taking Charge of the Horse himself, resolving to march against the Soldiers. Religious Men, and other Persons of Note soon interpos'd, offering an Accommodation; to which *Francis Hernandez* seem'd well inclin'd; but the insolent Soyers would not comply, bullying against the Multitude of the City, and affirming there were many for them, who would espouse their Quarrel, and kill the Corregidor and others. In the conclusion, they drew up at *Francis Hernandez's* Door, and fortify'd themselves; however, the Mediators insisted on it so long, 'till it was agreed that the Corregidor, and *Hernandez* should have an Interview, *Garcilasso*, *Basco de Guevara*, *James de Silva*, and *John de Berrio* being Hostages, and their Arms taken away.

Ac-

Accordingly *Hernandez* went to the Church, and after long Debates, it was agreed, that *Hernandez* should return to his House, and deliver up to the Corregidor six of the Soldiers that were most criminal, whom he nam'd, to be banish'd; which being told them, they would not consent to it; but he told them, he had promis'd, and would perform it; however, they might go away and abscond, which was the only Remedy. Tho' the Corregidor dismiss'd the People, he kept a strong Guard in his House, because the Soldiers refused to consent to what had been stipulated, as having cast off all Duty and Shame, perswaded *Hernandez* to kill *Saavedra*, and seize the City, since they could no longer confide in, or trust one another; which *Hernandez* stav'd off. The next Day the Corregidor was for appearing in Arms again; but first *John de Berrio* went to signify to *Hernandez*, that he did ill in not performing his Engagement; which he excus'd, alledging, that it was not in his Power; however, he so far prevail'd on him, that he went upon only his Word and Honour to wait upon the Governour; and to the End that the Soldiers might not obstruct it, he stole away with his Cloak on, in only his Breeches and Doublet, and the Corregidor seiz'd him, uttering some angry Words, and caus'd him to be fetter'd. The Soldiers being inform'd of it dispers'd several Ways; some to the Monastery of *Dominick*, whither the Corregidor sent to secure them, and some made themselves strong in the Steeple, surrendering afterwards upon Promise of Pardon; others kept their Ground, at the Persuasion of one *Benedict de Aguilar*, and defended themselves resolutely. The Corregidor too hastily hang'd one *Dominguez*, who was none of the most faulty,

## 262 *The HISTORY of America.*

cut off the left Hands of two, three Fingers of another, and banish'd another, pushing on the Process against *Francis Hernandez*, in order to behead him, supposing that it would put an End to the Troubles, and in the End drew up the Sentence of Death, but could find no Lawyer that would sign it; for which reason he sent him to *Lima*, under a Guard of 20 Musketeers, upon his solemn Engagement to appear before the Court, where they took Bail, and permitted him to return to *Cuzco*, because having marry'd *Doña Mencía*, Daughter to the Treasurer *Almaraz*, and *Doña Leonor Portocarrero*, the Judges thought his Mind had been quiet and settled; but they were deceiv'd, as we shall see hereafter, being now to proceed to the other Affairs that happened before he came upon the Stage again.

---

### C H A P. IV.

*The President Gasca arrives at Panama, and proceeds to Nombre de Dios; the Insurrection of Ferdidand, and Peter de Contreras.*

**W**HILST what has been said was transacting in *Peru*, the President *Gasca* was sailing for *Panama*, where he arriv'd on the 12th of *March*, 1550. and found Dispatches from the King, dated at *Brussels*, thanking him for the great Industry he had us'd in reducing and pacifying the Kingdom of *Peru*; adding, that he had  
ap-



appointed *Don Lewis de Velazco* Viceroy of *New Spain*, and *Don Antony Mendoza*, who was then in *New Spain* to be Viceroy of *Peru*, both of them Gentlemen of singular Discretion, whose Virtue and Worth had been long known by Experience; and for as much as it was likely they could not set out so speedily as might be expected, his Majesty charg'd him to stay there 'till the coming of the said Viceroy; but that he should so order it, that the Gold and Silver he was to send might be in *Spain* before the Expiration of the Year 1550. because his Enemies judging that it could not come so soon, were concerting their Measures, and holding Intelligence, in Hopes to lay hold of that Opportunity, when they expected to succeed in their Enterprizes. The President could have wish'd, that this Order of waiting for the Viceroy, had come to his Hands at a Time when the Voyage to *Peru* was not so difficult, and tedious, for he would then have return'd in Obedience to it; but considering, that he had left Things in such a Posture in the Kingdom, that his Presence was not necessary for putting the King's Orders in Execution, he thought of what was most conducing to his Service, which was the conveying of the Gold and Silver into *Spain* with as much Expedition as the King desir'd; to which Effect his Departure from *Peru* and Arrival at *Panama* had been well concerted, for securing of the same, and to prevent the Ruin of the Towns in the Province call'd *Tierra Firme*, and the raising of new Troubles in *Peru*, which would certainly have happned, had not the President been come to *Panama*; because the Rebels that went from *Nicaragua* to *Tierra Firme*, would have found none but the Inhabitants and Merchants in the

Cities of *Panama* and *Nombre de Dios*, and would have follow'd the Example of *Machicao* and *Hinojosa*; for it is past all doubt, that being possess'd of those Cities, and of the King's Treasure the President brought, which with what he took up at *Truxillo* and *Paita*, amounted to a Million, and four hundred Thousand Ducats, their Reputation would be so much rais'd that desperate Men would have resorted to them from all Parts.

The President considering that what the King most earnestly press'd was the transporting of the Gold and Silver, observ'd that nothing was so much to be apprehended as the Weather, if the Treasure should happen to be at Sea at the Season when the Hurracans begin to be frequent; which among the Islands is about the Beginning of *August*, and some Years at the latter End of *July*, being very dangerous, and the Winter in the Ocean commences towards the End of *October*, more to be apprehended than Enemies; upon these Reflections he gave Orders to expedite the fining of the Powder, and fitting up the Arms he had brought from *Peru*, buying more, and mounting the Artillery he had also brought with him, to carry all over to *Nombre de Dios*; and in case no Fleet arriv'd from *Spain*, he concluded there would be a sufficient Force in 19 Ships that were already at *Nombre de Dios*. As for Men he found he had 150, including those that came with him from *Peru*; who being all well arm'd, trusty, and to be rely'd upon on Account of the Treasure each Man had of his own, he thought it fit that they should all help to guard the King's Money, and therefore laid an Embargo on all the Ships, tho' some of them were ready to sail for *Spain*, and others for the Islands, lest any of them should give Intelligence of the De-

parture of his Fleet. Upon the detaining of those Ships it appear'd, that there were 450 Men, besides those that the Governour *Clavijo* had arrested at *Panama*, as Vagabonds, that were more likely to do Harm than Good. Hereupon he resolv'd to carry over the Gold and Silver from *Panama* to *Nombre de Dios*; and in order to it perswaded the Inhabitants of the first of those Places to transport the same with their Gangs of Horses and Mules, as far as *Venta de las Cruces*, as the People of *Peru* had serv'd the King in bringing it thither, since they had receiv'd no less Benefit by the Reduction of that Kingdom which had cost his Majesty so dear; to which they readily comply'd. The Treasure being thus sent away, and the President gone after it; he was scarce come to *Venta de las Cruces* before Advice overtook him, that there were Commotions in *Panama*, and all Things tended to an Uproar; which made him hasten his Journey to *Nombre de Dios*, to deliver that Place from the Consternation it would be in, on Account of what had happen'd at *Panama*, and to secure it with the People that resorted thither to embark. At the same Time he sent to seize all the Boats on the River of *Chagre*, and sink two old Caravels in it, to obstruct the Passage of the Rebels, which was accordingly perform'd. The President in his Way to *Nombre de Dios* met Capt. *Lope Martin*, whom he had sent before to that City, and inform'd him, that *James de Almaraz*, Son to the Controller *Almaraz*, was come thither, having made his Escape from the Rebels, and said, they were People of *Nicaragua*, headed by *Ferdinand de Contreras*, whom they entituled *Captain General of Liberty*, and declar'd they would make him King of *Peru*,  
calling

calling him already among themselves Prince of *Cuzco*.

On the 26th of *April*, 1550, the President arriv'd at *Nombre de Dios*, to the great Joy of the Inhabitants, who open'd their Shops, which were shut; and he, the more to encourage them, order'd the King's Effects that were aboard the Ships to be landed, and kept in a convenient Place in the City; whereupon all those that were gone to hide themselves in the Woods return'd, and all were set to work to furnish Arms and Provisions for the Relief of *Panama*. The same Day a Frigate arriv'd from *Nicaragua*, having come down the *Deasguadero*, or Drein of the Lake, bringing two Letters from the Governour of *Panama*; wherein the *Alcaldes*, or chief Magistrates of the City of *Granada* in *Nicaragua*, gave him an Account, that *Ferdinand de Contreras* had rebell'd in that Province, murder'd the Bishop, and was marching towards *Panama*, with a great Number of wicked People of that Province, and others that had been banish'd from *Peru* and that City, designing to possess themselves thereof, and to kill the Bishop, and all the King's Officers in it. Before we proceed any farther upon what Preparations the President was making at *Nombre de Dios* to relieve *Panama*, whether he had sent Advice, that the Succours would be soon ready, for he manag'd all those Affairs with singular Courage and Discretion, it will be fit to relate how that Rebellion in *Nicaragua* began, and what was the Occasion of it. *Roderick de Contreras*, a Gentleman of *Segovia*, of the Family of *Ferdinand Gonzalez de Contreras*, which is distinct from that of *Peter Gonzales de Contreras*, tho' originally descended from two Brothers, had been some Years Governour of the Province of *Ni-*



*caragua*, which Government he had obtain'd by marrying *Doña Maria de Peñalosa y Bovadilla*, Daughter to *Peter Arias de Avila*, (of whom much has been said before in this History) and had by her two Sons, viz. *Ferdinand* and *Peter de Contreras*. Now the new Laws prohibiting all Governours, and other the King's Officers, having any *Indians*, that is, Estates with the *Indians* in Vassalage, he made over those he had before to his Wife and Sons, and when the Court of the Confines went over, and resided at the City of *Gracias a Dios*, the Licenciate *Herrera*, one of the Judges of that Court, was appointed to examine into the Behaviour of the said *Roderick de Contreras*, and among other Things he prov'd upon him, finding that the Resignation he had made of his *Indians* to his Wife and Sons, had not been, as appear'd by the Writings, a Year before; but after the Promulgation of the Law, he took those *Indians* from the Wife and Sons, and incorporated them in the Crown, which was confirm'd by the Court of the Confines. *Roderick de Contreras* went over into *Spain* to clear this Affair, and defend himself from the other Charges brought against him by the said Court; and notwithstanding all the Endeavours he us'd to have the Judgment for taking away the *Indians* revers'd, he could not prevail, but on the contrary the same was approv'd, and ratify'd by the Council of the *Indies*.

It is easy to judge how much the Sons were concern'd at the ill Success of their Father; and *Ferdinand de Contreras* resenting it beyond all Measure, began to declare the same in his Discourse, saying, If he were supported he would express himself by Actions, and being a Youth of much Boldness, and a Gentleman of Quality, many of  
the

## 268 *The HISTORY of America.*

the Criminals of *Peru*, who had been banish'd thither, resorted to him, as did others from *Panama*, and some desperate Fellows of the same Province, that aim'd at Innovations. Those that come from *Peru* being incens'd, and us'd to live by rapin, and in a Libertin Way, they offer'd to follow *Contreras*, and to make him their Chief, and Commander, to march whither he should please to lead them, encouraging him by affirming, that such Numbers of Men would resort to him from all Parts of the *West-Indies*, that all Places would submit to him, without any Opposition; for that besides the Disposition there was in all People to promote any Novelty, they would rather admit of him than any other for their Head, on Account of his being Grandson to *Peter Arias de Avila*, whose Memory was still very famous in that Country, and who had been very instrumental towards the first Discovery of *Peru*. The Man that most exerted himself in pushing on this Affair was a Soldier call'd *John Bermejo*, of the City of *Segovia*, and well born, being one of the Prime Offenders banish'd from *Peru*, generally reputed a very daring Fellow, who promis'd *Contreras* mighty Matters, relating all that had happen'd in *Peru*, and affirming, that had not *Pizarro* ill conducted his Affairs, he might have kept to himself that mighty Empire, which all the King of *Spain's* Power could never have wrested from him; and to the End, that none might refuse joining in the Rebellion, he encourag'd all Sorts of Persons, telling them, they would be rich, and respected; whereas in that Country they were poor, and disregarded, and therefore they ought to chear up, since so favourable an Opportunity to make their Fortunes was offer'd them. Young

*Contreras*

## The HISTORY of *America*. 269

*Contreras* being naturally ambitious, and turbulent, was easily led away by his predominant Passion, puff'd up with Vanity, and began to consult with *Bermejo*, and others about the best Way of managing their Designs, freely declaring how much his Father, his Brother *Peter de Contreras*, and himself hated the Bishop of *Nicaragua*, being then *Don Antonio de Valdiviesso*, of the Order of *St. Dominick*, who was in the City of *Leon*, the only Motive for their Malice being that Bishop's protecting the *Indians*, the singular Care he took that they should be well us'd, and his Severity in reproving such as did the contrary. Those vile, desperate, and wicked Men, believing it would be agreeable to the Temper of *Contreras*, and draw him fully into the Rebellion, advis'd him to murder the said Bishop, alledging, that it would be very conducing towards establishing him in the Sovereignty of that Country, which would be brought about with more Ease the fewer Men in Authority were left alive. The following Book will put an End to what is here begun.

*The End of the Sixth BOOK.*

THE





done, *Contreras* set out from the City of *Granada*, where this Affair was transacted, with many of the Conspirators, for the City of *Leon*, which was 18 Leagues distant, leaving his Brother *Peter* with his Mother, to palliate his wicked Intention. When come to *Leon*, he invited some Soldiers he found there to hear a Consort of Musick; upon which Occasion he represented to them, and those that came with him, what a miserable Life they led in that Country, the wretched Condition the Soldiers were reduc'd to, how much all the People were oppress'd by the Royal Court, how little likelihood there was of being eas'd of their Sufferings in a Country which they had conquer'd; but that to put an End to those Calamities he had resolv'd to expose himself, and shed his Blood for their Good. This said, without any longer Consultation, he sally'd out of the House to put his Design in Execution, and in regard that some were for going to arm themselves, and others follow'd him with an ill Will, he reprov'd and threatned them, saying, he would cause them to be punish'd as Offenders, and that they needed no more Arms, commanding *John Bermejo* to kill any Man that should refuse to follow him. Thus he broke into the Bishop's House so unexpectedly, that tho' the Prelate suspecting the Design, would have hid himself, he could not, and *Ferdinand de Contreras* stabb'd him 'till he dy'd on the Spot, that worthy Person behaving himself in such manner as show'd his great Piety, and Resignation to the Will of God. The Bishop being thus murder'd, and his House plunder'd, the Conspirators went abroad into the City, crying, *Liberty, long live Prince Contreras*; breaking open the King's Chests, and having taken out the Treasure, ran  
about

about seizing Arms, and Horses, and inviting others to joyn them. Next they sent Advice of what they had done to *Peter de Contreras*; and about forty of them mounted and well arm'd, went away to the Port of *Realejo*, 12 Leagues from *Leon*, on the South Sea, where they seiz'd two Ships, and *Ferdinand de Contreras* staying aboard them, sent *John Bermejo* to *Granada* to gather what Confederates were there, and plunder as much as he could. Advice being brought to *Granada* of the Murder of the Bishop, that the Rebellion was broke out, and that *John Bermejo* was on his Way thither, 120 Men, supposing he had a great Number with him, took up Arms against him, and drew up in a Body, *Peter de Contreras*, by the Advice of his Mother being among them, one *Carrillo* being their Captain, whom, as they had all agreed, they murder'd, as soon as *Bermejo* appear'd, wounding five or six more, and then joyn'd *Bermejo*, who possess'd himself of the City, and sent a Soldier, whose Name was *Salguero*, with 30 Musketeers, to secure the Port of *Nicoya*, gather Men and Arms, and plunder all he could. *Bermejo* presently departed *Granada*, with all that would follow him, taking *Peter de Contreras* along with him, without regarding the Tears of his Mother, who being much afflicted for the Murder of the Bishop, and to see her Sons engag'd in so wicked a Design, was almost distracted, calling them aloud by their Names, and crying that those Cruelties, and wicked Practices could never turn to their Honour, or Advantage, but on the Contrary bring them to an infamous End. The Alcaldes, and Regidores of *Granada*, immediately fitted out a Frigate, and sent it down the *Desaguadero*, or Drain to *Nombre de Dios*, with

with Advice of what had happened, being the same that has been mention'd before to have brought Intelligence to the President *Gasca*.

As soon as *John Bermejo* return'd to the Port of *Realejo*, a Consultation was held, how to proceed, and he advis'd the two Brothers to depart that Country immediately, because, besides its being poor, where little Advantage could be made, the Court of the Confines, if they had Time given them, would come down with a greater Power from *Guatemala*, and *Honduras*, and defeat them, which would disappoint all their Expectations; and as their Hopes depended upon securing *Panama* and *Nombre de Dios*, the Success thereof depended on their Celerity, that they might be there before any Advice of what was doing could reach those Places; which if they did, those Cities would certainly be their own, whence they might proceed in Arms to *Peru*, where as soon as arriv'd they could not fail of being well receiv'd, for the sake of *Pe'er Arias*, in regard the People were all generally discontented, and because they were found of a Libertine Life. Upon this Advice *John Bermejo*, a violent outrageous Man, burnt all the Ships that were in the Harbour, to prevent being pursu'd, or their carrying Intelligence to other Parts, excepting only two, aboard which they sail'd for *Nicoya*, to joyn *Saluero*, who had drawn together 60 Soldiers, in two other Ships, and so they proceeded together to *Panama*. At the Pearl Islands they took a Ship, and *Ferdinand* and *Peter de Contreras*, with *John Bermejo* in two Frigates, came to an Anchor at *Ancon*, which is half a League from the Port. On *Sunday* the 20th of *April*, they took four or five Ships that were in

## 274 *The HISTORY of America.*

the Harbour, and among them one well mann'd belonging to *Doña Maria de Peñalosa*, their Mother. Having taken the Ships, *Ferdinand de Contreras* landed with 100 Men, having first receiv'd very particular Information of all the President *Gasca* had done, of his Motions, Journey, and of the Treasure he carry'd. The People at *Panama* were in a great Consternation, believing the Power of the Rebels to be very great by the Ships they had taken, and seeing them land so boldly; and on the other Hand those Outlaws seeing all happen as they could wish were much encourag'd. Upon the Intelligence *Ferdinand de Contreras* had receiv'd concerning the President, he immediately sent *Salguero* after him, with 25 Musketeers, to *Venta de Cruces*, to secure as much Plate as he could, and obstruct any Advice of what was doing being carry'd to *Nombre de Dios*. Then *Contreras* with his Men, being about 255, enter'd the City, and finding that the Governour *Sancho de Clavijo* was gone with the President, caus'd his House to be plunder'd, and seiz'd *Roderick de Villalva*, the chief Alguazil. Next he went to the House of *Dr. Robles*, where he knew the President had lodg'd, who they found was gone two Days before; then ranging about the City, the Men plunder'd what Houses they pleas'd, crying, *Liberty, and long live Prince Contreras*, being absolute Masters of the City, imprisoning the Bishop, the Treasurer *John Gomez de Anaya*, and *Martin de Marchena*, all whom *John Bermejo* would have hang'd, had not *Contreras* hinder'd him; besides there were many of the Soldiers that would not consent to it, and talk'd very boldly, and others standing by *Bermejo*, they were upon the Point of falling out, and he thereupon made



made the Bishop swear, that they would not oppose him; after which they gather'd all the Arms, Horses and Mules that could be found, for *Martin de Marchena* had hid the City Arms, and at Break of Day *Ferdinand de Contreras* set out for *Capira*, in Pursuit of the President, with 40 able Musketeers, *John Bermejo*, whom he had made his Major-General being appointed to follow him; and he commanded all Persons upon Pain of Death to discover what Arms they had, and to follow him with them. He then set out after *Contreras*, taking *John Gomez de Anaya* Prisoner along with him. As soon as *Bermejo* was gone, without leaving any Guard in the City, as thinking there could be no Danger to him from the Inhabitants, who were disarm'd, and all of them Tradesmen, and Merchants, the Bishop *Arias de Azevedo*, *Palomeque de Menesses*, *Ferdinand de Cordova*, *Martin Ruiz de Marchena*, *Peter de Salinas*, *Matthew Ruiz de Luzena*, and *Castellanos*, propos'd to arm; concluding, that since the Rebels were not above 208, they might safely oppose them, and rescue the City. *Arias de Azevedo* sent a Servant the direct Way, to get before *Contreras*, and acquaint the President at *Nombre de Dios* of that Rebel's advancing, and sent two Blacks other Ways with the same Intelligence, and they all arriv'd in good Time; tho' the President was already provided by the Advice he had receiv'd from *Almaraz*, as above mention'd. Two of *Bermejo*'s Soldiers that could not go out with him remain'd in the City, one of whom went to acquaint him, that the City of *Panama* had declar'd for the King, and was in Arms; whereupon he resolv'd to turn back to secure it; because without it all his Measures were broke, and sent Word of it to *Contreras*, advising

## 276 The HISTORY of America.

him to secure the Passes of *Capira* and *Boqueron*, which might be done with a few Men; and it behov'd him very much, that no Succours might go from *Nombre de Dios* to *Panama*; and that in the mean Time he would take Care to ship off all the Plunder, and expect him at *Panama* to consult how to proceed. He also sent Orders to *Salguero* to joyn him.

The Inhabitants of *Panama*, having declar'd for the King, assembled by ringing of the Bells, which brought all those that had absconded, and they amounted to about 300, but not all fit for Service, the best among them being an hundred that came from *Peru* with the President, and had not dispatch'd their Affairs timely enough to go away with him. They appointed *Martin Ruiz de Marchena* their Commander in Chief, with other proper Officers, making themselves strong in the Market-Place, posting the Blacks with long Staves, the Points hardned in the Fire, at the Windows, and abundance of Stones by them, and putting the Women, and other useles Persons into the Church. Capt. *Christopher de Sianca* offer'd to pursue *Salguero* with 40 Soldiers, and as many Blacks, and to cut off all his Men, which was granted him with much Importunity; but on the Way a *Portuguese* Farmer acquainting him, that the Rebels were returning to *Panama*, he also went back for the Security of that City. There he understood that *Peter de Contreras*, who had been left aboard the Ships, having heard the ringing of the Bells, had sent a Boat, with some Soldiers and Blacks, to know the Occasion of it, which being taken by the People of *Panama*, they had contriv'd to send out three Barks that Night in Order by some Wile to take *Contreras's* Ship; which was  
upon

upon the Point of succeeding, but that *Contreras* discovering the Fraud, cut his Cables, and sail'd out of Port *Perico*, and lay plying out at Sea, to expect some News from his Brother. Capt. *Cianca* having made his Report at *Panama*, the Inhabitants immediately set about what they had concerted, posted Guards, and Sentinels, who soon gave the Alarm, and *Bermejo* appear'd with a full Resolution to put his Design in Execution, as finding all his Men well dispos'd and willing, he having encourag'd, and excited them to go upon that Enterprize, for he was continually admonishing, and telling them, That they needed not to question the Success, for as much as all the People of *Panama* were base, and unfit for Service; that they would turn their Backs at the first Onset, and that when they had once gain'd the City, they would be possess'd of all that was requisite for the carrying on of their Designs, which tended to the enriching and making of them all happy; and he could assure them that they would infallibly be the wealthiest, and greatest Men in the World. Thus finding them all chearful, he boldly attempted to break in, and gain the Fortification, himself, with some Soldiers, attacking the Intrenchment, that was defended by *Palomeque de Menesses*, *John Cabrera de Cordova*, and *Matthew Ruiz de Lucena*, and tho' he push'd on very vigorously, so good a Defence was made, that with the help of the Stones thrown by the Blacks, he was oblig'd to retire.

Tho' *Bermejo* had omitted nothing that might conduce to the gaining of the City, finding the Opposition made much greater than had been imagin'd, two of his Men being kill'd, and many wounded, he thought it necessary to retire, which

278 *The HISTORY of America.*

he did in good Order, keeping his Men close together, so that the Defendants, who sally'd out, could do him no harm; and in this manner he halted close by the River *de las Labanderas*, or of Laundresses, which is a Quarter of a League from the City, expecting that his Enemies, like Townsmen, not us'd to be nice in obeying the Orders of their Superiors, would commit some Fault, of which he might make his Advantage. Perceiving then that some of his own Men were dismay'd on Account of the rough Usage they had met with at *Panama*, he sent Messengers to call *Ferdinand de Comreras*, and *Salguero*, acquainting them with the Posture of Affairs, pressing them to joyn him immediately. When that Day came, he resolv'd to attack *Panama* by Night, for his Courage was not abated, tho' he had been baffled before, being still of Opinion, that it highly concern'd him, for the compassing of his Ends, to be Master of that City, which might be done by setting Fire to it in five or six Places, and giving the Assault at two or three; concluding, that when the Fire was once lighted, the Townsmen and Merchants would run to their Houses, to secure them, their Goods, their Wives and Children; and that his Men being divided into several Bodies, would infallibly prevail. All approving of this Advice, and promising to do their utmost, they took an Oath to kill all that were in *Panama* above 12 Years of Age; which Resolution being imparted to all in general, *John Bermejo*, a crafty Fellow, at that Time of need did not treat them like Soldiers, but as Friends and Companions; the Treasurer *John de Anaya*, whom *Bermejo* still carry'd about Prisoner came to know it, and privately order'd a Black he had, to make his



his Escape, and carry the Advice to *Panama*. The next Day *Bermejo* drew back to a Farm where Cows were bred, belonging to an Inhabitant of *Panama*, half a League from the City, on a strong Situation, designing there to feed his Men with some Cows that were kill'd, and at the same Time render the Inhabitants of *Panama* the less vigilant by seeming to retire. *Anaya's* Black carrying the Advice to the City, the People presently assembled to consult how they should proceed. *Arias de Azevedo* was of Opinion to march out directly, and fight the Rebels, without permitting them to draw near the City, looking upon it as dangerous to expect them there, for the same Reasons that *Bermejo* alledg'd; and that meeting them in open Field those Rebels would be discourag'd; and that the Inhabitants not being behind Trenches, those who had least Courage would have no Opportunity of hiding themselves, as was usually practis'd by Night, when they could not be seen by all People; Shame being a great Incentive to all Men to perform their Duty. *Marchena, Castellanos, Palomeque de Menesses, John Cabrera de Cordova, Matthew Ruiz de Lucena, and Peter de Salinas* all seconded this Advice; but the Bishop, Doctor *Menesses*, and all the rest oppos'd it, alledging, that the Succour the President was sending from *Nombre de Dios* would soon be there, and therefore they thought it safer to stand upon the Defensive, than to hazard the losing of a Battle; since they might defend the Place a second Time, as they had done the first; and when the Relief was come they might more safely march out against the Enemy.

In the Afternoon they met again, to resolve what was to be done, when *Arias de Azevedo*,

who was a Gentleman of Worth, maintain'd his Opinion, urging, That the whole City was built with Timber, Planks, and Reeds, and some Houses were thatch'd, so that when the Fire had once taken there would be no Possibility of quenching it, especially in the Night, when they were at the same Time to be under Arms; and fighting an outrageous and desperate Enemy, that had no other Means to succeed but by gaining the City, which would not only be the Ruin and Destruction of themselves, but the Loss of all the King was possess'd of in the *Indies*; and in case they were afraid to march out into the Field, looking upon it as too great a Peril, he offer'd to be himself the foremost, and to lead the Van. In short, he said so much to encourage them, as verifi'd the old Proverb, That it is good to be rich and not haughty; for *Arias de Azevedo* was so, a modest and good temper'd Man; so that tho' the Bishop would not alter his Mind, all the rest conform'd with *Azevedo*, who dealt discreetly, and with much Sincerity.

---

## C H A P. II.

*The Inhabitants of Panama fight the Rebels, and defeat them; new Commotions in the City of Cuzco.*

THE People of *Panama* having resolv'd, as was said in the last Chapter, to give the Enemy Battle in the Field, began to prepare for it,

it, being about 300 Men; 200 of them unfit for much Service; but the other Hundred, who had been Soldiers in *Peru*, being Men well disciplin'd, and try'd in War, were fit for any Enterprize; besides they had 250 Blacks, led by some *Spaniards*, who had Orders, that as soon as the *Spanish* Forces were come up with the Rebels they should fall in upon their Rear, with their Staves, Spears, some Cross-bows, and abundance of Stones. Thus they march'd into the Field, with Resolution and in good Order, and when *Bermejo* spy'd them, he wonder'd that there should be so many Men in *Panama*; and tho' he plainly perceiv'd that his Followers had no Kindness for him, nor were to be much depended on, he boldly represented to them the necessity of behaving themselves well, and Fear had some Effect upon them. Thus, without appearing in the least discourag'd, like an expert Soldier, he possess'd himself of a little Hill, which he thought advantageous, and is now call'd *de la Matança*, or of the Slaughter; and just as he was ascending it, *Salguero* came with the Men he had carry'd to *Venta de Cruzes*, where he took two Parcels of the King's Plate, many Bars of which he scatter'd about; and after that took more of the Inhabitants and Merchants of *Panama* and *Nombre de Dios* that were going to be shipp'd off for *Spain*, all which he carry'd with him, 'till the Night when he was met by *Bermejo's* Messenger, when the Surprize of the News he brought, caus'd little Care to be taken of the Plate; so that much of it was dropp'd, much more fell into the River, and among thick Bushes, and Brambles, and no less was taken by Blacks, who bury'd and conceal'd the same in several Places.

*Bermejo*

282 *The HISTORY of America.*

*Bermejo* having possess'd himself of the advantageous Eminence, and rejoycing that *Salguero* had joyn'd him so opportunely, they both apply'd themselves to draw up their Men, perceiving that those of *Panama* were resolv'd to give Battle, and they began to mount that Ascent, some of them shewing that their Courage was already somewhat abated; but the Van was led by *Arias de Azevedo*, *Marchena*, *Castellanos*, and several other Persons of Honour, and Resolution, who made Way for those that follow'd. In conclusion, both Parties drew together, and the Rebels, encourag'd by *Bermejo* and *Salguero*, fought so desperately, that they soon kill'd *Castellanos* the Major General, *Reynaltes* the Major, and Ensign *Mariana*, and wounded many, which made the Loyalists lose Ground; and tho' the Blacks had fallen in upon the Rear of the Enemy, as had been concerted, the Rebels manag'd so well, that they also gave Way. The Rebels then lost themselves by not pursuing either the *Spaniards* or the Blacks, when they might infallibly have gain'd the Victory; but *Arias de Azevedo* being sensible of the Danger, hasted away to the Blacks, who being encourag'd by his Presence, and having a Respect for his Person, return'd to the Charge, at such Time as the *Spaniards* of *Panama* reflecting on the Danger, and the Shame of being discourag'd, and desiring to amend the Fault they had been guilty of, to prevent their own Ruin, gave a fresh Onset, and the *Peruvians* exerting their Valour, whilst the Blacks press'd on with their few Crossbows, Staves and Stones, *Arias de Azevedo* encouraging them with Words, and Example, the Rebels thus attack'd on both Sides were put into a Confusion, and totally routed, so that in half a  
Quarter



## The HISTORY of America. 283

Quarter of an Hour, not one Rebel escap'd being kill'd, or taken. Ninety of them dy'd, and among them *Bermejo* and *Salguero*, their Leaders; and the Treasurer *John Gomez de Anaya*, who broke loose from his Confinement, when the Battle began, took his Post in the Van, and with a Spear wounded *Bermejo*, who had before receiv'd a Musket Shot, being a bold and ingenious Man, fit for any Enterprize, All the rest that had landed were taken, except *Ferdinand de Contreras*, and the rest that were gone with him to *Capira*. Of the Men of *Panama* 3 were kill'd in the Action, two more died of the violent Heat, and many were wounded. This was a notable Victory, and of such Consequence, that had the Rebels gain'd it, as they expected, when once Masters of *Panama*, and *Nombre de Dios*, and of the two Seas, they had resolv'd to proceed to *Pernu*, where the People being favourably dispos'd for their Designs, as will appear hereafter, they would have brought those Dominions into such Confusion, that it would have been a very difficult Matter to reduce them.

*Ferdinand de Contreras* at *Capira* receiv'd *Bermejo's* Letter, wherein he advis'd him to return, because they were in a bad Condition; and he answer'd, that he approv'd of the attacking of *Panama*, and would go joyn him very speedily; but that in the mean Time he should not fail to give out, that they were Masters of *Nombre de Dios*, and that the President, and the Governor of *Panama* were both kill'd, which Report would be of use to them. He then set out himself, bringing away *Altamirano*, *Chaves*, and *Quixada* Prisoners, having seiz'd them because they were going to *Nombre de Dios*. In a small Fort he had erected

## 284 The HISTORY of America.

erected on the Mountain of *Capira* he left 15 Soldiers, with Orders to defend the same, 'till farther Orders; and that in case any Troops march'd from *Nombre de Dios*, they should give him Notice. This done, he went away, and lay that Night at *Venta de Chagre*, or the Inn of *Chagre*, which he burnt in Revenge, for that *Azevedo's* Man sent to carry Advice to the President had pass'd that Way. Soon after, to his great Grief, he was inform'd of the Defeat of *John Bermejo*; and holding on his Way, on *Thursday* the 24th of *April*, 1550. he pass'd by, in the Night, near *Panama*, with the three Prisoners aforesaid, making towards *Nata*, to get aboard the Ship his Brother had. *Peter de Contreras* being inform'd of the Defeat of his Brother's Forces, stood away for the Point of *la Higuera*; and the Inhabitants sent out four Ships after him, which made up towards him; but he landed the Soldiers, and the Sailors possess'd themselves of the Ships. *Zamorano*, who commanded the Ships of *Panama*, landed some Men to pursue the Rebels, after having been joyn'd by *Contreras's* Ship, but could only take three or four Soldiers; whereupon he reembark'd, and endeavouring to return to *Panama*, was carry'd away by the Currents, and again forc'd to Point *Higuera* to Water; when he was inform'd by a Farmer, that the Rebels were hard by; whereupon he landed some Men, who marching up the Country overtook the Enemy, of whom they took 25 or 30, the rest being 8, or 10 flying through the thick Woods, with *Peter Contreras*, Capt. *Castañeda*, and some *Indians* and Blacks. *Zamorano* return'd to *Panama* with the Prisoners, where they were all hang'd, with the rest that had been taken in the Battle. Some Men were  
also

## The HISTORY of America. 285

also sent in pursuit of *Ferdinand de Contreras*, who had taken the Road to *Nata*, but could never light on him, and only found in a Marsh Ground a Man drowned, who had *Ferdinand's* Hat, and other Things belonging to him, whose Head they carry'd back to *Panama*. Those that had been left in the Fort of *Capira* abandon'd it, and fled, when they heard of the Defeat of *John Bermejo*, and that the President was marching from *Nombre de Dios*, with 250 Men for the Relief of *Panama*, all of them able Soldiers, and well arm'd. As soon as he came to *Panama*, many were executed; the Quarters of *John Bermudez* were set up on the High-Ways, and his Head in the Market-Place. Whilst the Prisoners were bringing to condign Punishment, care was taken to find out the Plate that *Salguero* had carried from the River of *Chagre*, and such Diligence was us'd, that not only the King's, but much of what belong'd to private Persons was recover'd. The President then having settled the Affairs at *Panama* and *Nombre de Dios*, imbarc'd in a Fleet of nineteen Sail, and arriv'd safe at *Sevil*, at the Time the King wish'd for, having done him such great Service, and compos'd such mighty Troubles with singular Prudence, without having carry'd any Arms or Money from *Spain*, or any other Aid or Assistance, besides the Royal Authority. From *Sevil* he sent Captain *Lope Martin* to *Flanders* with Advice of what had happen'd about *Panama*, and of his own safe Arrival with the Treasure, which was welcome News to his Majesty, who was then in much want of Money, by reason of his foreign Wars. There were various Reports concerning the two Brothers *Contreras*; but the Truth is, that nothing could ever be heard of them for  
certain,

## 286 *The HISTORY of America.*

certain, for which Reason it is believ'd, that they were kill'd either by the *Indians* or the Blacks.

To return to *Pern*, that Country began to be again infested with Uproars, Mutinies, and Com-motions; the Minds of the People being still distracted, which made them run into Disorders upon every trivial Occasion, towards which the Advice receiv'd of the Rebellion of the *Contreras* at *Nicaragua* and *Panama* very much contributed; and tho' the News of their Destruction soon follow'd, Men's Inclinations were so ill dispos'd that they would not believe it. An Addition to these Discontents was the Publication of a Royal Ordinance, enjoyning that no *Indians* should be compell'd to work at the Mines of *Potosi*, which occasion'd much Muttering and Uneasiness. These and other such like inconsiderable Motives, which the Soldiers look'd upon as wrongs done them, produc'd murmuring against the Government, they having been us'd to see it in less Reputation; and therefore, in their Assemblies and Cabals they impudently declar'd, those Restraints were not to be endur'd. *Francis de Miranda*, *Alonso de Melgarejo* and *Alonso de Barrionuevo* were the Prime Persons that most freely express'd their Resentments, and were much regarded, as being the most Turbulent and Insolent. The Impudence and Outragiousness of the Soldiers daily increasing, the Magistrates of *Cuzco* thought it expedient to send Advice of it to the Royal Court at *Lima*, but the Corregidor *John de Saavedra*, judging that would rather render the Soldiers more audacious, and that they would pursue the Messenger and murder him, he obstructed it, and yet could apply no other Remedy, by Reason he had not a sufficient Force to oppose the Soldiers, and there-



fore it behov'd him to quell those Commotions with Art and Discretion. The Disturbance daily ran higher, both in publick and in private, and the Uneasiness was general, for it is impossible to hinder People from being infected, where wicked turbulent Persons go unpunish'd. Some were in a Consternation, apprehending the Havock that must attend any Commotions, having the Miseries of the late Troubles before their Eyes. Others wishing for a Rebellion, had a thousand Wiles and Artifices to promote it, slandering those in Power, spreading false News, inculcating that there were Plots, private Intrigues, Conspiracies, and such like Machinations, to set the Country free; affirming to religious Persons and others, that the Insurrection was well concerted, and the prime Persons in the Kingdom engag'd in it, as not being able to endure the extraordinary Subjection they were all brought into by the Royal Court, apprehending it would be carry'd on so far, that when they least imagin'd it, all would be reduc'd to Poverty and Misery, under Colour of lessening the Tributes and Taxes. In short, there was nothing but Fear, Uneasiness, Jealousy and Discontent, and it was hourly expected that these Passions would break out into open Violence, for which Reason the Corregidor *Saavedra* was advis'd to venture, and cause some of the Mutiniers to be hang'd, which would put a stop to all Troubles. Among the rest, Captain *John Alonso Palomino*, a Man of Substance and Valour, press'd the Corregidor to quell that Commotion, taking Informations, and punishing the Ring-leaders. The Corregidor excus'd himself, alledging, that when he thought to have done the King good Service, in the Case of *Francis Hernandez Giron*,

*Giron*, the Royal Court revers'd his Proceedings, signifying, that they had been groundd on some private Pique. *Don John de Mendoza* came just at this Time into the City, and enquiring of *Francis de Miranda*, what that Disturbance meant, he told him, that the Soldiers would have revolted already, and murder'd Captain *John Alonso Palomino* and *Ferome Costilla*, had not he obstructed it: which the said *Palomino* being inform'd of, he return'd Thanks to *Miranda*, who assur'd him it was true, and that the Soldiers were in such want, that they could not avoid rising in Arms, and even taking him for their Leader. Captain *Palomino* was much out of Countenance that any such Thing should be said to him, and that he should be thought a Man capable of ingaging in being false to God and the King: Then inquiring of *Alonso de Barrionuevo* and *Melgarejo* how those Affairs stood, he found it was true that they were concerting to make an Insurrection, and would have done it before, but that they waited to know the Event of the Rebellion of the *Contreras* at *Panama*.

---

## C H A P. III.

*The Continuation of the Troubles and Disorders at Cuzco, till the End of the Year 1550.*

THE Order of the Royal Court at *Lima*, for dismissing the *Indians* from the Mines of *Potosi*, caus'd the Citizens of *Cuzco* to assemble  
at

## The HISTORY of *America*. 289

at the Corregidor's House, to seek some Redress, for it griev'd them very much, and accordingly they agreed to petition against it, and that the Lawyers should draw up the Petition, who requir'd, that all the Citizens should sign what they drew up; but because some Subscriptions were wanting, the Corregidor tore the Petition, as it was said, that he might lay hold of that Pretence, to obstruct petitioning. That Night two Soldiers, whose Names were *Alonso de Avila* and *Alonso de Montalvo*, gave Information to Captain *Palomino*, that the Soldiers, by the advice of *Don Pedro Portocarrero*, design'd to repair to the Corregidor's House, to take him for their Leader, and rebel; and then they would summon the Inhabitants, and kill him and *Ferome Costilla* in their Houses, which was to be put in execution that very Night. *Palomino* and *Costilla* consulted together, whether they should give Credit to that Intelligence, and had their Horses in Readiness for what might happen; then discoursing about it with *Don John de Mendoza*, he said, he did not question the Truth of it, and design'd to make his escape, and if he stay'd, it was because he depended on the Friendship of *Francis de Miranda*. Hereupon *Palomino* and *Costilla* departed the City, with their Horses and Arms, and having pass'd the Bridge of *Apurima*, burnt it, to prevent being pursu'd, halting at *Abancay*, to hear what was done at *Cuzco*. When it was known that *Palomino* and *Costilla*, the two principal Citizens were gone, the Confusion increas'd; the Corregidor assembled the Magistrates, and all being sensible of the Danger they were in, some would have abandon'd the City; but others more courageous said, that would be a scandalous Action, and ought not to be done, their Duty be-

ing to defend the Place; whereupon the others laying aside Fear, gave into their Opinion, consulted what was to be done to that Effect, and resolv'd to send Advice, that the City still continu'd loyal to the King, for fear lest any contrary Intelligence might have been carry'd; but for as much as there was no passing the River *Apurima*, it being then known that the Bridge was burnt, *Don Pedro Portocarrero*, who much insisted on this Method, sent away some *Indians* of his own, with Letters for the Court, who return'd with advice, that there were many Men on the other Side of the River, which put the City into more Confusion; some saying, That *John Alonzo Palomino* was there in Rebellion, and Forces ought to be sent against him; but that above all the City ought to be secur'd, lest he should attempt to surprize it in the Night, and it was propos'd to send to him, to require him to lay down his Arms, and return to his House; and at the same Time *John Julio de Ojeda* was sent to *Lima*, with Advice of the Posture of Affairs.

Whilst the City was in this Confusion, dreading the Hour when the Mischief would break out, *Don John de Mendoza*, who excus'd himself, alledged, that the Soldiers had a great Opinion of him, and if he offer'd to go away, they would pursue and murder him. He then prevail'd upon *Miranda* to write a Letter in Favour of him to the Court, the Purport whereof was to be that *Francis de Miranda* was among the Mutineers, because they made him their Leader, for the Rebellion was unavoidable; but that if they would send a Pardon, he would retrieve all, and punish the Guilty, provided the Court would give him a Commission to that Purpose. The Letter was  
written,



*The HISTORY of America.* 291

written, and they agreed to write to one another in Ciphers, and give Intelligence of all Affairs. These Contrivances and Insolencies are usual, when Soldiers, bred in Liberty are idle; for then they fall into Discord and extravagant Notions, especially if there happens to be among them any daring talkative Person, fond of Innovation, whom they greedily give Ear to, and the more willingly if he promises them Wealth and Ease. When *Don John de Mendoza* had got *Miranda's* Letter to the Royal Court, he went away to the Corregidor, and told him, that he was resolv'd to depart *Cuzco*, advising him to do the same, because the Mischief would break out immediately, and he would be the first Man murther'd. The Corregidor answer'd, that, if he had a Mind to be gone, he might do it in God's Name, and acquaint the Court with what was doing, for tho' he were sure to be kill'd, he would not quit his Post, because it would be a Reflection upon him. *Mendoza* went away to inculcate the same to others of the Citizens, who bid him speak plain, and declare what that Mutiny was, and how grounded. He bid them go out of the City, and he would tell them; they reply'd, they would not till they saw the City in an Uproar,; and he rejoin'd, that the Infurrection was visible enough, since *Miranda*, *Barrionuevo* and *Melgarejo* were appointed General, Lieutenant General, and Major, and that he would be gone, having a Letter from the General to the Judges. He added some more Secrets that had pass'd between him and *Miranda*, and that he did not think the Corregidor's Intentions were good. To others he plainly declar'd, that the Corregidor design'd to revolt and possess himself of the City; to others, that the Soldiers would

## 292 The HISTORY of America.

kill the Corregidor; and sometimes that *Don Pedro Portocarrero* was the chief Ringleader of the Rebellion; and thus he went about persuading all to quit the City; but not being able to prevail with any one, he went away alone, and then all his Intentions were laid open, because every man reported what he had said to him in private, and both Soldiers and Citizens pray'd the Corregidor to send after and make an Example of him; who accordingly sent *Don Martin de Guzman* one way, and *Alonso de Barrionuevo* another, with some Men to secure him, but he escap'd them.

Notwithstanding the wicked Devices of *Don John de Mendoza* were discover'd at *Cuzco*, the Practices for raising a Mutiny were still carry'd on, and to that Purpose it was given out, that the Licenciado *Gama* would shortly be there, with a Commission from the Royal Court, to turn out of the City all such Soldiers as had not Leave from the President *Gasca* to stay there; and that he had already executed that Commission at *Arequipa* and *Guamanga*. This Report very much alarm'd them, and most of all their Leaders *Miranda*, *Barrionuevo* and *Melgarejo*, who rav'd and threatened, which work'd up those Men to such an Height, as to resolve to meet the next Day under Arms, in the Market-Place, and to plunder the City, since they had so favourable an Opportunity offer'd them, to mend their wretched Condition, the Manner of the Execution being refer'd to the three aforesaid Chiefs. When the Day came, being the 28<sup>th</sup> of *November* 1550, *Miranda* thought fit to find out some subtle Artifice to excuse himself, in case that Affair did not succeed as he wish'd; and to this End, he went about break of Day to the House of the Licenciado

cenciate *Guerrero*, who was his Friend, pretending to be in a Fright, as if the Soldiers would have kill'd him; sent for *Peter Sanchez*, a Priest, and told him, he had like to have been murder'd, for refusing to be concern'd in a Mutiny; and that not being safe in his own House he was come thither, wherefore he desir'd to go and acquaint the Corregidor, that he might put a Stop to it. Then having sent for a Notary, he made a solemn Protestation, of his having sent the Priest to acquaint the Corregidor, that the People were ready to rebel, and that if he should be compell'd to appear among the Rebels, or to say or act any thing unseemly, it would be in order to be the better able to serve the King, and discover the Designs of those People, as he had before writ to the Royal Court at *Lima*, by *Don John de Mendoza*, which he declar'd for his own Safety, and that his not discovering the Persons concern'd was for fear they would kill him. The Clergyman told it in private to the Corregidor, who, as all such Affairs are to be weigh'd and consulted, sent for some Citizens, and it was propos'd, either to stand upon their Defence in the Market-Place, or to fly; but after much contending, the Corregidor would have them to defend themselves manfully, for tho' that should prove a false Information, as that had been of Captain *Palomino* and *Costilla*, which he always affirm'd, because the principal Actors in those Affairs were Bablers, and most wicked Men; yet he thought it convenient to shew the Soldiers how ready the Citizens were to have recourse to Arms, whensoever there was Occasion.

The Corregidor then went out arm'd with some of the Citizens, and *Don Pedro Portocarrero* told

him, that the Soldiers were ill-dispos'd, being inform'd that the Licenciate *Gama* was coming with an Order from the Royal Court, to secure and send them away into *Spain*, in order to prevent any farther Mutinies, for which Reason he should consider how to put a stop to that Evil. He consulted with the Alcalde *Mazuelas*, and some Citizens, and it was agreed, that the Corregidor should engage his Word, that the said Order should not be put in Execution, whilst he held his Office, but would permit them to petition against it; and *Don Peter Portocarrero* and *James de Silva* were nominated to go to *Guamanga*, and intreat the Licenciate *de la Gama*, to deliver them his Order to quiet the Disturbance at *Cuzco*; but the Magistrates would not give those Messengers Credentials, for fear of being thought to oppose the King's Commands; however, for the Satisfaction of the Soldiers they had a blank Sheet of Paper, seal'd with a Supercription on it. As soon as this was done, the Corregidor was inform'd, that 180 Soldiers, fifty of them Musketeers, were at *Portocarrero's* House, and after debating, whether they should be attack'd there, or to stay for them to make some attempt, it was resolv'd, that *Antony de Quinones* and *James de Silva* should go from the Corregidor to assure them that they should not be turn'd out of the City, nor any Harm done them. Those Messengers found nobody at *Portocarrero's* House, and being told, that they were in *St. Dominick's Square*, they went and found them all in small Parcels, told them what the Corregidor had directed, assuring them in his Name and that of the Citizens, that the Order they were so uneasy at should not be put in Execution, nor they expell'd the City, with which they



they seem'd to be somewhat pacify'd; but consulting about the Resolution taken of sending the two Messengers to the Licenciado *Gama*, they would not consent that *Portocarrero* should go, looking upon him as their principal Protector, and apprehending lest for want of Intelligence *Gama* should surprize and secure them. Hereupon they sent to tell the Corregidor, that he should nominate another instead of *Portocarrero*, who should not go without a good Number of Soldiers to guard him, and that they should be put in Possession of the Corregidor's House, that he might not draw together any Forces against them; declaring, that in case he took any other Course, they would do as they thought fit. They acquainted *Portocarrero* with their Resolution, desiring he would shew them the City Council's Letter to *Gama*; but he excus'd himself, alledging, that the Letter being from the Council, and deliver'd to him seal'd up, he should not act as became a Man of Honour if he open'd it; for since he had seen it writ, and was satisfy'd, they ought to be so too, and was much offended at them, for that he having shewn himself so zealous for them, they should so little confide in him. Thus they desisted, and went away well satisfy'd for having acquainted *Portocarrero* with their Resolution.

When the Soldiers were departed, *Portocarrero* sent to acquaint the Corregidor, that they would not permit him to go to *Gama*, and the Corregidor desir'd him to come to his House, who going thither was follow'd by many Soldiers. The Corregidor desir'd him not to let them go up, and tho' he endeavour'd it, above 40 did, and among them *Miranda*, *Barrionuevo* and *Melgarejo*. *Miranda* impudently told the Corregidor, that if

he intended to punish him, he might do it; for sometimes they made a Devil of him, sometimes a General, and sometimes a Colonel; so that he might secure, and punish him. The Corregidor discreetly turn'd off that Discourse, bidding him talk of something else, since that Affair was not then in Agitation. The Soldiers said, It was an Act of Ingratitude to turn them out of the Country they had gain'd for the King at the Expence of their Blood; that it would be a Shame to them to be sent poor and miserable into *Spain*, and that they would not permit *Portocarrero* to depart that Place. The Corregidor answer'd, That *Antony de Quinones* might go in his stead, and that, as for turning them out of the Country, he did not think there was any Danger of it. They desir'd him to give Leave for them to assemble in *Portocarrero's* House, or at the Monastery of *St. Dominick*, or to stay and be his Guard. He very boldly reply'd, That he had no need of their Guard, for the Rod of his Office was a sufficient Guard to him, and since nobody disturb'd them, they had no Occasion to assemble; however, if they had a Mind to be in either of those Places they had nam'd he would not oppose it; nevertheless he advis'd them not to commit any Disorders; bidding them remember what came of those that had rebell'd against their King, and charg'd *Portocarrero* to keep among them, and see that they were peaceable; wherein he shew'd singular Prudence, sometimes making use of Patience, and Moderation, without loss of Reputation, and again appearing undaunted. That same Night many Soldiers repair'd to *Portocarrero's* House, declaring they would soon plunder the City, to relieve their Wants; but he desir'd them to be gone,

for

for there should be no Night Meetings in his House; which Words rais'd Jealousies among them, and then follow'd Discord and Confusion, and *Portocarrero* desir'd *Barrionuevo* to turn out those Men, since they were uneasy without Cause. Hereupon three of them rush'd in, and bid him have a Care what he said, because many Gentlemen were there; he answer'd, he desir'd them to go to Bed, because he was not well; and accordingly they went away in a Passion, cursing, and complaining against him. In short they dispers'd; and the next Day the Corregidor caus'd Proclamation to be made, that no Soldiers should assemble together above two in Number, either by Day or Night, upon Pain of Death; and thus ended this Year 1550; we will leave those Mutiniers awhile, and conclude this Book with what happened in the Province of *Venezuela*.

---

C H A P. IV.

*Revolt of the Blacks of Venezuela, and Santa Marta, and the founding of the City de los Reyes, or of the King's, in the Vale of Upar.*

THERE was so great a Number of Blacks in the Governments of *Santa Marta*, and *Venezuela*, and so little Precaution was us'd in the Management of them, or rather the Liberty they had was so great, being allow'd the use of Arms, which they much delight in, that their natural Fierce-

## 298 *The HISTORY of America.*

Fiercenefs and Arrogance prompting, a fmall Number of the moft polifh'd, who valu'd themfelves for their Valour and Gaiety, resolv'd to refcue themfelves from Servitude, and become their own Mafters, believing that they might live at their own will among the *Indians*. Thofe few fummoning others, who like a thoughtlefs brutifh People were not capable of making any Reflection, but always ready at the Beck of thofe of their own Colour, for whom they had any Refpect and Esteem, they readily comply'd, afsembling to the Number of about 250, and repairing to the Settlement of *New Segovia*, divided themfelves into Companies, appointed Captains, and faluted one King, who had the moft Boldnefs, and Refolution to affume that Title; and he intimating, that they fhould all be rich, and Lords of the Country by deftroying the *Spaniards*, affign'd every one the *Spanifh* Woman that fhould fall to his Lot, with other fuch like insolent Projects, and Machinations. The Fame of this Commotion was foon fpread abroad throughout all the Cities of thofe two Governments, where Preparations were fpeedily made for marching againft thofe Blacks, as well to prevent their being joyn'd by the reft of their Countrymen that were not yet gone to them, as to obviate the many Mifchiefs thofe Barbarians might occasion in the Country. In the mean Time, the Inhabitants of *Tucuyo*, fent Succours to the City of *Segovia*, which was but newly founded; and the very Night that Relief arriv'd there, the Blacks, who had got Intelligence of it, resolv'd to be beforehand with the *Spaniards*; and to the End that greater Forces coming in they might not grow too hard for them, they fell upon thofe *Spaniards*, killing five or fix of them and a Clergyman;



gyman; however, the Success did not answer their Expectation, for they being upon their Guard, readily took the Alarm, fought the Blacks courageously, and kill'd a considerable Number. The rest perceiving that their Contrivance had miscarri'd retir'd. The next Morning Capt. *James de Loffado* arriv'd there, with 40 Men, from the Government of *Venezuela*, and judging that no Time ought to be lost in that Affair, he march'd towards the Blacks with the Men he had brought, and those that were before in *New Segovia*. Perceiving that they had quitted the Post they had first taken, and were retir'd to a strong Place on the Mountain, he pursu'd, overtook, and attack'd them, and tho' they drew up standing upon their Defence, he soon routed, and put them all to the Sword, sparing none but their Women, and some Female *Indians* they had got, with whom he return'd to *Segovia*, and those Provinces were deliver'd from much Uneasiness.

The Men that had been got ready at *Santa Marta* to serve against the Blacks, were under the Command of *Ferdinand de Santa Ana*, a Native of the Town of *Zaphra*, and being come into the Vale of *Upur*, so call'd from a Powerful Cazique that was Lord of it, the Name signifying Dry River, or Dry Water, those Men liking the Situation, resolv'd not to return to *Santa Marta*, but to settle there, and call'd the Colony *Los Reyes*, or the King's, because it was founded on the Feast of the *Epiphany*, so nam'd in *Spanish*, from the Supposition that the three wise Men were Kings. The Inhabitants of this Country say, that the Summer Months, being *December*, *January*, *February*, *March*, and *April*, are subject to great Heats, the Breezes then prevailing for the most Part; and during

during the three Winter Months there are very great Rains; and that the Mountain being near by, and always cover'd with Snow, that Place is much infested with Agues, and Defluxions. From North to South this Territory is very Mountainous, and has many Rivers and Brooks, but has great Plenty of Pasture, and produces any Thing that is sown in it. All the Province is full of warlike *Indians*, that were very hard to subdue at first, by reason of the small Number of the *Spaniards*, who are since increas'd, and the Natives diminish'd, because they have several Times had the Small Pox, and Fluxes generally raging among them, and they would then, like Barbarians, run into the Rivers, which soon kill'd them, besides that their way of living was brutal, they were averse to Labour, and had no sort of Polite Government among them; but only gave Credit to, and obey'd their *Mahones*, as they call'd them, who were Sorcerers that deluded them, not only conniving at, but encouraging many Sorts of Vices, and among them, the Knowledge of many Venomous Herbs, which they without any Scruple gave to their Masters, or to one another, upon any trivial Distaste or Offence, which carry'd off very many of them.

The City *de los Reyes*, or of the King's, is 60 Leagues from *Santa Marta*, and subject to its Government. It is 180 Leagues distant from *Santa Fe de Bogota*, by the Way of *Ocaña*, and much about the same along the River, and the like from *Zamalameque*, to which its Territory joyns about the half way, the River *Cesar* being their Boundary; but by Land they are not above 50 Leagues asunder, and the River *de la Hacha* is 30 Leagues from it. This City is seated near a great  
 3 River,

The HISTORY of *America*. 301

River, call'd *Guatapori*, signifying Cold River, because it is so, as coming down from the Snowy Mountains, and occasions the aforesaid Defluxions, and Fluxes, which are cur'd with the Bark of a Tree like Cinnamon, given to drink powder'd in Water, which is a certain Cure even for a bloody Flux; the Tree is call'd *Corapa*, that is, a bitter Thing, for the Wood and Bark are so. The River *Guatapori*, which falls from the Mountain, is lost in that of *Cesar*, about a League from the City; that of *Cesar* retaining that Name runs away to the Southward, and is by the Natives call'd *Pompatao*, that is, Lord of all the Rivers, because many others fall into it, and among them the *Badillo*, which is very large, and proceeds from three Lakes, whose Water is green; the *Indians* call it *Socniga*, which signifies Plentiful, by reason of the vast Quantity of Fish kill'd in it with a Root that makes them drunk, and this River falls into the *Cesar*. Farther on another is lost in it, call'd of *Anyamas*, which runs through a plain Country for about 70 Leagues. All the Banks of the River *Cesar* are a fertil Soil. Twenty Leagues from the City *de los Reyes*, or of the King's, are three large Sources of Water in a Triangle amidst Rocks, about 300 Paces distant from each other, where the *Indians* believ'd as a most certain Truth, that there was a monstrous great Serpent that devour'd abundance of Men, which several *Spaniards* endeavour'd to have a Sight of, and said they had seen the Truth of it, and heard a prodigious Noise in the Water; and the Natives were so positive in this Notion, that there was no dwelling, or Habitation in all the Country round about it. There are other Sources of Bitumen in that Territory, which holds any Bird, tho' ever

### 302 *The HISTORY of America.*

ever so large, and the *Indians* use it instead of Tar for their Fishing Lines, and other Matters that require it. There are abundance of wild Fruit Trees in that Country, as Plantans, Guayabos, and others; as also the great Tree call'd *Tchagua*, which signifies a sweet Thing, producing Fruit like a Bean, from the Nib whereof another Fruit grows out, like an O, the Taste of it like Raisins; but the Beans are kept 'till thorough dry, when they are ground, and large Loaves made of them, which is good Food. Of *Spanish* Fruit there are Grapes, Figs, Pomegranates, Sweet Lemons, Oranges, and several other Sorts; every Thing that belongs to Kitchen Herbs, great Store of *Indian* Wheat, and as much Cotton as serves the *Indians* for cloathing. They make use of the *Scorzonera* Root against the Bite, or Sting of a Snake, or Viper, eating the Root raw, and laying the Leaf on the Bite, which cures them, and the *Spaniards* make use of the same Medicine; and if the Natives can take the Snake that has bit them, they immediately eat the Head and the Tail raw, looking upon it as a more certain Remedy. They also make much use of Tobacco against Rheums, Defluxions, and Pains in the Head, taking it reduc'd to Powder, or Dust up the Nose; they also drink the Juice of it, which purges them, and the *Spaniards* do the same. There was formerly in this Country a vast Multitude of Tigers and Lions, insomuch that they consum'd the Natives, and the Cattle; for it has been known that one Lion has destroy'd above 200 Sheep in one Night, as they were put up in a Pen. In the Year 1540 there was an Epidemical Distemper of the Measles, and at the same Time a Plague of Locusts, so wonderful numerous, that they devour'd all the Grass, all the



*The HISTORY of America.* 303

Plains where they lighted looking as if they had been burnt; and it was concluded for certain, that all the Grass the Locusts had touch'd poison'd whatever Creatures did feed on it; the reason for this Belief being, that immediately after the Number of Lions, Tigers, Deer, and Dantas was very much diminish'd. On the Mountains of this Country there are many Copper and Lead Mines, and good Indications of Silver, none of which are wrought, because the Inhabitants are not able; but they have prodigious Head of black Cattle, and Flocks of Sheep, which are their Support; nor do they want good Breeds of Horses, and any other Thing would thrive if improv'd.

*The End of the Seventh BOOK.*



THE



THE  
General HISTORY  
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of  
*AMERICA, &c.*



DECAD V. BOOK VIII.



CHAP. I.

*The Discovery of the Chichimeca Indians;  
Description of their Country and  
Wars with them.*



It will be now proper to say something of the Northern Parts, where some mention has been formerly made of the *Indians* call'd *Chichimecas*, in the Kingdom of *New-Spain*, but in regard that they much infested those Parts with Wars, a more ample Account shall be here given of them. The Borders of the Country of these *Chichimecas*, are thirty

## The HISTORY of America. 305

thirty Leagues to the Westward from the City of *Mexico*, and along them are the Towns of *Quentaro*, *Acanuara*, *Turirapundaro* and *Sichu*, as also those of *St. Michael*, *St. Philip* and *Salaya*, the Mines of *Guanaxuato*, and the Town of *Leon*; and proceeding directly forward with the Course of the Sun, that Country extends many Leagues to the *South-Sea* along which Coast lie at a greater or lesser Distance the Provinces of the *New Kingdom of Galicia*, *Culiacan*, *Copala*, *Chiametla*, and still farther on the Island of *California*, to which the first *Marques del Valle Cortes* reach'd, and gave it that Name. This Province of the *Chichimecas* and several others lie North and South; to the Southward all is inhabited and subdu'd by the *Spaniards*, but how far this Country extends to the North, and North West, is not known. In the broad Northern Part between the two Seas are the Provinces of *Florida*, *Cibola*, *Quivira*, *Guaſteca* and *New Mexico*, besides many others not yet known, as being too remote and difficult of Access. The nearest Places to those unknown, now inhabited by *Spaniards* to the Westward, are the Mines of the *Zacatecas*, *Panuco*, *el Fresnillo*, *St. Martin*, *el Sombrerete*, *las Nieves*, and many more Mines, as also the Government of *Francis de Ybarra*, with its Mines of *Chametla*, *Endehe*, *Santa Barbara*, *Guadiana*, and the new mines, all enclos'd by those Provinces call'd *Chichimecas*, under which Denomination are included many Nations that speak different Languages, as the *Pamies*, *Capuzes*, *Samues*, *Zancas*, *Maiolias*, *Guamares*, *Gua-chichiles* and others, all distinct Races, tho' much alike in Manners and Behaviour. What the *Spaniards* have discover'd of these Provinces as well to the Westward as to the Northward extends above 200 Leagues

### 306 *The HISTORY of America.*

from the Towns of St. *Michael* and St. *Philip*, a very fruitful Soil and temperate Climate, rather cold than hot, and more dry than damp, for which reason it is extraordinary healthy, and the Nights and Days are almost equal all the Year about, the greatest Difference between them being three Hours at the proper Seasons. There is generally but little Rain, and tho' some Years less happens to fall than usual, there is no great miss of it, because what little there is suffices, and the Goodness of the Land supplies all Defects; so that no Famine has ever been known in all the Parts hitherto discover'd to have been occasion'd by want of Rain, which commonly begins to fall in *June*. This Province is very commodious for Colonies, by Reason of the great Profit may be made by breeding of Cattle, and sowing *Spanish* or *Indian* Wheat, and *Cochineal*, and of the Hills abounding in Silver Mines. To turn to the Southward and Eastward, where the Land runs along to the Provinces of *Guatemala* and *Nicaragua*, towards the Borders of *Peru*, it is there narrow, the distance between the two Seas being small, and the Middle or Ridge of it is the best and healthiest, for near the Coasts it is hot and sickly, generally affording but few Mines. As far as the *Spaniards* have travell'd in the Country of the *Chichimecas*, they have found the Remains of large Towns, and of the Lands having been well cultivated whence it is suppos'd to have been once possess'd by People addicted to labour and building, which the *Chichimecas* are utter Strangers to, for they have no manner of Structure, nor do they till the Ground, or but very little, and in few places. Opinions vary concerning the People that were first possess'd of those Lands; but it seems most probable,



## *The HISTORY of America.* 307

probable, that the *Chichimecas*, who are Archers, expell'd from thence the *Otomies* who are notable Husbandmen, and oblig'd them to withdraw towards *Mexico*; and perhaps it might be abandon'd on Account of some great Famine, and that those Archers might possess themselves of it, and continue there; for it is hard to believe that they could, with only their Arrows, drive away a People that was settled in good Towns, where they might have defended themselves.

All the several Nations of the *Chichimecas* have their known Lands and Boundaries, and are frequently at War, to hinder others from coming within their Liberties to hunt, or to gather the Fruit growing within their Territories. They have no manner of Temple, Priest nor Law, nor human Policy of Government. If any Man takes away a maiden Daughter, without her Father's Consent, tho' it be to marry her, he is shot with Arrows. They marry their nearest Relations, except Sisters. If the Bride proves a Maid, the Marriage stands good, if not, it is void; every Man has but one Wife, whom they may put away upon some Occasions, and marry again. The Men went quite naked, and the Women were wrap'd about with Deer-Skins, from the Waste to the Knees; they are all nasty, but well shap'd, and being continually on the Mountains, are commonly very nimble, but being given to sloth, are easily tir'd with any Labour. At the first, when the Country of the *Chichimecas* began to be resorted to by the *Spaniards*, which happen'd on Account of the Mines of the *Zacatecas*, and of some Farms of Cows, that began to be establish'd on those Frontiers, these *Indians*, without doing any harm, were wont to come forward into the

Roads, to beg some Victuals, and some small sort of Rayment, for at that Time they were satisfy'd with little, and did put a great Value on it; and it is thought if Care had been then taken to settle some of them, it might have been easily done; but the *Spaniards* not regarding it then, nor imagining what would afterwards happen, omitted it, and the *Indians*, either following their own natural Inclination, or through Covetousness of cloathing, when they had found the Convenience of it, or on Account of some ill usage receiv'd from the *Spaniards*, began to mutiny and do mischief; for which Reason it became requisite to send Forces against them, as has been seen when the Adelantado *Don Pedro de Alvarado* was kill'd, and at other Times, when some of them were made Slaves, and other Punishments inflicted.

The arrival of some Commanders employ'd to subdue the revolted, contributed to the Mischief, they making Prisoners of such as had committed no Offence, and drawing up Informations against the Innocent, making their Soldiers, who had their Share in the Profit of those Slaves, to pass as Witnesses; by which formal Proceedings they impos'd on the Viceroy, who therefore return'd them Thanks for those Facts, which if they had known the Truth, they would have punish'd. Upon these and other such like Motives those *Indians* began to be disgusted, and at length declar'd themselves Enemies; having neither then nor since been ever truly encourag'd to live in Peace; and if any of them did admit of it, and afterwards revolted, the Fault was not altogether theirs, but of the Soldiers, who for the sake of their own Interest were averse to Peace, rather choosing,

*The HISTORY of America.* 309

choosing to fish in troubled Waters; besides that, the *Indians* being naturally much given to change, the least thing they look upon as a Wrong done them is sufficient to occasion a rising, especially when back'd by such Hardships as have been mention'd. However long Experience has shown, that they very much confide in any Person that once does them a Kindness, and always acts sincerely; but if a Man once deceives them, tho' it be a Matter of very little Moment, they never after trust him, and if they have an Opportunity to do it with safety, will certainly kill him; for they are extraordinary revengeful, which natural Disposition of theirs has been improv'd by seeing themselves persecuted, and their Wives and Children sometimes taken, when they use all Wiles to obtain their Revenge, since they cannot do it by open Force. To this Effect they have call'd in their Neighbours and Allies, and even the People up the Country, labouring to induce some to revolt, who had never entertain'd such Thoughts; and when they have not been able to prevail, have carried away the Wives of the peaceable *Indians*, instead of their own, and persuaded the Christian *Indians* living among them, that there were other *Indians* their Enemies, who rode on Horses, and were arm'd like the *Spaniards*, who kill'd Men, Women and Children, which Invention they made use of, to the End that when the *Spaniards* came against them, the Christians that were Captives among them might fly, and they being ignorant *Indians*, easily gave credit to those Fictions, and fled with them. The *Chichimecas* made Use of another no less crafty Artifice, which was, that all the inland Nations being, as well as themselves, extraordinary Lovers of Beef, they

X 3 carry'd

### 310 *The HISTORY of America*

carry'd them some Cows, and promis'd they should have many more, if they would come help to take them; which they accordingly did, and were aiding to them in their Excursions, and Depredations, which incited them against the *Spaniards*, returning home cloath'd, and loaded with the Plunder; whereas they came out hungry, and naked; they were always ready for the sake of the Booty, whenever the *Chichimecas* call'd upon them again, which increas'd the Numbers of the Enemies to the *Spaniards*. Afterwards they did not only come when call'd, but for the sake of the Cows, whereof there are always great Numbers on the Frontiers, they of their own Accord drew near to those Parts where the Cows were, so prevailing is the Necessity of seeking for Food; because the *Indians* in their own Countries neither breed Cattle, nor till the Land, and consequently have neither Bread, nor Flesh, unless they happen to kill a Deer, which is but seldom, and then many are to eat of it, which made them resort to those Parts where the Cows are so numerous, those that were next to the Frontiers giving them free Passage, and bearing them Company, for the aforesaid Reasons; and because they brought them Arrows, and other Things, which they truck'd or barter'd for the cloathing they took from the *Spaniards*, being well pleas'd at their coming to increase the Number of the Enemies to the Christians.

When the War with the *Chichimecas*, of whose Country and Manners as much has been said as may suffice, was once broke out, on such Motives as have been mention'd, they made several Excursions, doing much Harm, 'till this Year 1550, six *Spaniards* going from *Mexico* arriv'd on the 20th of *June* at the Town of *Zatlan*, whence



## The HISTORY of *America*. 311

three of them proceeded to the City of *Compostela*, and the other three, being *Francis Hernandez*, *Damian de Avila*, and *Peter Vazquez*, went on to pass the River *Omitlan*, and at the Town found the *Indians* in an Uproar, and in a warlike Posture, those People designing to destroy them, for having embrac'd Christianity, submitting to the *Spaniards*, paying Tribute to the King, and refusing to withdraw with them into the Mountains; alledging, That the *Spaniards* had no Authority to make War, because the King did not allow of it, and had sent Judges to punish those that should war, which they could not do, without first sending into *Spain* to ask Leave. The Inhabitants of the aforesaid Town desir'd the three above-nam'd *Spaniards* to go with them to a Place call'd *Vaorita*, to assist them, as they were Christians; for otherwise neither they, nor the Inhabitants of the Vale of *Cintiquipag* could escape. Two of the *Spaniards* agreed to go with them, the third being then sick. When they came into the Vale of *Vaorita*, which is three Leagues from their Town, they found all the Inhabitants in Arms, having sent away the useless Persons to the Mountain, the Enemy having burnt another Town; but so many Christians were assembled, that if they divided themselves into several Bodies, they might encompass them. The Christian *Indians* being thus in the Town of *Vaorita*, on the 17th of *June*, at break of Day, their Enemies appear'd in one Body, consisting of about 1500 Men, with mighty Cries. The Christians made shew of flying, and the Enemy pursu'd, discharging Flights of Arrows. At this Time *Francis Hernandez*, and *Peter Vazquez* came forward on their Horses, calling upon St. *James* the Apostle, and an *Indian* perceiving that *Peter Vaz-*

quez was not in Armour, the Commander of the *Chichimecas* cry'd, Kill him, he is an *Indian*, thinking he had been the Caziue of *Omitlan*, who had an Horse, and *Peter Vasquez* run him thorough with his Spear, and another by him; whereupon those *Indians* began to slacken, and the Christians returning to the Charge, the Enemy retir'd; *Francis Hernandez* having on his Part kill'd two principal *Indians*, and charging the rest boldly, striking many thorough with his Spear; when another Body of Christians advancing, the Enemy fled downright into a Wood, thorough which they proceeded to the River. The two *Spaniards* kill'd eleven of them, and the Christian *Indians* many more; and it was very remarkable that tho' whole Showers of Arrows flew about them and their Horses, not one touch'd them. Many more such Excursions were made by the *Chichimecas*, to oblige the Christians that had submitted to revolt, and make their Way into the cultivated Country, to possess themselves of the Corn and Cows. This is what hapned 'till the present Year in those Parts, from whence we must turn again into the South.

C H A P. II.

*Actions in Chile during the Absence of the Governour, and after his Return thither.*

IT is long since any Account has been given of the Kingdom of *Chile*, which must be all here mention'd together. When the Marques *Francis Pizarro* gave the Government of the Kingdom of *Chile* to *Peter de Valdivia*, *Peter Sanchez de Hoz* oppos'd it, producing a Commission from the King, constituting him Governor of all the Country that should be conquer'd along the Coast of the *South Sea*, beyond the Marques's Government, and what had been bestow'd on a Gentleman of *Truxillo*, call'd *Camargo*, Brother to the Bishop of *Placencia*, who was at the Expence of the Discovery, suppos'd then to be all that is now known to lye from the River of *Maule* as far as *Chile*. The Marques having pass'd the Grant to *Peter de Baldivia*, and the King's Commission not well worded, he order'd *Peter Sanchez de Hoz* to go along with *Peter de Baldivia*, who would be kind to him, and to that Effect gave him a Recommendation. He going accordingly, was at the founding of the Colony of *Santiago*, had Lands, and *Indians* given him; but *Baldivia* was always very jealous of him. When *Baldivia* went away to *Peru*, *Peter Sanchez*, relying on the Authority of the King's Commission he had, and the Assistance of some that put him upon it, laid a Design to murder *Francis de Villagra*, whom *Baldivia* had

### 314 The HISTORY of *America*.

appointed his Lieutenant, who being inform'd of it, immediately seiz'd, and beheaded him, hanging one *Romero*, who was a Promoter of the Disturbance, and thus all was quiet. When the Governour return'd, he approv'd of what had been done, and soon after receiv'd Advice, that the *Indians* of the Vale of *Copiapo* had kill'd Capt. *John Bon*, with forty *Spaniards* of one of the Companies that came from *Peru*, and were travelling thorough the Country; as also that they had kill'd all the Inhabitants and Soldiers that were in the City of *Serena*, which they had burnt, not one Man escaping. *Baldivia* sent Capt. *Francis de Aguirre* with a good Number of Men to rebuild that Town, who did it in the Place where it now stands, chastiz'd the rebellious *Indians*, and those of the Vale of *Copiapo*, wherein he was assisted by Fortune, his Men being few for so great an Enterprize.

The Governour *Baldivia* having 150 Men, continu'd his Discovery, and Conquest of the Provinces of *Arauco*, and *Tucapel*, and others adjoyning, and coming into the Vale of *Andalien* founded the City of the *Conception*. Some Time after a great Number of *Indians* assembled from all the Neighbourhood, and regularly drawn up in several Bodies of Pikemen and Archers, attack'd him, whom he fought during a considerable Part of the Night, and they set him so hard, that he was near being overthrown; for they gain'd most of his Lodgment; however, by his Valour, and Experience in the Art of War, he vanquish'd them, and kill'd many. Thence he went to the *Conception*, where he built a Fort, which the *Indians* besieg'd, and fought a whole Day, and were routed with much Slaughter. Having gain'd this Victory,



## The HISTORY of *America*. 315

tory, he sent Capt. *Jerome de Alderete* with twenty Horse to take a better View of the Town of *Arauco* and *Tucapel*. He forcing over the great River of *Biobio*, where it is 1500 Paces wide, came into the Provinces of *Arauco* and *Tucapel*, and seeing such large Towns, and so much till'd Land, and that the Natives had abandon'd the Plains, and were retir'd to a Ridge of Mountains, and considering that he had too small a Number of Men for so populous a Country, cross'd the Hill, and came to *Talcamavida*; after which having rang'd along the River *Biobio*, admiring the many Towns he saw, return'd to joyn the Governour *Baldivia*, who having been inform'd of many more, besides those that *Alderete* had seen, resolv'd to put himself in order to take a View of them himself the next Year.

The City of the *Conception* is seated on the Edge of the Water, where is a good Bay, and Harbour, the Territory abounding in Gold Mines, from which much of that Metal has been drawn, and it extends from the River *Maule* to that of *Itaten*, otherwise call'd *Itataya*, the Coast running twenty three Leagues S. S. W. The Port is well shelter'd, being in the Shape of an Horse-shoe, as the Name imports. From thence to the Bay of *Penco* four Leagues South, and there the City of the *Conception* stands in 36 Deg. 45 Min. Lat. Two small Rivers fall into the Bay, the least of them runs thorough the City, the other is to the Southward of it, call'd *Llandalien*. When *Baldivia* had resolv'd to found this City, he was oppos'd by the *Indians*, which occasion'd a Battle, and he made a great Slaughter among them on the Bank of this River, as appears by the Bones there still to be seen. From the narrow Shore on which the City  
stands,

### 316 *The HISTORY of America.*

stands, there are steep Ascents, which almost enclose the Bay, the Mouth whereof is to the North, and the City is to the South, at the Bottom of the Bay. The Sides of the Hills and the Situation are not otherwise agreeable, but so cover'd with Farms, Fruit Trees, Groves and Vineyards, that they are render'd pleasant to behold. Much Fish is taken in the Sea, and on the Shore is a Mine of black Stone, that burns like a Coal. Ships are not safe in the Bay against the North Wind, for which reason they resort to an Island, which lyes at the other Mouth that is at the Bottom of the Bay, where they are shelter'd, and from that Island to another call'd *St. Mary's*, the Distance is 13 Leagues, and it lyes in 37 Deg. 20 Min. opposite to which Island is the Province of *Arauco*, forming a spacious Bay, wash'd away by the Waves of the Sea; which gives occasion to believe, that the said Island of *St. Mary* was formerly a Part of the Continent of *Arauco*, tho' now three Leagues distant from it in the Sea. In that Island they sow Wheat and Barley, and much Fish is taken, particularly one like the Cuttle Fish, from the Eyes whereof they take little Lumps, glittering like fine Pearls, are worn by Women, which if they were hard, and some of them transparent, would be better than Pearls. In the Shells of the Fishes call'd *Choros*, is found Seed Pearl as big as Hempseed, which is not regarded, because there is nobody to drill it. Two Leagues from the City of the *Conception* is the River *Bio-bio*, very wide, not to be forded there, nor is it navigable; and from that to the River *Labapi* are 15 Leagues S. W. in the midst whereof is a large Bay, in the Province of *Arauco*.

Upon

The HISTORY of *America*. 317

Upon the Information the Governour *Baldivia* had receiv'd from *Alderete*, and the Natives of the Country, when he had well furnish'd the Fort of the *Conception*, he set out, at the Beginning of the Year 1551, with what Men he had, along the Plains call'd of *Ongol*, and proceeding on his Discovery met with Opposition from the *Indians* in some Places, those People being much provok'd to see such Strangers in their Country, which they resolv'd to defend, and prevent their being brought into Subjection; which oblig'd the *Spaniards* to exert their Courage, and Resolution. Being come, notwithstanding all these Difficulties to the River *Cauten*, he saw still greater Towns, and encamp'd, with the friendly *Indians* he carry'd from the Vales of *Santiago* and *la Serena* in that Place where he then founded the City call'd *Imperial*, erecting a Fort, as was requisite among those fierce and warlike *Indians*, and that the *Spaniards* might be the more inclinable to defend it, immediately made a Distribution of the Lands. Then proceeding farther, he came to the Towns of the Vale of *Mariquina*, where he halted, upon Advice receiv'd, that *Francis de Villagra* was bringing him a Recruit of 180 Men from *Peru*, after having in his March discover'd several populous Provinces 'till he came to the *Cordillera*, or long Ridge of snowy Mountains, which divides the Provinces of *Chile* from the rest he had before discover'd, and cross'd those Mountains, where he lost many of his *Indians* thorough the excessive Cold. When arriv'd at the City of *Santiago*, he receiv'd Orders from the Governour *Baldivia*, to conduct to him as many as he could of the ablest and best arm'd Men, leaving the rest in that Place. *Villagra* advanc'd  
with

### 318 The HISTORY of *America*.

with 80 Men through those Parts which *Baldivia* had discover'd to the Vale of *Mariquina*, and there met the Governour, who then went forward with all his Forces, to the River that forms a spacious Harbour, call'd by his Name, where he founded the City, which he also nam'd *Baldivia*, erected a Fort, appointed the Inhabitants, and divided the Country among them. From this Place he sent to discover farther, to the Lake also call'd *Baldivia*, and having receiv'd a particular Account of what had been discover'd, sent *Ferome de Alderete* towards the snowy Mountains, who having sent the Governour a Relation of all he had found, settled the Colony of *Ciudad Rica*, at the Foot of the aforesaid snowy Mountain, and rais'd a Fort, into which he put a Garrison, appointed Inhabitants, and assign'd them Lands; but some Time after that Situation being found inconvenient, the Governour at the Request of the Inhabitants remov'd the same to a large Lake.

Tho' what follows does not belong to this Time, to avoid interrupting the Course of the Affairs of *Chile*, we will proceed to the Death of the Governour *Peter de Baldivia*, and the Arrival of *Don Garcia de Mendoza*. Having perform'd what has been said, the Governour return'd from the City of *Baldivia* to *Imperial*, crossing over by the Way of *Puren*, and the Provinces of *Tucapel* and *Aranco*, all the *Indians* in those Vales, and Territories submitting to him; and he the better to secure *Aranco*, *Puren* and *Tucapel*, caus'd three strong Houses to be built, at eight Leagues Distance from one another, in the most convenient Situations he could find, that they might relieve one another, being sensible that no Precautions were to be omitted among those Martial People,  
and



and thinking that the Forts would be a Check upon the Natives, and secure his own Soldiers; for he was a Man of very great Capacity, and long Experience, which he much confided in, for his own Portion he pitch'd upon the Lands of *Arauco*, and *Tucapel*, as far as *Puren*, excepting some Estates he gave to *Spanish* Inhabitants in those Parts. At this Time the Governour return'd to the City of the *Conception*, and thence to that of *Santiago*, whence he sent *Ferome de Alderete* into *Spain*, with the King's Money, and some of his own, and a particular Relation of all he had done, especially of the great Wealth, and other noble Qualities of that Kingdom, and putting the King in Mind how much he had deserv'd of him. Soon after there came to him a Supply of Men, sent by *Don Antonio Mendoza*, Viceroy of *Pern*, under *Don Martin de Avendaño*, who went with it by Land, bringing 350 Horses and Mares into that Kingdom, and arriv'd at the City of *Santiago* at the Time when *Baldivia* was there; whence he dispatch'd Capt. *Francis de Aguirre* with a competent Number of Men, with whom he cross'd the great Ridge of Mountains, and settled among the *Diaquitas* and *Furies*. The Governour, with what Forces he had, those that had been brought him by *Don Martin de Avendaño*, and some marry'd Men, who were come with their Wives from *Pern* by Sea, set out for *Santiago* to reinforce and enlarge the Colonies he had founded, which were in much Want, and Danger; for *Baldivia* not considering rightly, as might have been expected from a Man of his Judgment, and Experience, built more Towns than was convenient, in Proportion to the small Number of Soldiers he had in a Country that swarm'd with Natives, and those the most martial

martial and best arm'd of any that had yet been discover'd throughout all *Pern*, being under no Subjection to Lords, like those of *Mexico* and *Pern*, but living by way of Races or Clans, only paying some Submission to the eldest and bravest of the Kindred. *Baldivia* being come to the City of the *Conception*, and guided by Avarice, which generally draws Destruction after it, order'd Search to be made for Gold Mines, and the Country abounding in them, many were discover'd, and those very rich, in that Part which is call'd *Ongol*, where he founded another Town by the Name of the *Confines*, which was afterwards abandon'd, and remov'd three Leagues from its first Situation, where it still continues; other rich Gold Mines were also found four Leagues from the *Conception*, at the Place call'd *Quilacoya*. This great Wealth put *Baldivia* upon undertaking still greater Matters, and in the Winter of the Year 1552, he sent Captain *Francis de Ulloa*, whom he had before posted at *Arauco* and *Tucapel*, with two Ships to find out the *Streights of Magellan*, furnishing him sufficiently with Men and Provisions, and order'd he should very particularly observe, and bring him an Account of the Lands, and Course of his Navigation, designing to gather a great Quantity of Gold, and come away with it himself the next Year into *Spain*, to sue to the King to be continu'd in that Government, and honour'd with such Titles, and other Rewards as his Majesty was wont to bestow on others that had so well serv'd upon such like Occasions. The better to bring this Project to Effect, as soon as the Ships were sail'd in Quest of the Streights, he order'd a great Number of Men to be set to work in the Mines of *Quilacoya*, to gather as much Gold as was possible in a short Time.

C H A P. III.

*The Affairs of Chile continu'd; the Death of the Governor Baldivia, and what happen'd after it.*

THE Natives of *Chile*, having seriously consider'd the Strength of the *Spaniards*, their Manners and other Particulars, which at first Sight had astonish'd and surpriz'd them, but upon a second Review appear'd nothing more than human, and subject to Fortune, began to consult among themselves about shaking off that Yoke; concluding, that the *Spaniards* living in much Security, and being so few in Number, they might easily compass their Design. When they had sufficiently concerted the Method of putting their Enterprize in Execution, and were agreed in all Points, they thought fit to begin with the Attack of the strong House of *Puren*, for being so very numerous, some of them provided for War, whilst others pretended to observe the Peace. At the same Time they attempted the other strong House of *Tucapel*, where Capt. *Martin de Erizar* commanded, who after having several Times repuls'd that Multitude with those few Men he had, and sent for Succour to the Governour, being reduc'd to the last Extremity, and no Relief appearing, resolv'd to abandon that Fort, and travelling cautiously by Night, retir'd to joyn those that were in the Fort of *Puren*, thinking it better to lose one than both the strong Houses. *Baldivia*, when it was too late, sent *James Maldonado*, with six Men, to get

VOL. VI. Y into

into the House of *Tucapel*, which he found burnt, and the *Indians* falling upon him, kill'd three of his Men, but he and the rest escaping got into the House at *Arauco*, whence he sent Advice to the Governour of what he had done, and of the Rebellion of the *Indians*. *Baldivia*, with more haste than was requisite, set out from the *Concepcion*, and went to the Gold Mines, where were no *Spanish* Soldiers, but only Miners, and above 20000 *Indians* at work, and there he order'd a Fort to be made of strong Palisades, with a Ditch, to secure the *Spaniards*, and the Work of the Mines to be carry'd on. This being finish'd in a few Days, he cross'd the great River of *Biobio*, at *Talcama-vida*, and with the Men he had, threw himself into the strong House of *Arauco*, having by the Way gather'd up some few *Spaniards*. *James Maldonado* inform'd him thoroughly of what he had seen, persuading him to make a stand there, and to call thither all the Men he could from all Parts of the Kingdom, that they might together make an Incurfion into the Province of *Tucapel*, wherein consisted the Safety of their whole Affairs. *Baldivia* judging that the Success depended on Celerity, and that Delays would be prejudicial, rejected the Advice, setting out immediately from the House of *Arauco*, with 53 Soldiers, and Servants of his own, well mounted, taking the Road to *Tucapel*, having first writ to all the Towns in the Kingdom to send him all the Men they could spare, ordering 14 Soldiers to come from the House of *Puren*, where there were 40, to joyn him at the ruin'd House of *Tucapel*. The next Day being come to the Place call'd *Coton*, and having sent Capt. *James Doro* before, with 10 Soldiers, upon Discovery, the *Indians* kill'd them all, and tho'

Bal-



The HISTORY of *America*. 323

*Baldivia* saw the Arms of Men, and other such Tokens hanging on Trees, as might have mov'd him to turn back to gather more Forces, he would not, but went on.

When he was come along a Plain in Sight of the House of *Tucapel*, several Bodies of Pikemen met him; they fought a great Part of the Day, defeated him, killing most of his Men, and he with 14 that were wounded retir'd almost as far as *Coron*, for the Action was such that it behov'd every Man to bestir himself, and do something more than ordinary, and the Presence of the Captain oblig'd them to exert their true *Spanish* Valour. Being thus retir'd to the Pass of the River call'd *Levo*, he met with a great Number of *Indians*, both Pikemen and Archers, who, tho' he and his 14 Men perform'd Wonders, kill'd him, and all the other *Spaniards*, and the *Indian* Servant they had, none escaping but only one Christian *Indian* Boy, whose Name was *Andrew*, that serv'd the Governour in his Bedchamber, being a Native of *Chile*. He made his Way to the House of *Arauco*, and related what had happened to Capt. *Maldonado*, who had given *Baldivia* such wholesome Advice, and was left there with 15 Soldiers, to be cur'd of the Wounds he had receiv'd in his Retreat. The same Account was given him by two *Caziques* of *Arauco*, who continu'd steady in Peace, and Submission. Capt. *James Maldonado* upon this Disaster befallen the Governour, resolv'd to abandon the House of *Arauco*, and retire to the City of the *Conception*, and the aforesaid *Caziques* afterwards sent him all that the *Spaniards* had left behind. He order'd the Soldiers the Governour had appointed to be drawn out of the House of *Puren* to joyn him, to march under the Command of

### 324 The HISTORY of America.

Capt. *John Gomez de Almagro*, who not being punctual to the Time of setting out, defer'd it a Day longer; and the *Indians* having then slain the Governour, attack'd the said *John Gomez*, who fought them a whole Day, with much Bravery, and in his Retreat to the strong House of *Puren*, seven of his Men were kill'd, and the other seven got into it much wounded, having march'd all the Night. The next Day they all agreed to abandon the House, and retir'd to the City *Imperial*. Thus ended *Peter de Baldivia*, a Gentleman of *Villanueva de la Serena*, in *Estremadura*, and a notable Soldier, having fail'd in the Action where he dy'd of shewing that forecast, and Discretion he had always been famous for in Martial Affairs; but he cast himself away; for those who are always fortunate will never be so cautious as those that have met with Adversities. The *Indians* here gain'd a great Advantage, for they learnt the manner of fighting the *Spaniards*, and made use of it, and their Weapons, which they gather'd up, and preserv'd, valuing them for their own Benefit.

At the Time when *Baldivia* was kill'd, as has been said, and the three strong Houses abandon'd, *Francis de Villagra*, his Lieutenant General, a Person worthy to succeed in his Employment, for his Valour, and Experience, was about the City of *Baldivia*, and having receiv'd Advice of what had happened, set out with 30 Soldiers he had, and gathering some others from the Cities of *Baldivia*, *la Rica*, *Imperial*, and *los Confines*, repair'd to the City of the *Conception*, where being joyn'd by some Supplies from *Santiago*, he summon'd all others that could come to him, to go chastize the *Indians* that had kill'd the Governour, and subdue the Rebels: Having drawn together as many

The HISTORY of *America*. 325

as he was able, he set out towards *Arauco*, with 160 chosen Men, well arm'd, and six such Pieces of Cannon as were there us'd, being the smallest Sort. Having pass'd the River *Biobio*, when come in Sight of *Arauco*, at a Point of Land, on which the Sea beats, call'd *Raquete*, the Major General *Reynoso*, who led the Van, fell in with several Battalions of *Indians*, and fought them, 'till Capt. *Francis de Villagra* coming up with the main Body, and the friendly *Indians* he had taken to his Assistance, the Battle was renew'd, and continu'd doubtful on both Sides a great Part of the Day. The *Indians* having knock'd down Capt. *Villagra*, and kill'd his Horse; tho' he was himself wounded, with the Help of some good Soldiers, he mounted another, and being a Person distinguishable, as having the Standard close by him, that Multitude of *Indians* made an hideous Cry, and closing together with their Pikes, gain'd the Ground they had been fighting on, driving the *Spaniards* down a Descent, where the Sea beats. Capt. *Villagra* being press'd by so superior a Force, made a Retreat with his Men, leaving seven or eight dead, when the *Indians* laying hold of that Opportunity, plunder'd the Baggage, and he thinking that the Booty would have diverted them so that he might have the more Leisure to retire in Safety, other fresh Battalions appear'd ready to receive him above, having palisaded the Top of the Hill of *Llavemon*; but he encouraging the Soldiers, not only with Words, but with the Example he set them, that they might not dismay, but overcome that Difficulty, most boldly broke thorough the Palisade, the Enemy still charging and pressing very much upon him in the Descent, and pursuing three Leagues, to the River *Biobio*, in which Space  
Y 3 they

### 326 The HISTORY of America.

they kill'd 96 of his Men; and tho' it was almost miraculous that 64 should have defended themselves against so great a Number of Enemies, he came with them into the City of the *Conception*, which he immediately caus'd to be abandon'd, sending away all the wounded Men, the Women, and all other uselefs Persons in two Ships and some Boats by Sea, and retiring himself with the rest by Land to *Santiago*. There being too few People to maintain the Towns newly founded; *la Rica*, and *los Confines* were also abandon'd, and the Inhabitants went away to *Imperial*, a fertil Country, and very populous, where Capt. *Villagra* himself commanded, who with good Fortune, attended by wonderful Bravery upon all Occasions, and particularly the many Attacks made by the *Indians*, defended that City, when all the *Indians* about it had revolted, excepting only those that lay nearest, and those that were in Arms carry'd on the War with much Conduct, and Order, nothing like Barbarians, for they erected Forts, from which they made Excursions to destroy all the Forces, and Settlements of the *Spaniards*; but *Villagra* several Times met, and defeated them upon those Inroads; after which he took and raz'd their Forts, having at that Time 160 brave *Spaniards*, well arm'd and mounted; and yet, after so many Misfortunes, it was amazing, that they could hold out, and perform so many notable Exploits.

Capt. *Villagra* arriving at the City of *Santiago*, with such of his Men as had escap'd after the Defeat at the *Conception*, found that the late Governour *Baldivia* had left a Will, wherein he appointed Capt. *Alderete*, who was then gone into *Spain*, to succeed him, by Virtue of a Commission he had from the President *Gasca* to nominate a Governour; and in



*The HISTORY of America.* 327

case the said *Alderete* did not accept of it on such Terms as he prescrib'd, that then Capt. *Francis de Aguirre* should succeed, who being advis'd thereof by his Friends, for he was then beyond the Mountains, in the Province of the *Juries*, came away to the City of *Santiago*, with 60 Men, and was admitted as Governour. *Villagra* being Lieutenant General to *Baldivia*, and the Councils of the Cities having after the Death of the said *Baldivia*, chosen him in his Place, and to be General, and chief Justice, and he having before sent Advice to the King of the Posture of Affairs, stood by his Election. Hereupon such Discord arose between him and *Aguirre*, that they were at the Point of coming to Blows; but at length agreed together, to send to have that Affair decided by the Court at *Lima*; however, in regard it might be dangerous to wait for the Answer and Result, because the Cities *Imperial* and *Baldivia*, being the only two left might happen to be lost, *Villagra* resolv'd to relieve them. To this Purpose he took out about 60000 Pieces of Eight there were in the King's Chest, and having drawn together 150 Men, march'd thorough Provinces that were in Rebellion, as well as those of *Arauco* and *Tucapel*, along the Way of the Plains, surmounting immense Difficulties, and boldly engaging the Natives, who having got *Spanish* Weapons, us'd them as dexterously as if they had been bred up to them, as they also did Gunpowder, and thus he came to the City *Imperial*, subdu'd all its Territory, and sent Succours to the City of *Baldivia*. When the Summer was over, he return'd to the City of *Santiago*, where he found an Order from the Royal Court at *Lima*, enjoyning both himself and *Aguirre*, not to exercise the Employments they had, but to resign them, and that

### 328 *The HISTORY of America.*

the Alcaldes of the City should govern within their own Districts. *Villagra* complying with this Order, made at so great a Distance, and with little Knowledge of what was requisite for that Kingdom, remain'd in the City of *Santiago*, without any Employment. *Capt. Aguirre* did not so easily submit, but petition'd the said Court against their own Order, and those Judges at the Instance of the Inhabitants of the *Conception*, sent them a Commission to raise Men, and rebuilt that City, allowing them 10000 Pieces of Eight of the King's Money towards the Expence. In this Particular they acted, as they had done before, like Ministers that were not so well acquainted as they ought to have been with the Affairs of *Chile*, being overpersuaded by the Inhabitants, who were too pressing to be restor'd to their Estates, and live in their own Houses, without considering the Dangers to which they expos'd themselves.

---

#### C H A P. IV.

*The War with the Indians in Chile continu'd; Villagra defeats them; Description of that Kingdom.*

THE Inhabitants of the City of the *Conception*, having drawn together 70 Soldiers, and chosen the Captains *John de Alvarado* and *Francis de Castañeda* for their Commanders and Alcaldes, set out from *Santiago*, proceeded to the Place where their City had stood, and fortify'd them.

themselves with the utmost Expedition. The neighbouring *Indians*, who would not have them to settle there upon any Account, immediately assembled together, concerted their Measures, and march'd against them, under the Command of their General *Lautaro*, a fierce Man, and steady in what he once undertook; for notwithstanding that he was several Times defeated by the *Spaniards*, and lost many Men, he persisted with such Obstinacy, that he took the *Spanish* Fort, and kill'd two and twenty Men, most of them Citizens, Men of Estates, who sold their Lives at a dear Rate, and the rest, after having made a great Slaughter of *Indians*, and perform'd many bold, and notable Exploits, being no longer able to hold out, with much Conduct and Valour made their Retreat to *Santiago*. The *Indians* being incens'd at the Presumption of the *Spaniards*, in attempting to rebuild the City of the *Conception*, and the vast Multitude of their Men those People had destroy'd, their General *Lautaro* resolv'd to be reveng'd, and in order to it, having rais'd new Forces, enter'd the Territory of the City of *Santiago*, ravaging the same, and doing much Mischief in the peaceable Country; after which retiring, he halted at the River *Yata*, being fully intent upon carrying on the War. The Royal Court at *Lima*, in the mean Time being made sensible that it had been much better to favour Capt. *Francis de Villagra*, that he might have improv'd the Victories he had gain'd, and the Conquest he had made from the Cities *Imperial* and *Baldivia*, appointed him Corregidor, and Chief Justice of the whole Kingdom of *Chile*, 'till the Arrival of Capt. *Ferome de Alderete*, whom the King, upon Advice receiv'd of the Death of the Governour *Peter de Baldivia*, had made Governour,

nour, and Adelantado, or Lord Lieutenant of the Kingdom of *Chile*, and he was coming over with a considerable Number of Men to secure those Conquests. The Royal Court also directed *Francis de Villagra* to cause much Corn to be sown about the Cities that were still in being, for the Support of the Men that were to come to carry on the War against the Natives. As soon as *Villagra* had receiv'd his Commission and Instructions, he order'd all that he thought requisite for the Preservation of the Cities, and the managing of the War that was to ensue, using his utmost Endeavours to give a Check to the Enemy, who were grown haughty and arrogant upon their late Successes. He then proceeded to the Cities *Imperial*, *Baldivia*, and *la Rica*, which last had been rebuilt, and having taken Care of all Things there, and encourag'd the People, return'd towards the City of *Santiago*, with 50 Soldiers that attended him, when coming to the River *Maule*, the *Indians* in those Parts complain'd to him of the Mischiefs done them by the bold *Chilenian* General *Lantaro*, who had utterly ruin'd them, acquainting him that the said *Lantaro* was then at the Towns of *Mataquito* and *Peteroa*, incensing the peaceable *Indians*, and doing all the Harm he could in the Territory of *Santiago*; as also that the City had sent Capt. *John Godinez*, an Inhabitant of the same, with five and twenty Men to oppose that Enemy, 'till such Time as they could send him a greater Force to put a Stop to the Mischief.

*Villagra* being sensible, that *Lantaro's* Design was to streighten *Santiago*, and by that Means oblige him to abandon either *Imperial*, or *Baldivia*, for as much as their Support depended on it, and that if he could gain the former, the other two would



The HISTORY of *America*. 331

would be quite shut up, sent Orders to *John Godinez* to expect him in the Towns of *Teno*, and to render *Lautaro* the more secure, pass'd by him as if it had been in an hasty manner; which *Lautaro's* Pride interpreted as Fear; but as soon as *Villagra* had joyn'd *Godinez*, as he desir'd, he return'd the usual Way, call'd *de las Palmas*, to fall upon *Lautaro*, taking with him good Guides, and endeavouring to get true and exact Intelligence of his Posture. Thus travelling by Night, with as much Expedition, and Precaution as became an able Commander, he was up with *Lautaro* before Break of Day, that Commander going then about with a *Spanish* Trumpet, to relieve the Sentinels; when *Villagra* causing the one half of the 70 Horse he had to alight, attack'd *Lautaro* just at the Dawn of the Day, with wonderful Resolution, and tho' both Sides fought bravely, and the *Indians* were not wanting in their Duty, not being able to withstand the Fury of the *Spaniards*, and their regular way of fighting, they were vanquish'd, with the Slaughter of above 600, and among them *Lautaro* himself, who acted in Martial Affairs with more Discretion and Conduct than might have been expected from a Barbarian. All the *Spaniards* were wounded, that they might equally share in the Honour of so glorious a Victory, so requisite in that Time of Distress, and which gave so great a Check to the Arrogancy of the *Indians*. This Success secur'd all the peaceable *Indians* in the Territories of the several Cities, and encourag'd those that were in them. *Villagra* return'd to the City of *Santiago*, where he receiv'd Advice, that the Adelantado *Ferome de Alderete*, had dy'd of Sickness in the Island of *Taboga*, near *Panama*, after having shipp'd off on the *South Sea*, the Men he had

### 332 *The HISTORY of America.*

had brought for those Provinces; and that upon his Death *Don Hurtado de Mendoza*, Marques de *Cañete*, who was arriv'd in *Peru* as Viceroy of those Kingdoms, had constituted his own Son, *Don Garcia de Mendoza*, Captain General, with 250 Men well arm'd, besides a considerable Number that went by Land; the Judge *Ferdinand de Santillan* being appointed his Assessor, and Capt. *John Ramon* his Major-General. As soon as *Don Garcia de Mendoza*, with whom went the famous Poet, and worthy Gentleman *Don Alonso de Erzilla*, arriv'd, he order'd Capt. *Francis de Aguirre* to be secur'd in the City of *la Serena*, and to be put aboard a Ship in order to be transported to *Peru*, and immediately sent his Major-General *John Ramon* to *Santiago*, with forty Musketeers, to seize Capt. *Villagra*, who, as has been said, had the Titles of Corregidor, and Chief Justice conferr'd on him by the Royal Court, whom he also sent to the City of *Serena*, and being put aboard the same Ship on which Capt. *Aguirre* was, he was sent to *Lima* in *Peru*, as a Reward for the good Service he had done; but this Imprisonment of *Villagra*, prov'd the Trophy of his Victories, which were very great, and all of them well tim'd, the Course of them having been first stop'd by the Royal Court's directing that the Alcaldes should command, and now again by the Arrival of *Don Garcia*.

Having said thus much in relation to the Conquest of this Kingdom of *Chile*, we will now proceed with the Description of it. It was said before that from the River *Biobio* to *Lasapi* the Distance is fifteen Leagues, in the Midst whereof is a large Bay, and there is the Province of *Arauco*, where the strong House stood that was to curb  
the

## The HISTORY of *America*. 333

the Country, and in it are the extreme Borders of the *Conception*, upon the Lands call'd *Lalapi*, in 37 Deg. 7 Min. Lat. within the Bay of *Arauco*, W. S. W. from the strong House. The Sea flows up the River, Boats go up it, and there is plenty of Fish, and of Salt, made of the Sea Water, which being damm'd up hardens with the Sun. The Borders of the City of the *Conception* extends 50 Leagues along the Sea Coast, from the River *Maule* to *Labapi*. From the Point of the River *Labapi* to the River *Levo* are six Leagues North and South. This River *Levo* lyes in bare 38 Deg. Lat. and there *Don Garcia de Mendoza* founded the City of *Cañete*, which was abandon'd on Account of the Wars. From the River *Levo* to the Island *Mocha* six Leagues, lying W. S. W. from that River, in about 38 Deg. 12. Min. Lat. inhabited, and there Ships take Shelter, when they meet with contrary Winds. In this Island a *Spaniard* was kept Prisoner many Years, whom some Sailors stole away from the *Indians*, and afterwards paid them for him; yet the Prisoner returning that way paid them again, and they desir'd he would beg them for himself, because they should be glad to serve a Man that was so grateful. This Island *Mocha* is five Leagues out at Sea, and from it to the next Cape, which bears S. W. and is in 38 Deg, 30 Min. the Distance is eight Leagues. Next is the Port *del Carnero*, or of the Sheep, so call'd because when the Bishop of *Plasencia*'s Ship that pass'd the *Streights of Magellan* arriv'd there, the *Indians* gave the *Spaniards* a Sheep. From this Port to the City of the *Confines* up the Country eighteen Leagues Eastward, seated in the Vale call'd *Ongol*, the River that comes down from the snowy Mountain passing by it, and another Brook  
is

### 334 *The HISTORY of America.*

is on its North Side, on which are the Mills. The Land is fruitful for Seed, or Cattle, and there is good Fruit, and Wine. The City stands eight Leagues from the snowy Mountains, and from that next the Sea two: Its Territory extends eight Leagues to the River *Laxa*, so call'd from a Fall twenty Fathoms deep there is on it, down which the Water runs, and they ford it above the Fall; but Dogs are kill'd by it, for which reason their Masters carry them over a Horseback. From the City of the *Confines* to the *Imperial* the Road lyes W. S. W. and the latter is seated four Leagues from the Sea, up the River *Uten*, which falls from the snowy Mountains to the Eastward, passing along the South Side of the City, as does another on the East Side, so that the City stands in the Point between the two Rivers, on an high and steep Hill, in 38 Deg. 40 Min. Lat. close by and to the Eastward of the Ridge of Hills next the Sea; and it is the See of the second Bishoprick in the Kingdom. The Soil is good for Corn, but not for Wine, there is good Pasture, but no Cheese is made, because the Milk does not answer. Boats go up to the City, which has no Harbour, the Shore being all Flats. From *Imperial* to the City *Rica* sixteen Leagues S. E. by E. and it is in 39 Deg. Lat. twenty five Leagues from the Sea, and three Leagues West from the snowy Mountains, which is a large Lake three Leagues in Length from East to West, and two and a half in Breadth North and South, call'd *Mallabauquen*, to the Eastward whereof stands the City *Rica*, near the Drein, which runs by it, and is not fordable, call'd the River *Tolten*. Near this City is a Spring that rises from the Foot of a burning Mountain, which is *Ebys*, from the Lake, and extends



## The HISTORY of *America*. 335

extends almost to it; from it gush out two Sources of Water, each as thick as a Man's Body, forming a Brook that is presently lost in the Lake. The Soil fruitful, and white, of which strong Walls are made, has few Plains very productive, all the rest barren Mountain. Here grow the Pine Apples of *Libanus* in such Plenty, that the Swine feeding on them are the most delicious Bacon in the World.

To return from the Inland to the Coast, where we left off at Cape *Canten*, from it to the River *Canten*, which is only for Boats, four Leagues, and it is in 38 Deg. 40 Min. from this again to the River *Tolten* near six Leagues, being in 39 Deg. Ships go into it; from it to that of *Quenle* eight Leagues, in 39 Deg. and an half, bearing only Boats. From *Quenle* to the River *Baldivia* nine Leagues South, in bare 40 Deg. a good Harbour for Ships, which go two Leagues up it to the City *Baldivia*, along the greater Branch, for it has two, and the City stands on a rising Ground, being the Bank of the smaller, five Fathoms above the River, which is clear, and flow, the Tide running up it to a Plain enclos'd with Hillocks, call'd *Guadabanquen*. This City of *Baldivia* was founded in the Year 1552. In the Year 1551 the Governour designing to pass the River *Baldivia*, to make War on the *Indians* that would not submit, an *Indian* Woman, call'd *Rocloma*, Wife to a *Cazique*, desir'd him not to pass it, offering to reduce them; she accordingly swam the River, and behav'd herself with such Discretion among those People, that the Peace was concluded. Within the Liberty of this City one single *Indian* was wont to gather the Value of twenty five, or thirty Pieces of Eight of Gold in a Day. Wheat  
and

### 336 The HISTORY of America.

and Barley there yield twenty, thirty, or forty for one; there is good Fruit, but Grapes do not ripen. From the River *Baldivia*, which is in bare 40 Deg. Lat. to that of *Chaibin* three Leagues, large Boats go up it, and from thence to *Punta de la Galera*, or *Galey Point* two Leagues, from thence to *Rio Bueno*, or good River five Leagues. The River call'd *Chico*, or little, flows from a Lake near the snowy Mountains, where are hot Baths, which cure Leprosy and other Distempers; the like is at *Magney*, where the Water is so hot that it scalds, so that it must be temper'd with the cold Water of another Spring that is close by it. From *Rio Bueno* to Cape *Villiva* ten Leagues, and from thence to Cape St. *Marcelo* seven Leagues; from thence again to Cape *Chanqui* eight Leagues, being in 43 Deg. Lat. Half a League North from the Cape is a cultivated Island, and a League farther are three others wild; this Cape is one of the two that form the Bay *de los Coronados*; the other is Cape *Ballena*, or Whale, so call'd from a great one seen there; it is four Leagues from *Chanqui*, and the Bay is form'd by them. From Cape *Vallena* to Cape *Feliz* nine Leagues, the Coast in the Form of a Bay, where much Gold is found. From thence to Cape St. *Cyprian* fourteen Leagues South, and thence to Cape St. *Clare* four Leagues, from whence to Cape *Islas*, or Islands ten Leagues, and thence again to the Islands of *Nuestra Señora del Socorro*, or our Lady of Succour eighteen Leagues S. S. W. it is almost close to the Continent, and from the Island six Leagues to the Eastward is the Port of St. *Dominick*, from whence to Cape *Diego Gallego* nineteen Leagues, in 46 Deg. again from that Cape to Port *Santistevan* twelve Leagues South, and then to that of St. *Andrew* six Leagues; thence to  
Cape

## *The HISTORY of America.* 337

Cape *Ochavario* eight Leagues South, and it is in 47 Deg. From it to *Valle de Nuestra Senora*, or our Lady's Vale ten Leagues, being a Bay between two Hills; thence to the Ports of *Hernan Gallego* eighteen Leagues S. by W. in bare 49 Deg. thence to *Abra de San Guillen* fifteen Leagues; again to *Punta delgada* six Leagues, and next is Port *Reyes*, or *Kings*, in 50 Deg. 20 Min. Six Leagues farther is Port *Innocents*, then Cape St. *Augustin*, and Capes *Roja* and St. *Catherine*, in 51 Deg. 40 Min. next Port St. *Amaro*, and the Inlet of St. *Victorian*, in bare 52 Deg. 30 Min. it lyes between some Islands, which are high Mountains, some cover'd with Snow. At the South Point of this Inlet are three small Islands lying in a Triangle, being the Indications of the Mouth of the Streights of *Magellan*. In Conclusion the Kingdom of *Chile* is 300 Leagues in Length as far as conquer'd, reckoning as they travel by Land, and the Breadth of it is twenty Leagues, which is as much as needs to be said of the same.

*The End of the Eighth BOOK.*



THE  
General HISTORY  
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of  
*AMERICA, &c.*

DECAD V. BOOK IX.

CHAP. I.

*Ordinances of the King of Spain for the  
West-Indies; the Rebellion of Don Se-  
bastian de Castilla, his Death; Peace  
restor'd.*

**I**N the Year 1550 many wholsome Or-  
dinances were establish'd for the good  
Government of the *West-Indies*; the Sub-  
stance whereof was, That no Judge of  
the Royal Court should be concern'd in any Dis-  
covery, nor in any Sort of Dealing in Cattle or  
Corn,



## The HISTORY of America. 339

Corn, or in Merchandize, or build or buy any House, upon Pain of forfeiting his Employment, all the Goods that should be found, and 1000 Ducats over and above; and in case any Person should trade in Partnership with them, they also to forfeit all their Goods; that no Officers of the Mint should any way buy or sell Silver, upon Forfeiture of all their Goods; that none should carry *Indians* into *Spain*, tho' they were actually Slaves, or tho' they said they came of their own free Will; that the *Indians* should be no way burden'd by the *Spaniards*, and for preventing of it Courts erected in all proper Districts; that special Care should be taken for the Instruction of the *Indians* in the Christian Doctrine. In 1551 it was order'd, that the *Indians* in *Peru*, to whom it had not been permitted before, might be Masters of Gold and Silver Mines, as well as the *Spaniards*, if they found and would work them; that no *Indians* should be permitted to keep Fire Arms, or Crossbows, or any Number of Women; that no Blacks either Males or Females should any way have to do with *Indian* Men or Women; that no University should be founded in the Monastery of the *Dominicans* in the City of *Lima*; that all Gamesters should be fin'd ten Times the Value of what they play'd for; that the Estated *Spaniards*, who had no Priest on their Lands to instruct the *Indians* should receive no Profits of the said Lands; that the *Indians* should allow nothing to the Persons sent to moderate their Taxes. Anno 1552. Don Lewis de Velasco was sent Viceroy into *New Spain*, with many more Instructions, too long for this Place, all tending to the Conversion and Benefit of the *Indians*, and the better Administration of  
Z 2 the

the Government, where we must now leave him to return to the Troubles in *Peru*.

The Royal Court at *Lima* being fully inform'd of the Disorders at *Cuzco*, whereof Mention was made in the third Chapter of the seventh Book, thought that tho' the Corregidor *Saavedra* had in all Respects behav'd himself without Blame, yet a new one might have more Influence over those People, and accordingly sent *Alonso de Alvarado* to take that Employment upon him, which he did, and upon his first Arrival, many of the Mutineers fled, others he seiz'd, and immediately try'd and put to Death, *Francis de Miranda*, *Alonso de Barrionuevo*, and *Alonso Hernandez Me'garejo*, others he banish'd, and thus the City seem'd to be restor'd to Tranquillity. *Peru* now seem'd to be in full Peace, when the new Viceroy *Don Antonio de Mendoza* arriv'd there from *New Spain*; yet it was not so, for some turbulent Persons, who had taken Sanctuary in the Monastery of *St. Dominick*, invited several others like themselves to Dinner, the Chief of them being *Don Sebastian de Castilla*, Son to the Earl of *la Gomera*, conspir'd to murder the new Corregidor *Alonso de Alvarado*, and several other Gentlemen that were likely to obstruct their wicked Practices; but after many Debates they could not agree upon the Methods to be us'd for securing themselves, and maintaining a Rebellion, which was to follow that Assassination, for which reason it was referr'd to the Determination of *Don Sebastian de Castilla*, and *Egas de Guzman*. Notwithstanding the great Secrecy with which this was carry'd on, the Corregidor *Alvarado* soon had Intelligence of this Meeting, and that *Egas de Guzman* was the Ringleader in it. This being the ticklish Posture of Affairs, an Incident happened

*The HISTORY of America.* 341

at the same Time that much heightned the general Discontent, and was, that the Royal Court publish'd the King's Order for absolutely abolishing all Personal Service of the *Indians*, which was the compelling them to carry Burdens, to work in the Mines, and other such like servile Employments. The Execution of this Order had been suspended before, by reason of the Troubles in the Kingdom, and was now put in Force without the Concurrence of the Viceroy, those Judges being resolv'd punctually to fulfil his Majesty's Commands, for which reason when the Inhabitants of *Lima* petition'd them against it, they answer'd, that since it did not affect them all in general, they ought not to petition in the Name of the whole City, but that every particular Man should represent wherein he thought himself wrong'd, which they did to prevent the Mischiefs that frequently are the Consequence of Cabals meeting under Colour of petitioning: However, this rais'd a wonderful Clamour, and much increas'd the Number of the Malecontents, inso-much that in *Lima* one *Lewis de Vargas* conspir'd with several others to murder the Judges, as soon as the Viceroy, who was then very sick, should happen to dye, or at least to send them away Prisoners into *Spain*; but they being inform'd of it seiz'd *Vargas*, and soon put him to Death, without taking Notice of several others he had declar'd to be concern'd with him in the Design. Then considering that the Viceroy drew very near his End, the Disturbances at *Cuzco*, and that abundance of mutinous People had resorted to the Province of *los Charcas*, they resolv'd to appoint *Peter de Hinojosa*, a Person often before spoken of, to be Corregidor of that Province, as being the greatest Man in the Kingdom; for besides his be-

### 342 *The HISTORY of America*

ing a Man of Quality, he was extraordinary rich, and had been the King's Captain General against *Pizarro*, and accordingly they gave him his Commission, and the Viceroy confirming the same, exhorted him to act loyally in his Post, which he faithfully promis'd to perform.

The Viceroy's Distemper encreasing upon him, he departed this Life on the 21st of *July* 1552, much lamented by the good Men, for his great Abilities and Christian Behaviour. Not long before *Martin de Robles* had departed the City of *Lima*, with some armed Men; whereupon it was given out that he went to raise a Rebellion; but the Truth was, that he did it at the Request of his Wife, then in the Province of *los Charcas*, whom those who design'd to raise Commotions had slander'd, falsely giving out that there was too much Familiarity between her and *Paul de Menesses*, Corregidor of that Province. At *Arequipa* he met *Basco Godinez*, who was come thither to discover whether *Robles* had heard any Thing of the afore-said false Report, but indiscreetly told him of it; which much disturb'd *Robles*, tho' he knew it to be a Slander, because he expected that *Paul de Menesses* should have punish'd the Authors of it: In short he went away to *Chayanta*, whither his Wife was retir'd, and from thence sent a Letter to *Peter de Hinojosa* the new Corregidor, giving an Account that he had not waited for him, being oblig'd to go away in haste to his Wife who was then sick, and desiring he would rest assur'd that he should be always ready to serve and obey him, not only as the King's Officer, but for own sake. *Hinojosa* indeed was angry with him, on Account of the Insolencies committed by the Soldiers he had with him; but they met, and were perfectly recon-



## The HISTORY of *America*. 343

reconcil'd. *Hinojosa* being come to *Potosi*, *Basco Godinez* brought thither a Challenge from *Martin de Robles* to *Paul de Menesses*, and the Enmity between them gave Encouragement to those that only expected to raise a Rebellion. At length they two agreed to meet and fight it out; but the Corregidor prevented it, and made them Friends, *Menesses* marrying *Mary*, the Daughter of *Robles*, then but eight Years of Age, with whom he was to have 34000 Pieces of Eight as soon as she was twelve Years old. This was a great Disappointment to the Soldiers, who had hop'd by siding with either Party to have brought the Kingdom into such Confusion, that they might have the Plunder of it.

At *Cuzco* the Marshal and Corregidor *Alonso de Alvarado*, apprehending some Disturbance, made Proclamation, that no Person should depart the City without Leave; however, *Don Baltassar de Castilla* went away at Midnight, with several of his Gang in Armour; of which *Alvarado* sent Notice to *Hinojosa*, advising him to secure them, and be upon his Guard, because those People intended to murder him. *Hinojosa* slighted this good Advice, and gave him a friendly Reception, and upon fresh Information very wholesome Advice; and to prevent Disorders that might be occasion'd by Want, quarter'd the Soldiers upon the Citizens of *la Plata*, who were put into a great Consternation, not doubting but that a Rebellion would ensue, and they should be all murder'd, with the Corregidor *Hinojosa*, when the Licentiate *Polo* often assur'd that such a Design was carry'd on, pressing him to take Care of himself, and to dive into the Conspiracy, to make Examples of some of the most criminal. *Hinojosa* being too secure in his

### 344 *The HISTORY of America.*

own Opinion, took no Notice of this wholesome Advice. Thus the Conspirators had the better Opportunity to proceed in their wicked Practices, and were continually egg'd on by *Egas de Guzman*, who was the hottest among them, and *Don Sebastian de Castilla*, ambitious of heading a Party, was no less eager, like an ungrateful Wretch, to murder *Hinojosa*, who had been so great a Friend to him. He on the other Side, being of a generous Disposition, and fearless, when all his Friends press'd him to punish the Offenders, commanded them to talk no more of it, and some Soldiers sent as Spies coming to visit him, he entertain'd them familiarly, and they returning to their Confederates, it was resolv'd to murder him the next Day. Accordingly *Don Sebastian de Castilla*, attended by several of those Ruffians, went to his House in the Morning, where they inhumanly butcher'd him, plunder'd his House, and then went into the Market-Place, crying, *Long live the King, the Tyrant is dead*. The Rebels having thus possess'd themselves of the Market-Place, made Proclamation that all Persons whatsoever, upon Pain of Death, should repair to the Colours. They secur'd the Magistrates, the Licentiate *Polo* made his Escape; there appear'd to be 150 Men in Arms; *Don Sebastian de Castilla* took upon him the Title of Captain General, and Chief Justice, seiz'd several Persons he suspected, and committed many Outrages, sometimes quaking for Fear of the Consequences, and sometimes threatening to destroy all that oppos'd him. This happened on the 6th of *May* 1553. Two Days after *John Ramon* was sent with 25 chosen Men to murder *Alonso de Alvarado*, then Corregidor of *Cuzco*: but *Ramon* considering those wicked Practices could not succeed, persuaded

persuaded his Men by the Way to declare for the King, which they all did, and went to the Assistance of him they had been employ'd to assassinate. *Basco Godinez* soon after return'd to *la Plata*, and many Compliments pass'd between him and *Don Sebastian de Castilla*; however, *Godinez* not liking the Posture of those Affairs, with the Assistance of some others, kill'd the said *Don Sebastian*, and carry'd his Body into the Market-Place, crying *Long live the King, the Tyrant is dead*, which spread a mighty Damp among the Mutineers, and rejoyc'd those that had been forc'd to joyn them, only to save their Lives, being in all at that Time 300 Men. *Godinez* then valuing himself upon this Service, compell'd the Magistrates of *la Plata* to choose him Captain General and Chief Justice, and executed several Persons, without any Form of Justice, becoming thus as great an Oppressor as the Person he had destroy'd. *Egaz de Guzman* the great Promoter of the Rebellion, was put to Death, and quarter'd at *Potosi*. *Gabriel de Pernia*, another of those Disturbers, hearing that *John Roman* had declar'd for the King, follow'd his Example, and submitted himself to *Alonso de Alvarado*. Several others were punish'd after divers manners. *Godinez* designing to fix himself in the Government of the Province of *los Charcas*, and concluding that whatever was done without the Authority of the Royal Court would be reputed Rebellion, sent his great Confidants *Baltazar Velazques*, and *Peter de Castilla* to represent to those Ministers the signal Service he had perform'd in suppressing the Insurrection of *Don Sebastian de Castilla*. That Court having before receiv'd Advice of all that had happened, upon very mature Deliberation, thought no Man properer to com-  
pose

### 346 *The HISTORY of America.*

pose those Disorders than the Marshal *Alonso de Alvarada*, so often already nam'd, and accordingly sent him a Commission to be Corregidor, and Captain General of the Province of *los Charcas*, with full Power to act as he should think most for the Honour of God, and the Service of the King.

This Commission was deliver'd to him at the City of *la Paz*, where considering the Posture of Affairs, he sent before to notify the Power committed to him for punishing, and rewarding as he should find Occasion; and looking upon the Crimes committed to be so heinous that they could not be conniv'd at, lest it might prove an Encouragement for others to be guilty of the like Enormities, he began to give Orders for seizing of Offenders; whereupon some advis'd *Basco Godinez*, to oppose the Marshal, since he had Men enough, and to give out that he had conspir'd with others to revolt; but others prevail'd with him not to run himself into that Mischievous Project. The Marshal *Alvarado* being inform'd of those Contrivances, thought it requisite to manage with Dexterity, and gave out that he had Orders to reward all that had been instrumental in suppressing the late Rebellion, and particularly to bestow the Estate of *Alonso de Mendoza* on *Basco Godinez*, which he look'd upon as too small a Recompence for what he had done. As soon as this Report was spread abroad *Alvarado* sent *Alonso Velazquez* with a Warrant to secure *Godinez*, which was accordingly perform'd, and he laid in Irons in the Goal. *Alvarado* then went himself to *Potosi*, where he imprison'd, and proceeded against many, hearing what they had to say for themselves, and at *la Paz* he beheaded one, hang'd three, condemn'd six to the



## *The HISTORY of America.* 347

the Gallies, caus'd some to be whip'd, and banish'd *Francis de Cabrera* with Forfeiture of all his Goods. At *Potosi* he beheaded two, hang'd two, and whip'd one with forfeiture of Goods, and order'd *Basco Godinez* to be quarter'd, for many very heinous Crimes. *Baltassar Velasquez* had the good Fortune to be at *Lima*, or else he had gone the same Way. *Gomez de Magallon*, *Tello de Vega*, and *John Hugarte* had also their Heads struck off, *Antony de Camposfrio* was hang'd, and *John Perez de Parra-ga*, Knight of *Malta*, had his Lands confiscated, was himself banish'd, and turn'd over to his Order to be farther proceeded against. Many more might have been punish'd, but the Marshal follow'd the Instructions given him by the Royall Court to shew Mercy, by which Means the Province was again for that Time restor'd to Peace.

---

### C H A P. II.

#### *The Beginning of the Rebellion rais'd by Captain Francis Hernandez Giron in Peru.*

HAVING proceeded so far in the Troubles and Commotions of *Peru*, we will give an Account of the last Rebellion that happen'd in that Kingdom, since which it has ever continu'd in Peace. The Publication of the Law before mention'd, prohibiting the personal Service of the *Indians* occasion'd much Discontent throughout the Kingdom, and render'd the Judges of the Royall Court

### 348 *The HISTORY of America.*

Court odious, as did the Commission given to the Marshal *Alvarado* for punishing the Parties concern'd in the Murder of *Peter de Hinojosa*, alledging that he was a passionate hasty Man, and that knowing the Criminals had design'd to murder him also, he could not do impartial Justice. Upon these Motives the whole Kingdom seem'd dispos'd to mutiny, and the Report of what the said *Alvarado* did in the Province of *los Charcas* being spread abroad, it was added, that he receiv'd Informations against *Francis Hernandez Giron*, who thereupon, being naturally a proud haughty Man, which was improv'd by his Wealth, he conspir'd with others like himself to murder the Corregidor of the City of *Cuzco*, who it was given out had receiv'd Orders from *Alvarado* to arrest the said *Francis Hernandez*. Accordingly the Conspirators in Armour repair'd to the House of *Alonso de Loaysa*, who then kept his Wedding Feast, to which the Corregidor and many others were invited. There they murder'd Captain *John Alonso Palomino*, and one *John de Morales*, a Merchant, but only secur'd the Corregidor, then sent to his House, and seiz'd all his Papers, running about the City in small Parties, crying Liberty, carry'd a great Parcel of Arms into the Market-Place, and made a Proclamation for all Men upon Pain of Death to repair to it, posting Guards, that none might make their Escape, and yet *Garcilasso* and seven or eight other Persons of Distinction made their Way towards the City of *Lima*, and were join'd upon the Road by others, till they made up fifty, and then display'd a Banner for the King.

*Francis Hernandez* the better to establish his Rebellion, took above 12000 Pieces of Eight that were

were in the King's Chest, seiz'd all the Horses, Mules and Arms he could find, and appointed all the Commanders for his Forces, which was follow'd with a great Noise of Trumpets, Fifes and Drums, being an open Declaration of War: Next he search'd the House of *Alonso de Loaysa* for *Don Baltassar de Castilla*, and there declar'd, that the Enterprize he had in Hand, was not undertaken for his own sake, but for the Publick Good, to the End that the King might be inform'd that the Kingdom petition'd for Redress of Grievances, and when that should be obtain'd, he would desire nothing but the Honour of having serv'd the Publick, and would be willing to lead a private Live; adding, that the Reason why he had began that Enterprize at the Wedding was, because he had dream'd ten Days before, and was ever after perplex'd with the Thoughts, that the Marshal *Alvarado* was cutting off his Head; for he was always superstitious, and govern'd by Dreams and Imaginations. That same Day two Messengers arriv'd at *Cuzco*, one after the other; the first said that since he had anticipated *Cabrera* in the Rising, he might proceed in the Name of all the Kingdom; for tho' he had himself displayed a Banner for the King, he would go to *Lima* to be appointed Captain General by the Royal Court; and when that was done would secure, and send them away into *Spain*. The other Messenger told him, that *Garcilasso*, and the rest that were gone before did it upon the same Intent. All this *Don Peter Lewis de Cabrera* did to render *Francis Hernandez* secure, and gain Time to get out of his Reach; but he well knowing *Cabrera* to be a crafty Man, immediately order'd *John de Piedrahita*, with a Guard of twenty

### 350 The HISTORY of *America*.

ty Musketeers, to take the Corregidor *Giles Ramirez de Avalos*, and conduct him twenty Leagues from *Cuzco* on the Way to *Lima*, and there leave him, to do as he thought fit, without touching any thing that belong'd to him; and at the same Time to endeavour to overtake *Cabrera*, and persuade him not to go to *Lima*, but return to *Cuzco*, which if he refus'd, then to seize him. *Piedrahita* could not overtake *Cabrera*, but left the Corregidor as he was order'd, and return'd himself to *Cuzco*. *Hernandez's* Major General *Alvarado* having arrested the Comptroller *John de Caceres* and *Don Baltassar de Castilla*, for designing to go away to *Lima*, immediately strangled them, which much alarm'd all the People, and therefore *Hernandez* pretended to be much concern'd at it, and publickly reprov'd *Alvarado*, being unwilling to be then stigmatiz'd with the Imputation of Cruelty, believing that nothing could be more prejudicial to his Interest than being reputed tyrannical; and yet his Major-General *Alvarado*, always had with him, whithersoever he went, an Executioner, an Halter and a Staff to strangle with, and kill'd one *Zarate* for offering to make his Escape.

As soon as the Rebellion was known at *Guamanga* and *Arequipa*, they sent to congratulate with *Francis Hernandez*, offering to stand by him, and he always invited those that were poor and discontented to come to him, whom he reliev'd with the King's Money, commending them for their Valour and Bravery, which gain'd Affection, for it is natural to Soldiers to be fond of Honor. He also pretended to study much at Night, being as intent upon Peace as War, for the Advantage of all Men, but more especially of those that were in Want; and thus inventing many



*The HISTORY of America.* 351

many Lies, he deluded the People, who are always led into Error by false Appearances, without diving into the Reality of Things. The Confusion was so great at *Cuzco*, that no Man durst to speak, and he thought himself happy, who could stay in his own House, and converse with no Man. There was an universal Consternation, the Citizens quaking as they went along the Street in the utmost Confusion, without knowing whom to trust, or which way to turn; the Women at their Devotions begging of God to deliver them from that Distress; the Insolence and Audaciousness of the Soldiers being at that time intolerable. In short, the Rebellion was at such an Height, that the Will of *Francis Hernandez* was an absolute Law, and he to establish himself the better, on the 27<sup>th</sup> of *November* 1553, oblig'd the Magistrates of *Cuzco* to declare him Chief Justice of that Place, which was the first Step all Rebels took; for by this means they engag'd the Magistrates, and deluded the ignorant People, making them believe that they had some legal Authority for what they did. The Preamble to the Instrument, shewing the Motives that induc'd them to that Election, that the Judges of the Royal Court had taken away the personal Service of the *Indians*, which was, that they should not carry Burdens, nor gather *Coca*, which destroy'd the Trade of it in the Province of *los Charcas*; that *Indians* should not work in the Mines; that *Indians* should not be forc'd to travel as Servants; and the Judges refusing to receive Petitions against this Law, it was requisite to send proper Persons to the King for the Benefit of the Kingdom of *Peru*, and consequently to appoint a Representative and Chief Justice for that City and Kingdom; and accordingly

### 352 The HISTORY of America.

dingly they made Choice of *Francis Hernandez Giron*, giving him full Power to this Effect; and he having taken his Oath, the same was immediately proclaim'd. *Hernandez* being thus establish'd in his Rebellion, and having 400 Soldiers at Command, sent *Thomas Vasquez*, with fifty Men, to *Arequipa*, to cause that City to join him, as *Cuzco* had done, and gather Men, Arms and Horses. *Francis Nuñez* and *John Gavilan* were sent to *Guamanga* upon the like Errand, and he writ several Letters to the Royal Court, and to the Councils of Cities, justifying his Proceedings, and persuading all to support him, obliging the Magistrates of *Cuzco* to write Letters to the same Effect, and this not only to Bodies corporate, but to all Persons of any Note.

The first that brought Advice to *Lima* of this Rebellion was *Ferdinand Chacon*, who acquainting *Dr. Melchior Bravo de Saravia* with it, the Court met, and order'd the said *Chacon* to be apprehended, because being a great Friend to *Francis Hernandez*, they suspected he came to wheedle away Men, and raise a Disturbance; but having receiv'd the Particulars of all that was doing at *Cuzco* from *John Ruiz*, Corregidor of *Guamanga*, they set *Chacon* at Liberty. Next they sent to all the Cities, exhorting them to continue loyal, and to be in a Readiness against they should be call'd upon, appointing Commanders in all Parts, ordering Foot Posts to bring Advice of all Occurrences, and securing the Port of *Collao*. The Marshal *Alonso de Alvarado* was confirm'd Captain General in the Province of *los Charcas*, to draw Forces together against the Rebels, there being none fitter than he, either on Account of his Authority or Experience; *Paul de Menesses* was made Major known,

General to command an Army in the Province of *Tungas* and at *Lima*, his Loyalty being well known, all the other Officers were also put into Commission. The Judges being inform'd, that *Don Peter Lewis de Cabrera* was marching that way, with Colours flying, and all the People he pick'd up by the way; they commanded him to halt, by way of Precaution, for fear lest all those Men he had with him should Occasion any Mutiny in the City of *Lima*, and the more, because they knew that *Cabrera* was disgusted at their not having constituted him Captain General, thinking that Post was due to him for having been the first that display'd his Colours for the King.

At *Guamanga*, the Corregidor *John Ruiz* drew together the Men he had in the City, and found 200, over whom he appointed Captains, and punctually sent Advice of all Things to the Royal Court; but those very Men he had arm'd to serve the King turn'd all against him, and would have murder'd the Corregidor, had not Captain *Peña* defended, and sent him away out of the Place towards *Lima*. This done, they seiz'd all the Arms that could be found, and crying *Liberty, long live Francis Hernandez Giron*, they drew up in the Market-Place. Next they chose Captain *Christopher de Peña* their General, and other Officers under him, after which they drew up a formal Instrument, importing, That the City being resolved to rise, *Christopher de Peña* and *John Alonso de Badajoz*, being zealous for the King's Service, and the Publick Good, for preventing of greater Evils, had repair'd to the Corregidor's House, and desir'd him to depart the City, for in Case he did not it would not be in their Power to protect him, which the Corregidor thank'd them for,

### 334 The HISTORY of *America*.

and went away with all his Servants and his Boat, without any Injury done him; then they pretended to justify their Proceedings, alledging that they had no Thoughts to oppose the King, but only to petition him for Redress of their Grievances, with much more to the same Effect, the common Cant of all Rebels, praying his Majesty to recal all the Ordinances publish'd to the Detriment of the *Spaniards*, and of the Natives, which in Effect were all those that curb'd their insatiable Avarice, and protected the *Indians* against their Oppressions; that his Majesty would order the Tributes to be continu'd as they had been settled by the late President *Gasca*, and that there should be new Excursions, and Discoveries made, towards which the *Spanish* Inhabitants would contribute to their Power. This Instrument was sign'd by the above named *Christopher de Peña*, *John Alonso de Badajoz*, and thirty five more of the principal Rebels, whose Names it would be too tedious to insert; notwithstanding that a religious Man told them, that they ought rather to have suffer'd Death than to depart from the Loyalty due to their King. The Magistrates of the City of *Guamanga* having form'd the aforesaid Instrument, writ by an Express to *Francis Hernandez Giron*, signifying, that they had declar'd for, and were resolv'd to stand by him, and praying that he would not forsake that City, but send them speedy Relief. This Advice he receiv'd with much Joy, considering how much it added to his Reputation to have such a City as *Guamanga* come into his Party, especially for that it lay on the Road to *Lima*; whereupon he sent thither *James Gavilan* and *Francis Nuñez*, two of his Captains, with some Forces, as had been requir'd. In the mean Time the Corregidor of *Guamanga*,



*manga*, who, as has been said, had been turn'd out of that Place, made the best of his way to *Lima*, and tho' some Soldiers pursu'd, in order to plunder him, he had the good Fortune to escape, and arriv'd safe at that City.

---

C H A P. III.

*Preparations made by the Royal Court to reduce the Rebels, and other Particulars relating to the same.*

THE Royal Court being inform'd of the Revolt at *Guamanga*, hastned the Levies that had been already order'd, and understanding that many Soldiers, who had been concern'd in *Pizarro's* Rebellion absconded, and it was likely that they would go serve *Francis Hernandez* in his, to prevent that Evil, they publish'd a general Pardon, in case they would enter into the King's Service. Directions were given for providing Powder, Ball, and Arms, and the Captains commanded to keep their Companies in good Order; to which Purpose each of them had 2000 Pieces of Eight given him, and 150 to every Soldier. At this Time arriv'd the loyal Citizens of *Cuzco*, that had fled from that City, as did *Don Peter Lewis de Cabrera* with his Men, who had been before commanded to halt; and tho' some were of Opinion to quarter them apart, there being still a Jealousy, that some of them only came to delude others, and raise Commotions, their Loyalty being fully known,

A a 2

they

they were freely permitted to enter the City, and with them came Capt. *Christopher de Peña*, and *Don Lewis de Toledo*, who were fled from *Guamanga*, repenting of what had been done there, and they were favourably receiv'd, without any Notice taken of what was past, to encourage others, tho' it was suspected that they had to this Effect drawn others into the Rebellion. *Francis Hernandez* giving out, that he would march to *Lima*, thinking it an easy matter to murder the Judges, or send them away into *Spain*, as not imagining that they would raise Men, or dare to lay out the King's Money for that or any other Use; when they had appointed the proper Officers, it was thought fit to name one Person to whom all might have recourse for the necessary Orders, upon all Occasions, without the perpetual Trouble of attending the Court; and the Number of Soldiers daily increasing, it was resolv'd that some one should lead a Body of Men to secure *Guamanga*, that Province being useful for the Support of an Army, besides its lying between *Cuzco* and *Lima*, as also for receiving of such Soldiers as should desert from *Francis Hernandez*, who would possess himself of that Place, if not prevented. Accordingly the Licentiate *Santillan* was nominated to go thither with 400 Men, and such as he could pick up by the Way. When *Santillan* had got his Men in a Readiness, the Archbishop, who was of the Council, signify'd to him that Dr. *Bravo de Saravia* was appointed to take that Command upon him, and he accordingly resign'd that Post, which was no sooner done than the others restor'd it to him, alledging, that Dr. *Saravia* presiding in the Court could not leave it, and therefore *Santillan* was reinstated, with only this Alteration, that the Archbishop

bishop should be joyn'd in Commission with him. So much Time was spent in these Deliberations, that the Opportunity of succeeding at *Guamanga* elaps'd, *Francis Hernandez* having taken Possession thereof, which was an Addition of Strength and Reputation to him.

At this Time some scandalous Reports having been carry'd to the Royal Court, against the Inhabitants of *Cuzco* that were at *Lima*, the Judges, who had a Jealousy of *Don Peter Lewis de Cabrera*, *Lewis Davalos*, and others, order'd Forces to be drawn together, in order to seize, and ship them off for *Spain*; but the Martial Affairs having been committed to the Archbishop, and the Judge *Santillan*, they oppos'd the Execution, because there were no legal Informations against those Persons, and accordingly all ceas'd, the Captains declaring they knew not what they had been call'd for, but *Cabrera*, *Davalos* and the rest suspected that the Preparation had been against them. The same Night there was a false Alarm, but nothing appearing all was quiet again. The Royal Court had taken special Care of the City of *Arequipa*, sending *Peter de Cianca* thither with a Commission to secure it in the King's Interest, exhorting the Magistrates, and Inhabitants to continue loyal. He found that many were inclin'd to the Rebellion, saying, they had taken Arms for the publick Good, and were encourag'd therein by a Clergyman and a Friar, sent thither to that Purpose by *Francis Hernandez*; but *Cianca* told them that the Judges had a numerous Army, and *Francis Hernandez* would be easily defeated, as being much inferior to the King Forces, which daunted those that were ill inclin'd, and confirm'd the Loyal in their Opinion; whereupon they put all the King's Plate aboard a

### 358 *The HISTORY of America*

Ship, with much more belonging to private Persons, and sent it away to *Lima*, appointing proper Officers for their Defence. After all this, on the 13th of *December* 1553. they assembled in the Town House, and revers'd all they had done before, being inform'd that *Thomas Vasquez* was marching against them, and tho' it was once propos'd stand upon their Guard, they cast off all Loyalty, and drew up a formal Instrument sign'd by the Magistrates and the King's Officers, constituting *Francis Hernandez* their Representative. *Thomas Vasquez* arriving soon after, they receiv'd him, and he apply'd himself to gather Arms, Ammunition, Horses, and all other Necessaries for *Francis Hernandez's* Army, sending Capt. *Martin Lezcano* to possess himself of the Port of *Quilca*. *Lezcano* returning from that Expedition to *Arequipa*, had thoughts of killing *Thomas Vasquez* for the King's Service; but he having got some Intimation of it caus'd *Lezcano* to be kill'd, and hang'd *Alonso de Mier*, who was lately arriv'd from *Spain*, because when he had receiv'd an Horse, Arms, and Money to serve *Francis Hernandez*, he was about deserting to the King.

Advice having been brought to *Lima* that *Francis Hernandez* was set out from *Cuzco*, and the Forces being arriv'd from several Parts, as 43 Horse, and 103 Foot from *Truxilla*, 140 from *Guanuco*, 80 from the *Chiachapoyas*, 40 that fled from *Arequipa*, and the 50 under *Don Lewis de Cabrera*, the Major-General *Paul de Menesses* said, it was requisite to get Intelligence concerning the Enemy, which being propos'd among those that had the Charge of the Military Affairs, Capt. *Lope Martin*, a Soldier of Experience, who had serv'd faithfully against *Pizarro*, march'd towards *Guamanga* with  
thirty



## *The HISTORY of America.* 359

thirty Musketeers, which being thought too few Capt. *Lewis de Tapia* was sent after him with twenty more; and *Ruy Barba Cabeza de Vaca* was sent with a considerable Number of Men to see what was doing in the Vale of *Yca*. Then the Forces march'd out from *Lima*, and encamp'd within half a League of the City.

*Francis Hernandez* growing uneasy, because the Inhabitants of *Cuzco* did not supply him as he expected, and for that many of them had made their Escape, consulting with his fast Friends about the Management of his Enterprize, after many Debates, it was resolv'd to march to *Lima*, because if he happen'd to gain it, he should be Master of the Sea, which would dissolve the Power of the Judges, and be an Addition to his; for then it was plain that the Province of *los Charcas* would comply with him, as well in regard that it is usual to side with the Conquerors, as by reason he thought that the Marshal *Alvarado* could not subsist, as having many Enemies, on Account of the Persons he had executed. Accordingly the March was proclaim'd, giving out that they went to petition against the new Ordinances, concerning the Personal Service, the new Taxations, and other Grievances they complain'd of; and that the Archbishop and the Judges should be shipp'd off for *Spain*, as Ministers that observ'd not the Rules of Reason, or Justice. Before this setting out from *Cuzco*, which was on the 4th of *January* 1554, he gave Leave for such of the Inhabitants of that City, as were unwilling to follow him, to stay at home. He had with him 300 Men, besides those that were with *Thomas Vasquez*, and *Francis Nuñez*, and the Licentiate *Alvarado* remain'd at *Cuzco* to fit out the Men that would not

### 360 *The HISTORY of America.*

march with *Francis Hernandez*, as also the Stores and Ammunition, and eight Days after he departed *Cuzco* with 200 Men, joyn'd *Hernandez* at *Lima Tambo*, pass'd the Bridge of *Apurima*, and when come to *Guainarima*, which is two Leagues from the Bridge, *John de Vera*, *Gracian de Sesse*, *John de Villegas*, *Ferome Hernandez*, *Antony de Jodar*, and *Matthew Sanchez*, like young Men, repenting of what they had done, repass'd and burnt the Bridge, to prevent being pursu'd, and went away to *Cuzco*, where they enter'd in the Night, declaring for the King, and saying they had err'd through Indiscretion, and not through Malice. Tho' some Persons joyn'd them, the Citizens apprehending that might be some Artifice of *Alvarado*, Major General to *Hernandez*, hid themselves, and many ran to be protected by *Hernandez's* Wife, and Mother-in-Law. *John de Vera* not thinking himself safe in the City, went away speedily to *Xaquixaguana*, to wait for such as would come out of the City, and *Francis Hernandez* would not suffer any to pursue him. The same Night *John de Saavedra* went out into the Market-Place, and the Inhabitants of *Cuzco* choos- ing him for their Commander, abandon'd the City, and went away towards *Potosi*, having receiv'd Advice that as soon as the Marshal *Alvarado* had the necessary Order from the Royal Court, and heard of *Hernandez's* Rebellion, he had rais'd Men, and was upon his March with 800 Soldiers. *Francis Hernandez* spar'd for no Artifices to keep his Followers in Awe, and be admir'd by them; to that Effect, not being satisfy'd to be esteem'd a Man of much Valour and Judgment, he aspir'd to appear something more than Man, and for this End had with him one *Valladares*, who pretended

to know the Disposition of Men by their Countenances; and one *Urquiza*, who having the *Pythagorean* Wheel, or Revolution painted on a Piece of Paper impos'd upon ignorant Persons; besides one *Lucy*, a Woman of *Moorish* Race, an Errant Witch, who pretended to Revelations; one *Bezer-ra*, who like an Oracle answer'd all Questions put to him; and one *Vasquez*, a Clergyman that gave out he was an Astrologer, practis'd Chiromancy, and was a Sorcerer. *Francis Hernandez* conversing with those Persons, gave out that he knew what was to come, what was done in the Enemy's Army, and what his own Party thought and talk'd among themselves.

The Judges concluding, that the Motives *Francis Hernandez* alledg'd for his Rebellion were a Delusion to his Soldiers, and misled many more throughout the Kingdom, and having heard the Protestation he made at his Departure from *Cuzco*; to disappoint all his wicked Machinations, order'd the Inhabitants of several Parts of the Kingdom, that were then at *Lima*, to meet and choose their Representatives to be sent to the King, and whilst they could go to be heard, they suspended the Execution of the new Ordinances for two Years and an half. The Deputies, or Representatives being *Don Peter Lewis de Cabrera*, and *Don Antony de Ribera*, soon sail'd for *Spain*, and *Francis Hernandez* was much concern'd at this Resolution, because it laid open his wicked Artifices. *Francis Hernandez* enter'd *Guamanga* on the 27th of *January* 1554. where he was joyn'd by *Thomas Vasquez*, that the Number of their Men might not be known, and the 28th of *February* came to *Xauxa*, his Forces destroying all the Country they pass'd through. There were now in the King's Army 14 Pieces  
of

### 362 *The HISTORY of America.*

of Artillery, 500 Musketeers, 450 Pikes, and 300 Horse, whom the Major General had exercis'd, that they might be ready and expert. A Party of the King's having surpriz'd one of the Enemy, took thirty two Prisoners, whom the Judges would have hang'd, but that their Soldiers oppos'd it, alledging, that the Rebels would do the like by them, if they should happen to be taken; whereupon they were sent to the Sea, where the Judge *Altamirano* was, who hang'd three of the most notorious, and banish'd the rest.

*Francis Hernandez* advanc'd to *Pachacama*; the King's Forces having in a Council of War debated what was fit to be done upon that Occasion, resolv'd that *Paul de Meneffes* should go take a View of the Rebels, with fifty Horse, and 100 Musketeers, who left the latter in Ambush, and being attack'd by a Party of the Enemy, retir'd in good Order, to draw them within the reach of his said Ambush, which they suspecting soon gave back. At that Time several Men deserted on both Sides. *Paul de Meneffes* was positive for attacking the Rebels in their Camp, which the King's Judges who were in the Army oppos'd, alledging, that his Men would all desert him, and therefore it was a Rashness to hazard a Battle. Accordingly *Hernandez* being convinc'd that his Design was discover'd by *James de Silva*, who had abandon'd him, and thinking his Camp very fit for his Men to desert, as they had began to do, resolv'd to retire to *Cuzco* with so much Privacy that none should know which way he was gone. In this Retreat *Hernandez* lost much of the Baggage, and among it considerable Treasure, which was taken by some of the King's Soldiers that stray'd abroad a marauding. As soon as it was known by the Loyalists



*The HISTORY of America.* 363

lists that *Francis Hernandez* retir'd, the General *Paul de Menesses*, accounted a Discreet, Brave, and Fortunate Commander, was order'd to keep close to his Rear with 200 Men, who were to carry no heavy Baggage, and he march'd accordingly on the 24th of *March* 1554.

Whilst these Things were in Agitation, *John Delgadillo*, Corregidor of *St. Michael de Piura*, order'd *Francis de Silva*, who was at *Tumbez*, to gather up all the Men, Arms and Horses he could find, and retire to that City. Those Soldiers being there idle, desir'd they might have Leave to go serve the King at *Lima*, which the Corregidor refusing, and *Silva* insisting upon it, he confin'd him to his own House, where he conspir'd with others, and resorting to the Corregidor's House seiz'd him, and one of the Alcaldes, murdering the Alcalde *Moran*, and another Person. This done they went into the Market-Place, crying, *Long live the King*, plunder'd the Inhabitants, and drawing all the Soldiers together, *Silva* was declar'd Captain General, and Chief Justice, seiz'd the King's Money, distributed it among his Men, and proceeded to *Caxamalca*, in order to joyn *Francis Hernandez*; but there he receiv'd Advice of that Rebel's Retreat, which put him into a great Consternation, and therefore he resolv'd to return to the Plains, to dismiss the Corregidor, making him some Presents, begg'd his Pardon, and said he might return the next Day to *Piura*; but that very Day he chang'd his Mind, and order'd him to be hang'd on the next Tree; however, he found Friends by whose Assistance he made his Escape. *Silva* being come to *Motupe*, and sensible of his Error, told his Men that the safest way for them was to disperse by two and two. The Corregidor

### 364 *The HISTORY of America.*

dor getting 14 Men took several of the Rebels. *Bernardin de Romani* was sent by the Royal Court to suppress the rest, some of them he hang'd, and condemn'd others to the Gallies; but *Francis de Silva* and *John de Aponte* were transported away into Spain in Friars Habits.

#### C H A P. IV.

*Francis Hernandez Giron retires, defeats Paul de Menesses; what happened afterwards; Preparations made by the Marshal Alvarado against the Rebels.*

**F**RANCIS HERNANDEZ retiring in good Order to *Pachacama*, upon a Muster found he had 536 Men, and then proceeded to *Lunaguana*, which tho' very rapid he pass'd with no other Loss than of one *Indian* Woman. At *Chinca* he made a Speech to his Men, with much Artifice, which pleas'd them, and there he reprov'd Capt. *Nuño de Mendieta* for being suppos'd to hold Correspondence with the King's Judges, for which he was kill'd by the Soldiers. *Paul de Menesses* pursu'd *Francis Hernandez* with 70 Musketeers, and as many Horse, and being inform'd by five Deserters, that all the Rebels would forsake their Leader, his Soldiers press'd him to march with the utmost Expedition, and surprize the Enemy in the Night in the Vale of *Xca*, and accordingly it was resolv'd to attack them in three Places at once; but one who had before deserted from *Hernandez*

The HISTORY of *America*. 365

*nandez* now return'd to him, and gave an Account of the Delign, which made him keep his Men under Arms all the Night, and *Paul de Menesses*, by the Advice of *Lope Martin* and others, retir'd at Midnight, on the last Day of *March 1554*. The next Day *Lope Martin*, and others he had left to bring up the Rear were taken, or kill'd, and the Prisoners afterwards murder'd, among whom was the afore said *Martin*. *Menesses* having lain that Night at *Villauri*, in the Morning was attack'd by a Party of Rebels, with whom he skirmish'd three Hours, always retiring; but *Hernandez* then coming up with all his Power, all the King's Men were oblig'd to fly, fourteen being kill'd, and about twenty eight taken. *Paul de Menesses* seeing his Men quite routed, made away along the Sands to the River *Pisco*, and thence to *Chincha*. The Rebels pursu'd as far as *Pisco*, where they left the Head of *Lope Martin*, and then return'd to *Yca*, and march'd on towards *La Nasca*, *Francis Hernandez* dismissing some of the Prisoners that su'd to him. The Booty his Men got in Arms, Cloaths, and Provisions were very considerable, plundering being their main Business.

When *Paul de Menesses* set out from the King's Army, as has been said, the same advanc'd to *Malala*, and thence to *Azie*, the Archbishop, and the Judge *Santillana* being at Variance; and as soon as they came to *Guarco*, some of those who had been put to the Rout appear'd, which being known, those who commanded thought fit to march to *Chincha*, but it was put off two Days, on Account of some Discord. At *Lunaguama* they heard, that *Paul de Menesses* was at *Chinca*, and a Proposal being there made to hasten forward, thinking to find the Enemy at *Yca*, and that they might be  
routed

routed by 800 Men, which being contradicted, Debates ensu'd, and it was suspected, that the *Spanish* Inhabitants of the Kingdom that were in the Army, did not desire to have *Francis Hernandez* defeated, which caus'd much Division. *Paul de Menesses* being come into the Army, press'd to march forward, being eager to revenge the Loss he had sustain'd; and after much contesting, *Dr. Bravo de Sarabia* prevail'd to have an Order pass'd for drawing out 5 or 600 Men well arm'd and mounted, under the Command of *Paul de Menesses*, to pursue *Francis Hernandez*; and that the Archbishop, and the Judge *Santillan*, with the rest of the Forces, and the Artillery should return to *Lima*, to defend that Place, and the Royal Court; which was accordingly done. *Paul de Menesses* desir'd the Archbishop to stay with the Army, and he would obey his Commands, and passing Muster of his Forces found 530 Men, many refusing to appear at it, as did the House-keepers. He then insisted to march after the Rebels, which being debated in Council, it was argu'd, that there was not the full Number of Men mention'd in the Order; besides that most of them were ill cloath'd, and would be distress'd if they should happen to be oblig'd to march into the Mountains. *Paul de Menesses*, and the other chief Commanders, were much offended at these Demurs, alledging, that a greater or smaller Number of Men did not invalidate the Order pass'd by the Royal Court, protesting that they lost Time, and a favourable Opportunity. Whilst the Loyalists were thus trifling *Francis Hernandez* was at the *Tambo* of *la Nasca*, having Plenty of Wine, Oyl, Cloathing, Sweetmeats, Sugar, and Iron brought him for Horse-shoes, which he stood in Need of: He there took



## The HISTORY of America. 367

a *Tanacana*, or *Indian* Servant carrying Letters to the King's Army with Advice of what was doing in that of *Francis Hernandez*; and tho' he would not confess upon the Rack, he was put to Death, and a Pardon was found sign'd by the Judges for *Thomas Vasquez*; whereupon *Hernandez* himself went out among the Men, telling them many Falshoods of his own Invention, and crying, that he had no other Design than to serve God, and the King; whereas the Judges had no Thoughts of doing Justice, but of ruining the Kingdom. At the same Time came to him an Ensign from the King's Army, telling him that all the lower Provinces, that is, those next the Equinoctial were for him, with many more Fables, which being all immediately publish'd, were receiv'd with much Joy. *Hernandez* then sent *John Cobo* to persuade the *Indians* call'd *Lucanez*, to submit to him; but tho' he us'd his utmost Endeavours, and their Masters were in that Army, they declar'd positively that they would serve none but the King, affirming, that he would certainly be victorious in the End; for the *Indians* were wont generally to forsake the vanquish'd.

It is now Time to say something of the Marshal *Alvarado*, who, as has been said, was Governour of the Province of *los Charcas*. The Citizens of *Cuzco*, who the Night that *Francis Hernandez* rebell'd, had fled from *Cuzco*, sent Advice thereof to the City of *la Paz*, where *Sancho de Ugarte* was Corregidor, who immediately dispatch'd a Messenger with that News to the Marshal, and drawing together 200 Men, march'd out of that City, and posted himself on the Pass of the Drein that runs from the great Lake, where he was inform'd that a *Mercenarian* Friar was going with

I

Dis-

### 368 The HISTORY of America.

Dispatches from *Francis Hernandez* to *la Paz* and *la Plata*, and sending out a small Party intercepted him. The Friar being ask'd what he was going about, answer'd, To found a Monastery at *la Paz*, and after some other Words his Dispatches were seiz'd; but notwithstanding all their Precaution he eat up one Letter. *Ugarte* sent those Dispatches to the Marshal at *Potosi*, who then consulted what was to be done, having before order'd Pikes to be made, and the Men to keep themselves in a Readiness; and being fully inform'd of what *Hernandez* had done at *Cuzco*, he publicly declar'd it to all that were at *Potosi*; adding, that since all the prime Citizens at *Cuzco* were fled, that Rebel could not long subsist, and therefore it behov'd them like loyal Men to exert themselves against him, which would redound to their immortal Honour. They return'd a very loyal Answer; whereupon he began to make farther Preparations, and upon a Muster found he had 700 Men, but most of them Merchants and Traders; for which reason he sent to *la Plata* and *Cochabamba* to draw together more Men, Arms and Horses, and to provide Powder and Arms. Whilst he was thus employ'd he receiv'd a Commission from the Royal Court, constituting him General, with a sufficient Power to lay out of the King's Money as much as should be requisite for suppressing the Rebellion, as also to suspend the Prohibition of the personal Service. Then he paid the Men, giving some 5 or 600 Pieces of Eight, Horses, and Beasts of Burden, as appear'd requisite; demanded 700 *Indians* of the *Caziques*, for the Service of the Forces; lay'd up Provisions; and to conclude, what was defective since the Rebellion of *Don Sebastian de Castilla*, impos'd Fines on such as had been concern'd in it,

*The HISTORY of America.* 369

and only hang'd *Francis Ramirez*. and condemn'd *Gomez de Vid* to the Gallies. All Things being in Readiness he set out towards *Cuzco*, and at *Vizcachas* receiv'd Advice, that *John de Saavedra* was advancing towards him with those that had fled from that City, having halted at *Jublaca*, fifty Leagues from *Cuzco*, being offended at *Sancho de Ugarte*, who said, he had no good Opinion of them, suspecting they had been in League with *Francis Hernandez*; but the Marshal signify'd, that he repos'd entire Confidence in them, ordering *Saavedra* to return to *Cuzco* in the Quality of Commander, and chief Justice within the Territory, and to publish the Suspension of the Prohibition of the personal Service; and understanding that *Sancho de Ugarte* was marching to get into *Cuzco* to oppose the Rebels, he order'd *James Pacheco* to ride Day and Night 'till he met him, and positively command him to halt. *Pacheco* having travell'd above 100 Leagues, met *Ugarte*, who finding the Orders too positive to be disobey'd, desisted from his Design, and return'd to *Pancharolla* with 200 Men he had; there they expect the Marshal; and *Saavedra* went away to *Cuzco* to provide Arms, Horses, and other Necessaries for the War. The Marshal at the same Time advancing towards *Cuzco*, review'd his Forces at *Hayobayo*, and found above 700 Men very well equipp'd, and in good Order. Proceeding to *Viacha* he was there joyn'd by *James Hernandez de la Cuba*, with twenty five Men. At *Ylave* some others resorted to him; at *Pauca Colla*, *Ugarte's* Men receiv'd him in the most honourable manner, and he was joyn'd by forty Men from *Arequipa*, and the 30th of *March* 1554. he enter'd *Cuzco*,  
VOL. VI. B b having

### 370 The HISTORY of America.

having been met on the Way by the Bishop and *John de Saavedra* with sixty Horse.

The next Day the Marshal order'd the Forces to be in a Readiness to march, the Roads to be repair'd, Bridges to be made, and Guards to be posted on all the Ways, that none might know which of them would be taken. Most were for marching directly to *Nasca*, the Country abounding most with Provisions, which the Marshal oppos'd, alledging, that if *Francis Hernandez* should happen to hear of it he would go away along the Coast to *Arequipa*, and the Drein, and thence up to the Province of *los Charcas*, which would much prolong the War, wherefore he was resolv'd to return himself to the *Desaguadero*, or Drein. The Marshal being march'd out of *Cuzco* with above 1000 Men, took his Way by *Quiquixana* towards *Collao*, leaving the great Road; to the end, that if the Rebels made towards the Coast, he might meet them on the Road to *Arequipa*; and if they advanc'd towards *Cuzco*, he might get into that Place before them. A few Days after four Men deserted from him, and took along with them two good Mules belonging to *Gabriel de Pernia*, and *Peter Franco*, which much troubled the Marshal for the Intelligence they would carry to *Francis Hernandez*; and concluding that those two had sent the other four he caus'd them to be put to Death, because *Pernia* was mutinous, and had been concern'd in the Rebellion of *Don Sebastian de Castilla*, and *Franco* had an Hand in the Revolt of *Peter Hernandez*. The four Deserters gave *Hernandez* an Account of the Marshal's Power and Proceedings; whereupon on the 8th of *May* 1554. he set out from *Nasca* with 250 Blacks well arm'd under proper Commanders, besides his *Spanish* Forces. The



## The HISTORY of America. 371

Royal Court being inform'd of his March, order'd their Army, then at *Chinca*, to return to *Pachachama*, because, should *Francis Hernandez* get to *Xauxa*, he might take the Road to *Quiro*, where he was much known.

The Marshal *Alvarado* enter'd upon the Desert of *Parinacocha*, which extends thirty two Leagues, the Country cold, snowy, full of Quagmires, and such bad Ways, that many Horses were lost; and being inform'd by the *Indians*, that the Enemy was not far off, sent Capt. *John Ramon* abroad upon Discovery, who brought Advice that *Hernandez* was marching towards *Parinacocha*; whereupon taking a Review, he found 300 Musketeers, 250 Horse, the rest arm'd with Pikes and other Weapons, to the Number of 1100 Men. The Marshal with much Difficulty arriv'd at *Guallaripa*, where he was joyn'd by the Commendary *Romero* and *Garcia de Aiolo*, who brought him 1000 arm'd *Indians*, and much Store of Provisions. *Hernandez* understanding that the Marshal was so near, resolv'd to incamp on some strong Place. The Marshal on the other Hand propos'd to attack him that very Night, the Distance between them being only four Leagues, and fearing he might slip away to *Cuzco* and *los Charcas*, which would be of very pernicious Consequence, and thereupon ask'd the Opinion of his Commanders. Many were for the Attack; some for confining him close in that Place; but those who knew best the Country, said he was so strongly incamp'd that there was no Possibility of coming at him, and therefore all possible Means must be us'd to draw him from thence: However, the Marshal resolv'd upon the Attack, appointing 150 chosen Musketeers to give the first Onset, to be sustain'd by all the Army.

At eleven of the Clock, on the 20th of *May*, upon the Sound of the Trumpet all were ready, Capt. *John Ramon*, with the 150 Musketeers was order'd to possess himself of an Hill, the Road on it, and the River, and as much as he could of the Ground where *Hernandez* was, and to endeavour to lye conceal'd, 'till all the Forces came to sustain him. The Musketeers arriv'd at the River undiscover'd; but an *Yanacona* going out from the Rebels for Grass, perceiv'd them, and gave Notice of it; when Capt. *Ramon* knowing he was discover'd, order'd all his Musketeers to fire. *Hernandez* drew up his Men, some of them firing under Covert upon the Loyalists, and then the King's Colours appear'd; whereupon a smart Skirmish ensu'd; but the Rebels had much Advantage of the Ground. The Marshal having taken a strong Post, sent Capt. *Martin de Olmos* to drive a Party of the Enemy out of some inclos'd Yards, which that Commander perform'd, for it was thought the same might conduce towards gaining Village that lay before the Front of the Rebel Forces. About three in the Afternoon the Action ceas'd, eight of the King's Soldiers being kill'd, and fifteen wounded: but of those of *James Hernandez* only two kill'd, and some few wounded.

The Marshal having been assur'd by a Deserter, that *Hernandez* would certainly fly, declar'd to his Council of War, that he was inclin'd to fight, but most were against it; and *Laurence de Aldana* represented to him, that he might destroy those Rebels without the Loss of a Man, because they were confin'd, and in want of Provisions, whereas he had Plenty of all Things, and was more advantageously posted than they; however, another Deserter confirming the former Advice, he resolv'd,

solv'd, whatever Objections could be made against it, to make the Attack: In short, two Parties that had been commanded to pass the River on the Right and Left of the Enemy falling on before the Signal was given were worsted; then some passing over from the main Body began to recover the Ground that had been lost, and gain more, the King's *Indians* seconding the *Spaniards*, with wonderful Alacrity. *Hernandez* finding the Horse approach, drew his main Body under the Shelter of a Wall, making an Intrenchment where that did not reach, with the Baggage and Beasts of Burden. At length, after an obstinate Engagement, the King's Soldiers falling to plunder, were put into Disorder, which being observ'd by *Hernandez*, he rush'd forward, pass'd the River, and put all to the Rout, killing and taking many. Then understanding that the Marshal, who was wounded, and had his Horse kill'd, was making his Escape on another, in Company with *Laurence de Aldana*, he sent some few Men to pursue them, which Parties of his return'd with whole Drovers of Prisoners, so that he got a Reinforcement of above 300 Men, that were willing to serve him. The Marshal, to whom the River of *Abancay* was fatal, struck through the Country of the *Lucanes* that leads into the Plains, and the *Indians* that escap'd follow'd him to *Lima*. Of the King's Army 100 Men were kill'd, and above 300 wounded; of the Rebels only seventeen were slain, and forty wounded. *Hernandez* exercis'd no Cruelty after this Victory, nor put any Man to Death, except one *Perales* that had offer'd to kill him; but on the contrary caus'd the Dead to be bury'd, and the Wounded to be taken Care of; commanding that the Prisoners

### 374 *The HISTORY of America*

should not be insulted, speaking to them affably himself, and putting them in Hopes. He sent to *Cuzco* to get Cloaths for the Soldiers, and to have Artillery made of the Bells, and to *los Charcas* for Plate. The Licentiate *Alvarado* seiz'd a great Quantity at *Cuzco*, robbing the very Women of their Jewels and Plate; and whilst his Officers plunder'd all the Places they could come at, he stay'd and enjoy'd himself in his Camp on the Field of Battle.

*The End of the Ninth BOOK.*



THE





THE  
General HISTORY

Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of

AMERICA, &c.



DECAD V. BOOK X.



CHAP. I.

*Proceedings of the Royal and Rebel Parties, after the Defeat of the Marshal Alvarado; the Rebels routed, and their Ringleader James Hernandez taken.*



THE Royal Court having receiv'd Advice of the Marshal *Alvarado*, it was resolv'd that *Paul de Menesses*, who, as has been said, commanded another Army for the King, should march to *Sulco*, to receive

### 376 The HISTORY of America.

some Reinforcements, as he did, and thence to *Xauxa*, which is forty Leagues from *Lima*, and arriv'd there on the 13<sup>th</sup> of *June* 1554. A Conspiracy being enter'd into by one *Galindez*, and forty others to seize the King's Galeon that was the Guard-ship of the Port of *Lima*, the same was discover'd by a Woman, and *Galindez*, with some more were hang'd, others escaping with the Help of their Friends. The Court being then in Care, for fear the *Indians* might have murther'd the Marshal *Alvarado* and *Laurence de Aldana*, receiv'd Letters from them both, the first excusing himself, and blaming his Men, whom the Court comforted, telling him, that Victory was in the Hand of God; but the latter found Fault with the Marshal, for having attack'd the Enemy in their Quarters, contrary to the Advice of his Officers. The Court thinking they had a sufficient Number of Men, resolv'd to march to *Guamanga*, and came thither on the 11<sup>th</sup> of *August* 1554, having advanc'd forty Leagues from *Xauxa*, where they were inform'd, that *Francis Hernandez* was at *Andaguailas*, twenty Leagues from them, having sent to *Cuzco* for his own, and the Wives of the Inhabitants of that Place who were with him. In the mean Time *Antony Carrillo* and *Francis de Boloña*, whom *Hernandez* had sent to seize all the Plate there was at *Potosi*, possess'd themselves of the City *la Paz*, in the Name of the said *Hernandez*, taking away all the Inhabitants had, which was said to amount to above 500000 Pieces of Eight, in Gold, Silver, and other Things of Value. Five Days after *John Vasquez*, a great Friend to *Boloña*, advis'd him to kill *Antony Carrillo*, to declare for the King, and restore all he had taken to the right Owners, which would

would redound to his Honour more than the gaining of a Victory, putting him in Mind what a Burden it would be to his Conscience not to make Restitution of so much Treasure. Hereupon they two, with six others, met at *Vasquez's* House, proceeded thence together to *Carrillo's* Lodging, kill'd him, the City declar'd for the King, the Treasure was restor'd to its Owners, and *Boloña*, with all the Men he had, took his Post at the *Desaguadero*, or Drein; the News whereof was joyfully receiv'd in the Royal Camp, where *Gomez de Solis* was sent to joyn *Boloña* with all the Men he could draw together, either to make good that Pass, or to fall upon the Rear of *Francis Hernandez*; a Resolution being taken, that the Army should march, to put an End to that War before the Winter came on, which drew near on the Hilly Country, and very subject to Snow or Rain.

The 17th of *August* the Army march'd from *Guamanga* to *Chupas*, thence to *Cochacoxa*, and so to the River *Abancay*, which they forded in two Days, with much Difficulty, the Bridge being burnt, and proceeded to the Village of *Abancay*, two Leagues from the River, and twenty two from *Cuzco*. Here they lay nine Days, when two Deserters came from the Rebels, and reported, that *Hernandez* was gone from *Limatambo*, which is four Leagues beyond the River *Apurima*, for the Vale of *Yucay*, six Leagues from *Cuzco*, where he design'd to give Battle, and spent his Time in dancing and revelling with his Wife, and those of others that follow'd him. Here the Marshal *Alvarado* came into the Camp, much griev'd for his Disaster. *Hernandez*, on the other Part, understanding that the King's Army was advancing

### 378 *The HISTORY of America.*

ing towards him, repented his having sent abroad several Detachments, and retir'd from the Vale of *Tucay* to *Cuzco*, and from thence towards *Urcos*, leaving the Licenciado *Alvarado* in *Cuzco*, who plunder'd all that was left, and took all the Swords that could be found, and then went away with four Pieces of Cannon that had been made of the Bells, and prov'd good. *Hernandez's* Motions being known in the King's Army, it was resolv'd to cross the River *Apurima*, which was done at a rapid strong Ford, where none had pass'd before, and yet nothing was lost, tho' there were 20000 Souls belonging to the Troops. A few Days before *Don Peter Portocarrero* had joyn'd the Army with 150 good Musketeers, well arm'd and mounted, for at that Time very few of the Infantry march'd afoot in *Pern*, there being such great Plenty of Mules and Mares. The King's Forces advanc'd with much Fatigue in the Night to *Brecacongá*, half a League beyond *Limatambo*, where a Captain of the Indian Nation, call'd *Canares*, came to them with fifty Men, well arm'd after their manner, saying, he came to serve the King, and that *Francis Hernandez* was marching to *Urcos*, where he gave out he would give Battle. The next Day the Army advanc'd to *Xaquixaguana*, four Leagues from *Cuzco*; whence they proceeded through that City, being in Number 1100 Horse and Foot, and incamp'd beyond it in the Vale de las Salinas, or of the Saltpits; whence they advanc'd to *Quiquixana* and *Angulla*, and there understood that *Gomez de Solis*, who had been sent to be Captain General in the Province of *Arequipa*, had been defeated by *Piedrabita*, one of the Rebel Commanders, and went away with some of his own Men to joyn *Francis Bolón*, above spoken of, at the

*Desa-*



*Desaguadero*, or Drein. The Royal Army being come within two Leagues of *Pucara*, there happened several Skirmishes, in which many Prisoners were taken by the King's Party, and all pardon'd; which prov'd of good Effect to destroy the Report spread among the Rebels of the Severity of the Royal Judges; whereupon *Hernandez* order'd his Men to give no Quarter, that they might fight the more desperately. At length the King's Army incamp'd in Sight of *Pucara*, on a Ground very strong by Nature, and yet fortify'd by the General for the more Security, *Hernandez* lying on that Spot which is call'd *Pucara*, in the *Indian* Language signifying a Fort, being one of theirs, on an Hill, about a League in Compass, somewhat shelter'd with small Trees, which were of Use, all the rest of the Country being bare, and void of Wood.

After many small Adventures, too tedious to relate, a Letter from one of the Rebels was brought to one of the King's Soldiers, giving Advice, that *Francis Hernandez* was preparing to attack the Royal Army. Afterwards the same Soldier deserted, and confirm'd that Intelligence; and an Hour after Night another Deserter reported, that the Rebels were already drawn out of their Camp to attack the King's; whereupon the Council of War agreed not to expect the Enemy in their Camp, but without the Trenches, where the Cavalry would be more serviceable. Accordingly they drew out along the hollow of the River, to avoid being discover'd, the Night being clear, and the Moon setting two Hours before Break of Day. *Hernandez*, on his Part, drew up along the Bank of the River, his Force consisting of twenty five Pikes, 500 Musketeers, and only twenty Horse;  
and

and by the Way of the Plain he sent 250 Blacks he had train'd, arm'd with Pikes and Muskets, with a Company of 60 *Spaniards*, waiting, when in Readiness, for the setting of the Moon. The King's Army form'd a Body of 400 Pikes, fronting the Enemy's Fort up the River, the Van, Rear, and Flanks being cover'd with Musketeers, having five Pieces of Cannon on the Left, and three on the Right, defended by 120 Musketeers. The Horse were posted on the Left towards the Camp, divided into two Squadrons, the one of 180 Men, and the other of fifty, or better; at the Head of which were the three Judges. When the Forces were in this Order, as soon as the Moon was set, the Scouts of Horse gave Notice, that one Body of the Enemy was marching down the River, and another along the Plain, that was between their Fort and the King's Camp, and that those who march'd along the River mov'd slowly, with their Matches cover'd. In this latter was *Francis Hernandez*, who being come within fifty Paces of the Musketeers commanded by *John Ramon*, halted, having discover'd the lighted Matches, his Design being to attack the Camp. *Ramon* seeing the Enemy so near, gave them a Volley, which being so unexpected, made them give Way, and run into an Heap; but *Hernandez* boldly brought them to themselves, and return'd another Volley, which wounded *Ramon* and others, and oblig'd them to retire to their Body. The King's Musketeers and Artillery began then to fire in such manner, that *Hernandez* halted to observe where the greatest Force of the Enemy lay, the Darkness being so great, that nothing could be seen besides the Matches, and the Musketeers on both Sides ply'd it very thick, tho' with little Execution.

tion. Thus they fought two Hours, during all which Time the great Body of Pikes could not tell which way to move towards the Rebels, nor they towards the Loyalists, but both stood their Ground. *Ramon* having been forc'd to retire, as has been said, the Enemy furiously press'd on, crying, *St. James, Victory, Liberty*, 'till the smaller Squadron of Horse, commanded by *Don John de Sandoval*, where the Judges were, fell boldly in with the Rebels, and broke them, killing and bearing all down; and at the same Time the Musketeers that cover'd the Front of the Royal main Body, and those on the Left, charg'd *Hernandez's* Men so furiously, as they lay more open, that some of them were heard to say, *We are lost, let us retire*, and immediately they made towards their Fort, passing along within thirty Paces of the greater Squadron of the King's Horse, which refus'd to attack them, and the Pikes, who were in a Bottom, not knowing 'till an Hour after Day, which way those People mov'd, *Hernandez* had Leisure to recover his Fort, tho' with only 250 Men, whom the great Squadron of the King's Horse might have defeated with the greatest Ease, and so have put an End to the War.

The Batallion of Rebel Blacks, when *Hernandez* began the Fight, finding no Opposition, broke into the King's Camp, plunder'd it, and murder'd the Sick, and what others had been left there; but upon their return were set upon by some of the Horse, and put to Flight. Of the Rebels twenty were kill'd, many were wounded, and about 150 were taken, or voluntarily stay'd with the King's Party. The next Day about 100 of *Hernandez's* Men, who had fled several Ways, return'd to him, so that he had above 400. The  
King's

### 382 *The HISTORY of America.*

King's Judges having sent some *Indians* and Blacks with Letters to several Persons in his Service, promising them Pardon, they were all taken, and *Hernandez* having publickly read and ridicul'd that Pardon, cut off the Messengers Hands, and sent them back. The next Day *Hernandez*, to encourage his Men, had a small Skirmish with the Loyalists, at which *Thomas Vasquez* deserted from him to the King's Party, as did two Soldiers, one of them carrying *Piedrahita's* Helmet, in Token that he would come over that Day, as he did, towards the Evening, which quite cast down the Rebels, and *Hernandez* perceiving that his best Men abandon'd him, resolv'd to retire towards *Arequipa*, setting out an Hour after Night; but he had not travel'd above half a League before three of his Captains and a Major deserted, and after them 150 Soldiers, in small Gangs, for it being Night they could do it without Danger. Thus his Power dwindled away, and this was the End of the fifth Civil War in those Parts. Some of the Rebel Deferters having given an Account in the King's Camp of the Flight of *Hernandez*, the General *Paul de Menesses* set out in Pursuit of him with about 150 Men; and three Days after the Royal Court took the Way of *Cuzco*, and arriv'd there on the 15th of *October* this same Year 1554. The General pursu'd *Hernandez* with the utmost Diligence, and having taken nine of his Gang at a Village call'd *Yabre*, strangled Capt. *Sotelo*, one of that Number, and 2 others. Thirty two Leagues from thence he overtook *James de Alvarado*, with seventy *Spaniards* and thirty Blacks, who were all taken, and *Alvarado* with several others put to Death; then the General, with the other Prisoners, went away to *Cuzco*, where they heard that

*Her.*



## *The HISTORY of America.* 383

*Hernandez* was making towards *Arequipa*; however that being uncertain, Parties were sent out several Ways in quest of him. One of those Parties commanded by *John Tello*, and *Michael de la Serna*, after a long Pursuit discover'd him on a Plain half a League from the *Tambo* of *Atunxauxa*, and he perceiving that they were both Horse and Foot, whom he could not engage there, by reason his Men were all Infantry, took up the Side of an Hill, where were some old Walls; but the King's Men coming up twenty six of those Rebels deserted to them, and after them six or seven more. *Hernandez* himself was then taken fighting resolutely with all the rest, where the King's Captains executed some, and banish'd the rest, but resolv'd to carry *Hernandez* himself to *Lima*, which City they enter'd on the sixth of *December*.

---

### C H A P. II.

*Uneasiness in the Army after the Victory over the Rebels; Francis Hernandez executed; rising in the Province of Guatemala suppress'd; the founding of the new City of Segovia, in the Province of Venezuela.*

**T**O return to the Royal Court, which was then at *Cuzco*, having executed several of the Rebels, and upon mature Deliberation issu'd out

out proper Orders for the more due Administration of the Affairs of the Kingdom, and of impartial Justice, the Soldiers of all Degrees earnestly press'd for the Gratification intimated to them at the breaking out of the Rebellion. The Judges consulting about it among themselves, did not think that the War was yet at an End, nor all the Soldiers that had well deserv'd there present; besides that the Licentiate *Altamirano*, one of their Number, being absent, it was convenient to put off the Distribution of Lands, which the Soldiers insisted on, 'till their Return to *Lima*, where it would be seriously taken into Consideration, whether the Court had sufficient Authority to do it; but the Soldiers being very urgent, alledging, that their Sufferings ought not to be defrauded of the due Reward, and *Dr. Melchior Bravo de Saravia* being sensible it might be of dangerous Consequence for those People to conceive that their just Recompence was deny'd them, he order'd the Commanders to be assembled; and told them, that the Distribution of the Lands they demanded ought in Justice to be made when they were all present that had serv'd, whereas they by being so urgent, shew'd that they sold the King the Want he had of them; but that when all those who were then upon Service in several Parts should be all together at *Lima*, such Methods should be taken, that no Man might have just Cause of Complaint: He then charg'd them not to hold Cabals or Assemblies about that Affair, because it look'd ill, and made a Noise, and the People were scandaliz'd at it, thinking that they were extorting that from the King by Force, which he design'd to give them of his own Accord. With this they seem'd to be pacify'd for the present, and Orders were  
given

The HISTORY of *America*. 385

given for returning speedily to *Lima*, *Don John de Sandoval* having been appointed Corregidor of *los Charcas*, *John Ramon* of *la Paz*, and *Garcilasso* of *Cuzco*. Then the Men being all in Readiness, they set out from *Cuzco* with the Artillery on the 19th of *November* this same Year 1554.

As soon as *Francis Hernandez Giron* was brought into the City of *Lima*, orders were taken for proceeding against him, and he in his Confession declar'd, that all Persons whatsoever in *Peru*, of all Estates, Conditions, Qualities, Sexes, and Ages, had been of his Opinion. The Judgement pronounc'd against him was, that he should be drawn, or dragg'd in a Frail at a Horse's Tail, and his Head struck off, as a Traitor to the King, and a Disturber of the Kingdoms of *Peru*; that his Head so cut off should be set up in the Market-Place, and his House raz'd and sow'd with Salt, with an Inscription declaring his Offence. He dy'd like a Christian, and is said to have been born at *Caceres*, where having fallen into Disgrace with *Garcia Holguin Henriquez*, a Man of Quality in that City, whom he serv'd, he went away into *Veragua* with *Philip Gutierrez*, and thence into *Peru*, serving bravely upon all Occasions, till *Laurence de Aldana*, when he went to *Quito* for *Francis Pizarro*, against *Sebastian de Belalcazar*, took him thither, and there he stay'd, and became an Inhabitant, and Alcalde of *Pasto*, and afterwards came to be a Captain of Foot, and then of Horse, always behaving himself like a Man of Courage, and sound Judgment 'till his last Enterprize; the Nature of Man being such, that the more he aspires, the greater is his Fall, which brought him to his Death at the Age of forty three Years. Thus was the whole Empire of *Peru* at length brought into entire Subjec-

tion, the Natives having been before subdu'd, and no Rebellion attempted among the *Spaniards* ever since the last abovemention'd, for which reason we shall leave those Parts to shew what happened elsewhere.

Some wicked Men that were in the Provinces of *Honduras* and *Guatemala*, being of Opinion, that since the Affairs of *Pern* were in such extraordinary Confusion, as has been said, that might be a proper Opportunity for them also to bring all where they were into Disorder, that they might to live like Libertines, and exempt themselves from paying the grievous Debts they had contracted, they to this Purpose pitch'd upon *John Gaitan* for their Chief, and having assembled to the Number of forty *Spaniards*, with some Blacks, all well arm'd, they went away to the Settlement of the Mines of *Chuluteca*, where meeting with considerable Opposition, they directed their Course to the Province of *Nicaragua*, where the Licentiate *John de Cavalon* was Governour, and resided in the City of *Leon*, who having receiv'd Advice two Days before the coming of the Rebels, put those Men he had into good Order, and sent for Succours to the City of *Granada* and the Port of *Realejo*, directing the King's Controller *John Ruiz de Aguirre*, to keep the Ships that were there out at Sea, having been inform'd that the Rebels design'd to seize them, to attempt the same that the Brothers *Contreras* had done before, or else sail away for *Pern*, to joyn *Francis Hernandez*, or else to keep the Sea in his Name. Five Leagues short of the City of *Leon* there happened a comical Contest between *John Gaitan*, the Head of the Rebels, and his Lieutenant, or Deputy *Tarragona*, who valu'd himself upon being a Fortune-teller, and alledging, that  
it



## The HISTORY of America. 387

it was proper to turn out of the Road to *Leon*, and go away to the Port of *Realejo*, to seize the Ships, adding, that certain Heads and Bones of Cows and Bulls they had found on their Way, were a very dreadful Indication, and he fear'd, that if they went to the City they should all be hang'd. *John Gaitan*, who had a Mind to murder the Licentiate *Cavallon*, because he had banish'd him from *Nicaragua*; besides his Inclination to plunder that City, interpreted that Omen another way, saying, they ought to lose no Time, because those Bones rather denoted the Slaughter he was to make among the Inhabitants, and the Consternation the same should occasion throughout the *West Indies*. As they were holding on their Way the Scouts the Licentiate *Cavallon* had plac'd about the Country gave him Notice, that the Rebels were within two Leagues of that Place; whereupon the Inhabitants arm'd, and drew up in the Market-Place, to expect the coming of the Enemy, who boldly attack'd the Men of *Leon*, and they shewing no less Valour and Resolution fought resolutely, till they vanquish'd the Rebels, who could not stand to it so well, because their Powder had taken wet. When routed, *John Gaitan* made to the Monastery of the *Mercenarians*, where a Brother of his was then a Friar, and the Licentiate *Sotomayor*, who had been banish'd *New Spain*, was also withdrawn thither, seiz'd *John Gaitan*, and deliver'd him up to those that were in pursuit of him, who the next Day struck off his Head, and hang'd *Tarragona* to verify his Prediction, tho' he was mortally wounded; others were also hang'd, and the rest banish'd. Had they taken the Ships they would certainly have made a great Confusion in the Province of *Tierra Firme*, and in *Peru*, because

they had no Notice of it at *Panama*, nor was there a sufficient Force at *Collao* to oppose them; so that they would have been a great Addition to *Francis Hernandez*, who was not subdu'd at that Time.

To avoid too much dismembring of Relations, which we are oblig'd to sometimes by the General Order of Annals, and having finish'd the Account of Rebellions, which ended in 1554. we must now turn back to 1552. when the *Spanish* Inhabitants of *Tucuyo*, which is in the Government of *Venezuela*, and the Province of *Bariquicemeto*, thought it would be convenient to found another Colony, and Capt. *John de Villegas* being then Governour, he march'd out with a Number of Men, and discover'd Gold Mines on a Ridge of Hills call'd *St. Peter's*, near the River *Buria*, which is also nam'd of *St. Peter*, because discover'd on the Festival of that Saint. Those Mines prevail'd on him to found his Colony near the River; but it continu'd not long there, because it was unhealthy, and was remov'd to the River *Bariquicemeto*, and call'd *New Segovia*, by reason that *John de Villegas* was a Native of *Segovia* in *Spain*. The Climate and Disposition of this Country is like the rest of the Province; the Winter when it is Summer in *Spain*, and of Consequence the Summer when it is our Winter. The Plains are hot, but cool Winds come down from the Mountains, which refresh the People; this Place lying between two Ridges of Hills, as it were a Vale, in which several *Indian* Nations reside, who use various Languages, having little Provision of Grain or Roots, because the Rains are very uncertain, and therefore they subsist on a sort of Stalks like the Thistles call'd *Cardoons*, which they name *Cocuy*, from which they extract a Substance like new Wine boil'd thick;

thick; but they have some Gourds, and Plenty of Deer and Rabbits. Abundance of *Indian* Corn and *Yuca* grows on the Hills to the Southward, because the Country is wetter, and much Fish is taken in the Rivers of *Hacarigua* and *Borante*, and several Brooks; as also the Root *Barbafsto*, which they throw pounded into the River, where it stupefies the Fish, so that they take them with their Hands. In Summer they make hunting Matches, because the Weeds being then parch'd up they set fire to them, the Beasts fly from it, and the Men standing in their Way shoot them, viz. Deer, Native Swine, Dantas, Rabbits, Snakes, Foxes, Tigers, and Armadillos, and thus they lay up Store of Provision against Winter. On the Trees that grow along the Rivers there are abundance of Bees, which make much Honey, and all these Rivers and Brooks run 100 Leagues from this Place, to fall into others that flow at the Backs of other Hills to the Southward, and direct their Course to the River *Viapari*, or *Huriapari*, that has its Source on the Back of *Peru*. Gold is found in the Mountain Country of the Province of the *Chichas*, and if the Inhabitants were better provided, much more might be had. The Way from *Segovia* to *Tucuyo* is along a Vale, twelve Leagues in Length, which is the Distance between those two Places. There were many *Indians* in these Parts, but the Small Pox, and their own Disorders have lessen'd their Number. They live in Hamlets, as is properest for them, to be near their Farms, because if they are at a Distance all the Growth is devour'd by the Deer, Foxes, Parrots, Jackdaws, Jays, and other Birds. The Natives are of mean Capacities and Inclinations, unpolish'd, and vicious, especially as to drinking, and when drunk

were wont to kill one another. They are altogether improvident, eating what they have, and when that fails range abroad for wild Roots to feed on, 'till their Corn is ripe, some of which is so in forty Days, and some in three Months. No Lords were ever known among them to whom they paid Obedience, only they respected the richest that would give them most to eat and drink. As to Religion, they had only a Sort of Physicians, who wore their Hair long, like Women, by which they were known; these cur'd the Sick, observ'd certain Fasts, liv'd in little lone Houses, where they call'd upon the Devil, ador'd the Sun and Moon, and when they wanted Rain, look'd out for a very beautiful Maid, went a begging among all the People, to pay the Mother the Price of her, then beheaded her near the River, and offer'd up the Blood in Sacrifice, saying, they gave that Maid to the Sun for a Wife, which the *Spaniards* suppress'd, tho' at first they would sometimes do it privately. In the Wars they had among themselves, they took up their dead Enemies, whom they carry'd home and devour'd. They fought stark naked, painted or daub'd over with that they call'd Bixa, wearing great Plumes of Feathers, and their Weapons were Bows and Macanas, sounding many noisy Instruments made of Gourds, and large Sea Shells. Now they are cloath'd, and feed on Beef and Mutton, and being restrain'd from having so many Wives as they had formerly, and drinking to Excess, they grow stronger, and are more healthy; for formerly they were ready to burst with prodigious drinking, and the frequent vomiting weakened their Bodies. Half a League from *Segovia* runs a Brook call'd *Rio claro*, or the clear River, because it always is so, and not far from  
its



it's Source, the Water sinks into the Earth, in Winter it has a very small Stream, and in Summer it is large, when it ought, according to the common Course to be the least; in Summer it waters many Lands, and is an extraordinary Relief when there happens to be a dry Season, for the Land there produces much *Indian* Corn, as also all Sorts of *Spanish* Grain and Plants, besides Lemons, Oranges, Figs, Pomgranates, Grapes, and many more, not to mention all the several Native Fruits. There are Ringdoves, Pigeons, and all other Foul in great Plenty and Variety; and for Cattle, Mares, Cows, Sheep, Goats and Swine increase very much, and the Cattle is the Trade of the *Spanish* Inhabitants of this Town; for they sell it in the New Kingdom of *Granada*, and when they want Cloaths, they wear Cloth made of Cotton, which they have taught the *Indians* to weave, and has prov'd very beneficial to them.

---

C H A P. III.

*Of the Wars with the Indians call'd Chichimecas in New Spain, and the Colonies founded in several Parts to curb them.*

THE Troubles of *Peru* have taken up so much of our Time, that we have not had leisure to look into *New Spain*, where *Don Lewis de Velasco* had enter'd upon the Government as Viceroy, who endeavouring to follow the good Example

### 392 The HISTORY of *America*.

ple set him by his Predecessor *Don Antony de Mendoza*, as is usual with all discreet Governors who are averse to Innovations, maintain'd those Kingdoms in Peace and Tranquillity, the People living in a regular Manner by Means of his good Administration, all publick Offences being severely sought into, and punish'd, because he took special Care that the Royal Court and the Officers of Justice should perform their respective Duties exact and uprightly. He liv'd in his own family with Splendour and Majesty, no Flattery or avaricious dealing was to come within his Walls; he honour'd good Men, rewarded those that serv'd the Publick; religious Men apply'd themselves to converting and instructing of the *Indians*, learning their several Languages that they might be understood by them, and heard with the greater Attention, and those People were very willing, because of the ease they found, having been discharg'd of the personal Tributes they had before paid to the *Spaniards*, and of the Burden of being *Tamemes*, or oblig'd to carry Burdens on their Backs all the Country over, of which *Don Lewis de Velasco* took singular Care. Learning flourish'd in the University, Commerce was enlarg'd, mechanick Arts were improv'd, Tillage increas'd, the Gentry enjoy'd what they had undisturb'd, the Country was plentiful and wealthy; the Officers of the King's Revenue were industrious in advancing and improving it, without being permitted to intermeddle in other Affairs; the Fleets carry'd much Wealth into *Spain*, in Plate, Cochineal, and other Commodities, and all the rich Mines were found and discover'd at this Time, which was reputed very fortunate, all Men being prosperous, contented, joyful and in Peace. In short,

*The HISTORY of America.* 393

the Viceroy was more like a Father than a Governor of those Kingdoms, only the barbarous *Chichimecas* gave some trouble on the Frontiers, against whom *Don Lewis de Velasco* gave very good Orders, which were a Check to their Insolence; for they never ceas'd molesting the peaceable and Christian *Indians*, drawing them away from their Obedience and the Tranquillity they liv'd in, and obstructing the good Progress they made in their Conversion and Instruction in the Christian Faith, by which Means they multiply'd in such manner, as to become more audacious and daring, being also assisted by their Neighbours up the Country, so that they became insufferable, and in the Year 1554 that War was look'd upon as very hazardous and difficult to manage. The Weapons they us'd were long Bows and Arrows, which last they carry'd in Quivers made of Deer-Skins roll'd, made fast to a Cord, which they girted about their naked Bodies, and on the left Wrist a Fox's or other Skin, with the Hair on, for the Bowstring to play upon, to save the Arm, for they were most dexterous and able Marks-men, letting fly their Arrows very fast, and thus they were wont to lie upon the Roads, first observing the People, Carts, and Gangs of Horses that pass'd along, posting themselves on some difficult Pass, Break, stony Place or Hill, near a Mountain or Rock, to obstruct the Pursuit of the Horses, and to have an Opportunity of escaping themselves, in case they were repuls'd, for they would keep themselves conceal'd by the Rocks, Craggs, or Bushes, and sometimes lying down cover'd with the Grass, and when the *Spaniards* came up near to them, especially if they were straggling and out of Order, they rush'd out on a sudden with great Fury,

### 394 *The HISTORY of America.*

Fury, Violence, and hideous Cries, which put the Men and the Horses into a mighty Conster-nation, and the more for that it was well known, they gave no Quarter to any, their Custom being to practise such Cruelty and Barbarity when they obtain'd a Victory, that they were wont to murder even the most beautiful young *Spanish* Women, after having made use of them, generally fleaing the Heads of those they kill'd, and that Skin, with the Hair on it, they made fast to a String, bringing out the same at their Festivals and Dances, as a Trophy, and he that could produce most of them at those solemn Assemblies was look'd upon as the bravest Man. When these Barbarians met with Success, they were wonderful quick at plundering; but despising Plate or Money as a useless Burden among them, they took all that was for cloathing, or if they hapned to take any Plate it was only such as was wrought into Vessels for use. Some Arms they would also carry away, taking Measure on the Coats of Mail with the Points of their Arrows, which were always of Flint let into the Wood, so very slender and sharp, that they penetrated the said Mail, unless it were extraordinary close. When they return'd home into their own Country with the Booty, they dispers'd into several Companies, in order to assemble again in some Place at a great Distance from that where they were before, to disappoint those that pursu'd them; and in case they should still follow, yet still they might meet with few; nor were they ever very numerous, it being very rare that above 200 went out upon an Excursion, or if they hapned to do otherwise, it was in such a safe manner, that tho' they did not succeed in their Enterprize, they were sure  
not



not to lose a Man, and they brought many with them from the remoter Inland Country.

One of these *Chichimecas*, whose Name was *Maxorro*, had made himself Captain of one Part of those Barbarians, leading about with him many of the Inland People, in greater Numbers than any of the rest, lay in wait upon the Roads, and sent Parties to rob and plunder several Ways, penetrating farther up the peaceable Countries, than had ever been imagin'd, doing so much Mischief, and committing such frequent Murders, that there was no travelling in any safety along the Borders of the Province, tho' at a considerable Distance, and through by-Ways; for those Robbers infested all Places, and those whose Business it was had no Power to obstruct them; for when Advice was brought of their being abroad, those Barbarians were got far enough off, and to look for them in that spacious, uncooth, and mountainous Country, was generally taking much Pains to no Purpose; so that the Mischief was done, and those who did it went off unpunish'd, and consequently more encourag'd, and expert by means of the Success and Booty, growing daily better acquainted with the Country, finding out all the proper Places for their Purpose, either to rob, or to make their Escape. The Viceroy *Don Lewis de Velasco*, having taken this into his Consideration ever since his first coming into *New Spain*, which was in the Year 1551. and being zealous for the Publick Good, made such Dispositions as he thought most proper for the obviating of those many and great Evils, and in order to it first sent the Judge *Herrera* with a Commission of a large Extent, and a considerable Number of Soldiers; but tho' that Commissioner, the Commanders, and Soldiers perform'd

form'd their Duty, it only serv'd the more to provoke those *Indians* to War, Rapine and Slaught-  
 ter, becoming more expert and daring, and cast-  
 ing off all Fear by often engaging with the *Spani-  
 ards*. Among other Things it hapned, that they  
 defeated a Convoy on the difficult Pass of *Ojuelos*,  
 in the way to the *Zacatecas*, which guarded sixty  
 Carts, from which they carry'd off above the Value  
 of 30000 Pieces of Eight in Cloth, wrought Sil-  
 ver, and other Goods, besides many Mules, and  
 several *Indian* Women, and among them one *Spa-  
 nish* Maiden, who being in their Power, by Sighs  
 gave them to understand, that she was pleas'd to  
 be among them, encouraging, and showing which  
 Cart had most Cloth to plunder, till seeing they  
 did not regard her, she got up into a Cart, in  
 which a sick Man was carry'd, and had two Mus-  
 kets, encouraging him to fire them, and whilst he  
 discharg'd one, she quickly loaded the other, and  
 thus going on, they defended the Cart, which  
 was the only one that escap'd.

The Viceroy *Don Lewis de Velasco*, considering  
 all these Mischiefs, and that the Land could not be  
 till'd, nor traded with, thought the best Expe-  
 dient for obviating those Evils, would be the  
 founding of Colonies along those dangerous Fron-  
 tiers; to the End, that Soldiers continually re-  
 siding in them might be always at Hand to oppose  
 those Robbers. Having accordingly pitch'd upon  
 a proper Place on the Road of the *Zacatecas*, the  
 City of *St. Michael* was founded, forty Leagues  
 from *Mexico*, in a plain Country, full of Breeds  
 of Cows, and good to travel as far as the Wind-  
 ings that are in the High-way; but extraordinary  
 dangerous, on Account of Robbers, who had there  
 taken great Booties, and committed many Mur-  
 ders,

ders, that being the Way for them to cross, as they came from their own Countries, from the Mountains call'd of *Viscocho*, and those of *St. Philip*, to those of *Guanaxato*, which at that Time prov'd very effectual; as also to secure the *Indians* call'd *Otomies*, who are in that Neighbourhood, the Province of *Xilotepeque*, and the *Tarascos* of the Province of *Mechoacan*, who were much infested by the *Chichimecas*. Enough has been said of the Nature of this Country where the Viceroy order'd Colonies to be planted, of its Fertility, Plenty, and wholesome Climate; however, it is to be observ'd, that tho' the Soil be good for all Sorts of Cattle in general, it is more particularly so for Cows; because Providence has so order'd it, that where there happens to be a Drought, those Beasts, which are grown wonderful numerous since first carry'd thither by the *Spaniards*, draw away of their own Accord, going up into the warlike Country, to subsist among the plentiful Pasture Grounds of Tuna Trees, and watering Places there are, and as soon as the Rains begin to fall, they of themselves come away into the plain and peaceable Country, without being drove, or compell'd to it by any Body, to enjoy the good Pasture in the Plains of the Towns of *St. Philip* and *St. Michael*. This Name was given to the Town on Account of a Church founded on that Spot by some Religious Men of the Order of *St. Francis*, who went thither from *Xilotepeque*, for it was before call'd *Tzcuinapan*, which signifies Dogs Water. The City of *St. Michael* is thirty Leagues from that of *Mechoacan*, and twenty three from that of *Guayangareo*.

In the Year 1554 the Viceroy sent *Francis de Ybarra*, a Man of Valour and Worth, to make  
Dis-

### 398 *The HISTORY of America.*

Discoveries by the Way of the *Zacatecas*, who accordingly set out, well furnish'd with Men, Arms, Horses, Blacks, and other Slaves, Bisket, Sheep, and all other Neccessaries for his Enterprize. He first discover'd the Mines of *St. Martin*, those of *St. Luke*, of *Aviño*, and several others in that Territory, which have yielded great Quantities of Silver; besides which within the Territory of the Mines of *St. Martin*, were found those call'd *del Sombrerete*, *de los Ranchos*, *de los Calchuites*, and *de las Nieves*, where there is much Ore, and they are so good that if the Miners had Plenty of Quick-silver at moderate Rates, it is thought much more Plate might be had than there is. The Viceroy order'd Towns to be built about those Mines, because the Natives were in Arms; and thus they were kept in Awe from the *Zacatecas* to the Mines of *St. Barbara*, being 100 Leagues distant. Tho' I did not design to have gone beyond this Year 1554. I will conclude with what was done by *Francis de Ibarra*: After he had settled Colonies at the Mines of *St. Martin*, and subdu'd the Natives, there came to that Place some Religious Men of the Order of *St. Francis*, with a Commission from the Viceroy to go on to find other Towns, and preach the Gospel, and *Ibarra* thinking they would be in danger, resolv'd to bear them Company, with a good Party of Men, and at this Time they discover'd the Vale of *St. John*, and the River of *Nacas*; but the Natives that lay along the River of *St. John*, revolted; however *Ibarra* soon reduc'd them, and founded the Town of *Nombre de Dios*, which altogether pacify'd that Country. For these good Services the Viceroy appointed him Governour of all the Country beyond the Mines of *St. Martin*, and with that Authority he went to the

Town



## The HISTORY of *America*. 399

Town of *Nombre de Dios*, and subdu'd all the *Indians*, ten Leagues to the Northward of the Mines of *St. Martin*, and considering how necessary it was to keep *Spaniards* and *Indians* upon those Frontiers, he bought Mines at *Abino*, giving both *Spaniards* and *Indians* leave to take out as much Silver as they pleas'd, which employ'd those People; a Town was built there, the Excursions of the Enemy were check'd, and the King's Fifths were much improv'd.

Next *Ybarra*, by Order of the Viceroy, sent Capt. *Alonso Pacheco* from the Vale of *St. John* to found the Town of *Durango* in the Vale of *Guanadiana*, furnishing him with a considerable Number of Mares, Cows, Sheep, and a sufficient Quantity of *Indian* Wheat, Powder, and other necessaries. Three Months after the Governour went in Person to finish that Colony, which is in an healthy Situation, having much Land well water'd, and fruitful, yielding Plenty of Maiz, and other Provisions; and there are many Farms for breeding Cattle, both great and small, because of the numerous Rivers and Waters, Hills, and Pasture Grounds, and by that means the Natives submitted, grew civiliz'd, were cloath'd, and embrac'd the Christian Religion. *Ybarra* having 150 Soldiers, after having establish'd the Colony of *Durango*, proceeded still farther upon Discovery, finding the Mines of *Ende*, and *St. John*; but Winter coming on, he sent back the rest of the Men, and with only thirty advanc'd to certain large Towns he had been told were on the Mountains farther on, and accordingly found those now call'd *Topia*, in which Expedition he endur'd much Hunger, and went through many Dangers, being oblig'd to kill some Horses to eat. Being return'd home, he sent

## 400 *The HISTORY of America.*

Capt. *Roderick del Rio*, with Men, to settle at the Mines of *Ende*, which have prov'd very rich; after which he establish'd Towns at the Mines of *St. Barbara* and *St. John*, in the Government of *New Biscay*, three Leagues distant from each other, and twenty from those of *Ende*, all which Mines have not only afforded much Silver, but also Lead, which has been useful for working the Silver Mines. As soon as the fair Weather came on again, *Tbarra* return'd to the Province of *Topia*, enduring many Hardships, and especially cold, in so much that forty Horses were frozen to Death; however, those People were reduc'd, and the Governour proceeded to the Province of *Cinaloa*, where having secur'd the Natives, he built the Town of *St. John of Cinaloa*; and thence sent Capt. *Anthony de Betanzos* to the Town of *Culiacan*, to bring Cattle to breed, Cloth, Linen, Shoes, and other Necessaries for those that were to stay there, and then the *Franciscan* Friars applying themselves to the Conversion of the *Indians*, found extraordinary Success among those barbarous People. Next *Tbarra* proceeded to the Province of *Chiametla*, to the Northward, where he built the Town of *St. Sebastian*, and travell'd thence 300 Leagues up the Country, finding large Towns of Natives cloath'd, having abundance of Provisions, a fruitful Soil, the Houses with flat Roofs, but was bound to retire, because the Natives were numerous and warlike; he had but few Men, and was very remote from *New Spain*. The last Colony founded by *Tbarra* was that of *Chiametla*, 100 Leagues from *Cinaloa*, where rich Mines of Silver have been found.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

*Laws and Ordinances establish'd by the King and Council for the better Government of the West-Indies.*

WE will conclude this Work with an Extract of some wholesome Laws, and Ordinances establish'd by the King and Council of Spain, for the Government of the *West-Indies*, where many ill Customs had been introduc'd by the Liberty of the Wars. First, That Visitors should be appointed about *Mexico* to take care that the *Indians* should not be wrong'd, and that the Quantity and Quality of the Taxes they were to pay should be specify'd. Second, That for want of Issue Male, the eldest legitimate Daughter should succeed in her Father's Estate; but that the same should descend no farther; but the *Indians* revert to the Crown. That the *Dominican*, *Franciscan*, and *Augustinian* Friars should not intermeddle in matrimonial Cases, but leave them to the Diocesan. That the *Indians* should be freely permitted to keep their *Tianguex*, or Markets, and there dispose of their Commodities. That no Corregidor, or Alcalde, should exact any thing from the *Indians*, on any Pretence whatsoever. That in regard the *Indians* were naturally slothful, they should be compell'd to till their Lands. Thus much in the Year 1552; and in 1553 was

VOL. VI. D d ordain'd

ordain'd as follows: To the End, that the *Indians* might be the better us'd, it was enacted this Year, That the Visitors who were sent to redress their Grievances, should repair in Person to their respective Towns, and not send Commissioners; and that the *Indians* should not be permitted to give House-room by way of *Tribute*; and that no Presents should be admitted in settling the Rates. The King being intent upon having Hospitals founded in all Parts of the *West-Indies*, an Order was this Year sent over thither, directing, that upon the founding of any new Towns, or Colonies, there should at first be mark'd out proper Places for a Council-House, a Chapter-House, a Custom-House, and Store Houses, near the Church and Harbour, so that in Time of Need they might be helpful to one another; as also an Hospital for the Poor, and sick Persons that had not contagious Distempers; and this to be close by the Church, as a Cloister to it; for such as had infectious Distempers the Hospital should be so posited, that no hurtful Wind passing through it should blow upon the Town, and if built on an Eminence it would be the better. At the same Time his Majesty directed an Hospital to be built in the City of *Mexico*, for curing of poor *Indians* that resorted thither; and in regard this was for the Service of God, the Viceroy *Don Lewis de Velasco* was commanded, that since this Order was particularly issu'd for his Information, the Hospital should be built in such Place as he judg'd most convenient; and that 2000 Pieces of Eight of the King's Money should be expended on the Fabrick, and 400 a Year allow'd for the Maintenance of the said Hospital, till such Times as better Provision could be made.



## The HISTORY of *America*. 403

As soon as Advice was brought into *Spain* of the Death of the Viceroy *Don Antony de Mendoza*, and of the Rebellion in *Peru*, the King appointed *Don Hurtado de Mendoza*, Marques de *Canete*, to succeed in that Viceroyship, ordering him to set out immediately to quell the Commotions there; which was delay'd, because he demanded the same Powers that the Licenciate *Gasca* had before, which was at length granted him, as far as was requisite for clearing that Kingdom of idle and tumultuous People, by sending them abroad upon new Conquests and Discoveries; and all Persons whatsoever were prohibited going over from *Spain* into *Peru*, lest wanting Employment and Subsistence there they should afford fresh Matter for Mutinies. Having hitherto said little concerning the Perpetuating of *Indians* in such *Spanish* Families as were possess'd of them, it will be proper here briefly to touch upon that Affair. For the better understanding of the same, it is to be observ'd, that upon the first conquering of the *West-Indies*, the *Spanish* Commanders, to reward those that had serv'd under them, divided the Lands among them, with all the *Indians* living upon them, which they call'd *Encomiendas*, that is Commendams, because they were only given for Life, or till the King should order otherwise; which Gifts those Landlords wresting to their own Advantage, through Avarice treated those Natives like Slaves; whereas the Design was that they should have been no otherwise than as Tenants under them; for which reason we have seen repeated Orders sent from Court, for delivering those People from Oppression; but those *Spaniards*, who had them, were so fond of their tyrannick Power, that, as has

D d 2

been

# 404 The HISTORY of America.

been mention'd, they return'd upon several Rebel-  
 lions to maintain that illegal Dominion. That im-  
 moderate Power was restrain'd by several Ordi-  
 nances; so that the Landlords continu'd in that  
 Quality over the *Indians*, but not as absolute So-  
 vereigns. Many Debates were at all Times, whe-  
 ther the *Indians* should be so given up in Com-  
 mendam for ever; or whether upon the Deaths  
 of the present Possessors they should not be an-  
 nex'd to the Crown; or else whether they should  
 not be given for one or two Lives, and as those  
 fell off be again dispos'd of for one or two more.  
 After this Controversy had been bandy'd several  
 Years, in 1555. the Princess *Johanna*, who go-  
 vern'd *Spain* in the Absence of her Father, the  
 Emperor *Charles* the fifth, and of her Brother *Phi-*  
*lip*, King of *England* and *Naples*, order'd the Coun-  
 cil of the *Indians* to consider about giving the *In-*  
*dians*, as before, to perpetuity; and it was unani-  
 mously resolv'd in the Negative; and that those  
 Provinces should be entirely annex'd to the Crown.  
 Notwithstanding that Resolution, in the Year  
 1559. the King commission'd the Viceroy of *Pe-*  
*ru*, and two others, to confer those Perpetuities;  
 but the Possessors demanding civil and criminal  
 Authority over the *Indians*, the Execution was re-  
 spited. The *Indians* themselves being consulted to  
 know what they would give to be annex'd to the  
 Crown, and to have those Commendams among  
 themselves, offer'd an immense Sum besides all  
 their usual Tributes. Nothing was then concluded  
 upon this Affair, Opinions vary'ing so much; and  
 the same hapned in the Year 1572. when the Vice-  
 roy *Don Francisco de Toledo* was entrusted with it.  
 The Arguments that were urg'd pro and con are

too many to be here inserted, and of no great use to the Reader; for which reason we shall pass them by, and conclude this Work with the Laws and Ordinances the King by the Advice of the Council establish'd in the Year 1554.

The great Distance there is between the Courts in the *West-Indies*, and the Residence of the King and his supreme Council, gave his Ministers Encouragement to intermeddle in more than belong'd to them. So it was in the City of *Santa Fe de Bogota* in the new Kingdom of *Granada*, where the Royal Court of that Kingdom having introduc'd a new Custom, contrary to the Rights and Prerogative of the Town, viz. That one of the Judges by Times should sit in the Council of the City; commanding, under severe Penalties, that there should be no Session without them, by that means to encroach upon and oppress those Councils, the King directed, that the Judges should not interfere in the City Councils with the Magistrates, but leave them to their full Liberty. His Majesty farther directed, that whilst the Officers of the Royal Revenue were giving up their Accounts, they should not be admitted into the said City Council. And forasmuch as it was thought inconvenient that those who had *Indians* in Commendam should be Corregidores in *New Spain*; because Justice was not administer'd in the Towns where they were so; but on the contrary the *Indians* were mis-us'd, and oppress'd, by reason that those very Corregidores, who were to see to the Observation of the Ordinances made in favour of the Natives, being themselves Gainers by the Breach of them, they were altogether deficient in that Part of their Duty; however tho' the King thought  
this

this inconvenient, he refer'd it to the Discretion of the Viceroy *Don Lewis de Vêlasco*, who being upon the Spot, might take the best Order therein, as was expected from his Zeal for the King's Service. The said Viceroy of *New Spain* having been inform'd, that some Caziques exacted exorbitant and illegal Tributes from their *Indians*, and that there was much Disorder in the rating them, so that they paid more than had been usual at first; having thoroughly examin'd into all the Particulars of that Affair, sent the same over to the King for his Directions therein; who order'd, that wheresoever he found the same to be done upon a good Title, and that the Towns were able to pay, he should protect and support the Caziques in receiving the same; but where he found the same to be tyrannical and unjust Extortions, and taken without any good Title, and the Towns fallen to such Decay that they were incapable of paying, they should be moderated, and settled in a reasonable manner, taking care that no Frauds should be us'd in the raising of those Duties, nor any greater Sum rais'd than what was allotted; as also that if any Caziques should pretend to have a Right to those Tributes, as descended to him by Inheritance establish'd in his Family, the said Viceroy should examine the same, and do Justice, as was expected from him, and he accordingly settled and moderated all those Affairs. The Judges, who went about the Country as Visitors, were enjoyn'd particularly to enquire into the excessive Taxes, and to do Justice in that Case, as of the greatest Consequence.

The same Year Orders were sent to the Royal Court at *Lima*, charging them, that in respect  
the



the greatest Mischiefs ensu'd for want of punishing publick and heinous Crimes, they should connive at no such Offences, but exercise the utmost Severity against the Guilty, which would much contribute to the Peace and Tranquillity of that Country. And the King being inform'd, that the *Spaniards* who had *Indians* in Commendam, had receiv'd them upon Condition that they should instruct them in the Christian Faith, and that they did not perform it, which made those People continue in their Infidelity; for which reason the *Spanish* Landlords were oblig'd to return the Profits they had receiv'd; because the Original of such Commendams had been with Regard to the benefit of the *Indians*, that they might be instructed in the Faith, and no wrong done them; which is such an Obligation upon the Commendams, that in case of failure those who enjoy them are not only to return the Profits receiv'd, but may be depriv'd of their *Indians*; hereupon the King strictly enjoyn'd, that enquiry should be made whether such Landlords perform'd their Duty in that particular; and in case they did not, that they should be prosecuted with the utmost severity of the Law, depriving them of their *Indians*, and compelling them to refund what they had receiv'd, the same to be expended in the Conversion of the *Indians*. The Viceroy *Don Lewis de Velasco* having inform'd the King, that since the *Indians* began to understand all that related to the Administration of Justice, and many of the poorer Sort repair'd to *Mexico* to sue for Justice, where having none to speak for them, they were much pester'd with Lawyers and Officers, and knew not how to promote, or defer their Causes; the

# 408 The HISTORY of *America*,

King resolving that they should have all possible Assistance afforded them, as poor Persons, commanded the Attorney General to plead all the Causes of poor *Indians*; and in case any of them should happen to be at Law with the King himself, in that Case the Viceroy should appoint another Lawyer to plead for them, and see they had Justice done them.

F I N I S.



# T H E I N D E X.

*N. B. The first Number denotes the Vo-  
lume, the Second the Page.*

## A

- A** B I B E Mountain describ'd, Volume 5, Page 165.  
*Acacingo* reduc'd by *Cortes*, v. 3. p. 89.  
*Acha* Town on the Isthmus built, v. 2. p. 103.  
*Acosta*, a Villain sent by *Pizarro* to murder *Centeno*, v. 5. p. 151.  
 Adventures of Spaniards left in *Florida*, v. 5. p. 91.  
*Aguado* sent to enquire against *Columbus*, v. 1. p. 147.  
*Aguilar* (*Ferome de*) lives some Years among the Indians,  
 v. 2. p. 169.  
 His Account of himself to *Cortes*, 171.  
*Alarcon*, (*Francis de*) his Discoveries Northward on the South  
 Sea, v. 5. p. 279.  
*Alcazova*, (*Simon de*) his unfortunate Expedition, v. 4. p. 418.  
*Alcon*, a Spanish Soldier, mad in Love with a *Peruvian* Lady,  
 v. 4. p. 2.  
*Aldana*, (*Laurence de*) his Actions in *Quito*, v. 5. p. 162.  
 Alligators, v. 4. p. 97. and 200.  
*Alfingar* (*Ambrose*) carries over Germans into *America*, v. 4. p. 45.  
 His Discoveries, 58.  
*Almagro* (*James de*) contracts with *Pizarro* for the Disco-  
 very of *Peru*, v. 3. p. 370.  
 Sails after *Pizarro*, 376.  
 A second Time, 394.  
 Justly offended at *Pizarro*'s knavish Proceedings, v. 4. p. 64.  
 Arrives at *Peru* with 200 Men, 264.  
 Marches against *Alvarado*, 493.  
 Agrees with him, 496.  
 At Variance with *Pizarro*, v. 5. p. 2.  
 Reconcil'd, 3.  
 Prepares to invade *Chilo*, 4.  
 Marches

# I N D E X.

Marches towards that Kingdom,	Page 41.
Meets with many Hardships,	48.
Enters <i>Chile</i> ,	50.
Advances 100 Leagues into <i>Chile</i> ,	108.
Returns towards <i>Cuzco</i> .	110.
Treats with <i>Pizarro</i> ,	113.
Possesses himself of <i>Cuzco</i> ,	117.
Requires <i>Alonso de Alvarado</i> to depart his Government,	119.
Is warn'd that <i>Ferdinand Pizarro</i> would murder him, if ever it were in his Power,	121.
Routs <i>Alvarado</i> ,	122.
Meets <i>Pizarro</i> , and escapes his Treachery,	130.
Taken by the <i>Pizarro's</i> ,	139.
Murder'd by them,	145.
<i>Almagro</i> the younger, reduc'd to great Distress, v. 5. p.	242.
Declar'd Governour by his Father's Party,	292.
Discord among his Men,	295.
Put to death,	v. 5. p. 370.
<i>Alvarado</i> ( <i>Peter de</i> ) left at <i>Mexico</i> during the Absence of <i>Cortes</i> ,	v. 3. p. 40.
Is attack'd by the <i>Mexicans</i> ,	54.
Commands the Attack at <i>Tacuba</i> , in the Siege of <i>Mexico</i> ,	143.
Is hard press'd by the Besieged,	161.
Reduces Provinces that had revolted,	257.
Sent again to reduce other Provinces,	331.
Subdues them,	333.
<i>Chiapa</i> Province, &c. restor'd to him,	v. 4. p. 52.
Sails for <i>Pern</i> ,	381.
Suffers much there,	385.
Agrees with <i>Almagro</i> ,	406.
Made Governour of <i>Honduras</i> ,	v. 5. p. 106.
Settles Affairs there,	v. 5. p. 214.
Goes upon Discovery to the Northward of <i>New Galicia</i> ,	51.
Unfortunately kill'd,	354.
<i>Alvarado</i> ( <i>Alonso de</i> ) undertakes the Conquest of the <i>Chacka-</i> <i>pojas</i> ,	v. 5. p. 7.
Sent to relieve <i>Cuzco</i> ,	30.
Is requir'd by <i>Almagro</i> to depart his Government,	119.
He refuses,	120.
Routed by <i>Almagar</i> ,	122.
Sets out upon Discovery,	183.
Prepares to fight the Rebels under <i>Giron</i> ,	v. 6. p. 367.
Is himself routed,	372.
<i>Amazon</i> River, <i>Orellana's</i> Voyage down it,	v. 5. p. 251.
<i>Americus</i>	



# INDEX.

<i>Americus Vesputius</i> , who gave Name to <i>America</i> ,	v. 1. p. 214.
His Falshood,	223.
<i>Andes</i> Mountains,	v. 4. p. 180.
<i>Antiochia</i> Colony founded,	v. 5. p. 385.
<i>Antipodes</i> ,	v. 1. p. 10.
<i>Anzerma</i> Colony and Province,	v. 5. p. 167.
<i>Anzures</i> , ( <i>Peter de</i> ) his Discoveries,	v. 5. p. 169.
<i>Apaneca</i> Town and Territory,	v. 4. p. 150.
<i>Apparition</i> ,	v. 1. p. 125.
<i>Arequipa</i> Colony founded,	v. 5. p. 240.
<i>Arias de Avila</i> , ( <i>Peter</i> ) Governour of <i>Darien</i> ,	v. 2. p. 68.
Rais against <i>Balboa</i> ,	77.
Manages ill,	78.
Disobeys the King's Orders,	82.
His sham Reconciliation with <i>Balboa</i> ,	101.
Grows jealous of <i>Balboa</i> ,	109.
Murders him by Form of Law,	128.
Disobeys the King's Orders,	158.
Removes from <i>Darien</i> to <i>Panama</i> ,	159.
Goes thence to <i>Nicaragua</i> ,	v. 3. p. 379.
Made Governour of that Province,	410.
<i>Arma</i> Province,	v. 5. p. 197.
Armour of Gold, a compleat Suit,	v. 2. p. 127.
Arms given to the Island <i>Hispaniola</i> ; and Towns there,	v. 1. p. 323.
<i>Atacama</i> Desert,	v. 5. p. 109.
<i>Atahualpa</i> , Usurper of <i>Peru</i> , hears of the <i>Spaniards</i> ,	v. 4. p. 69.
More of him,	233.
Enters <i>Caxamalca</i> ; is seiz'd; his Army routed; and what follow'd,	256.
Treats of his Ransom,	263.
Is strangled,	276.
<i>Atlantis</i> Island,	v. 1. p. 2.
<i>Atunlunas</i> , what they were,	v. 5. p. 56.
<i>Axi</i> , Indian Spice,	v. 1. p. 68.

## B.

<b>B</b> ADAJOS ( <i>Gonzalo de</i> ) marches over to the South Sea,	v. 2. p. 86.
Bag of Pearls found,	v. 1. p. 199.
<i>Balboa</i> , ( <i>Basco Nuñez de</i> ) see <i>Basco Nuñez</i> .	
<i>Baldivia</i> , see <i>Valdivia</i> .	
<i>Basco Nuñez de Balboa</i> , first Account of him,	v. 1. p. 366.
Conducts the <i>Spaniards</i> from <i>Uraba</i> to <i>Darien</i> ,	368.
Drives <i>Enciso</i> from thence,	v. 2. p. 1.
The	

# INDEX.

The first that heard of the <i>South Sea</i> ,	Page 7.
Makes War on the <i>Indians</i> about <i>Darien</i> ,	18.
Made Captain General,	41.
Discovers the <i>South Sea</i> ,	50.
Takes Possession of it,	55.
Sails to the <i>Pearl Islands</i> ,	58.
Has farther Information of <i>Peru</i> .	59.
Returns to <i>Darien</i> ,	60.
Founds the Town of <i>Acla</i> ,	103.
Cuts Timber for Ships, and carries it by Land to the <i>South Sea</i> ,	104.
Loses all twice, and yet builds again,	106.
Murder'd by <i>Peter Arias</i> , with the Formalities of Law,	128.
<i>Bastidas</i> , ( <i>Roderick de</i> ) his Voyage,	v. 1. p. 245.
Bay of <i>Panama</i> ,	v. 2. p. 56.
<i>Belalcazar</i> ( <i>Sebastian de</i> ) sets out for <i>Quito</i> ,	v. 4. p. 370.
Enters the Province of the <i>Canaries</i> ,	371.
Makes Discoveries,	v. 5. p. 16.
Subdues the Province of <i>Popayan</i> ,	66.
Made Governour thereof by the King,	218.
Ill us'd by <i>Vaca de Castro</i> ,	297.
<i>Bernal de Piza</i> , a Mutineer,	v. 1. p. 120.
<i>Bernal Diaz del Castillo</i> ,	v. 2. p. 118, 119.
Bezoar Stone,	v. 4. p. 358.
Blacks sent to <i>Hispaniola</i> , liv'd long there,	v. 1. p. 374.
Their Revolt in <i>Venezuela</i> and <i>Santa Marta</i> ,	v. 6. p. 297.
<i>Bimini</i> Island, Fables of it,	v. 2. p. 37.
Bishopricks erected in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	v. 1. p. 375.
<i>Borriquen</i> Island: See <i>St. John de Puerto Rico</i> .	
<i>Borradilla</i> ( <i>Francis de</i> ) sent into <i>Hispaniola</i> to examine into <i>Columbus's</i> Conduct,	v. 1. p. 237.
He arrives at that Island,	239.
Seizes all <i>Columbus</i> had,	241.
Then his Person, and sends him to <i>Spain</i> in Irons,	242.
More base Behaviour of his,	244.
Is cast away at Sea,	253.
<i>Boyle</i> , mutinous Clergyman,	v. 1. p. 125.
<i>Brazil</i> describ'd,	v. 4. p. 88.
Brigantines built at <i>Tlascala</i> to besiege <i>Mexico</i> ,	v. 4. p. 101.
Carry'd by Land to that City,	132.
Launch'd in the Lake,	134.
<i>Buenos Ayres</i> ,	v. 5. p. 40.
Disorders there,	216.
	Burning

# INDEX.

- Burning Mountain near Mexico; Spaniards go into it, v. 2. p. 305.  
 Again, v. 3. p. 230.  
 Burning Mountains in the West Indies, v. 4. p. 377. and  
 v. 5. p. 54.

## C.

- CABEZA de Vaca:** See *Vaca*.  
*Cabral* (Peter Alvarez) accidentally discovers Brazil,  
 v. 1. p. 235.  
*Candia* (Peter de) his unfortunate Expedition, v. 5. p. 140.  
*Canibals* to be made Slaves, v. 2. p. 42.  
*Cano* (John Sebastian del) made Captain of the Ship *Victory*,  
 the first that sail'd round the World, v. 3. p. 151.  
*Capillana*, a noble Peruvian Woman, v. 4. p. 2.  
*Careta* Cazique taken, and releas'd, v. 2. p. 5.  
*Caribes*, v. 1. p. 71.  
 They are Man-Eaters, 84.  
*Cartagena* Government, v. 4. p. 216.  
*Carvajal*, (Francis de) a notorious Villain, v. 6. p. 53.  
 Disperſes the Loyalists, 96.  
 His Barbarity, 150.  
 Is executed as a Traytor, 176.  
*Casas*, (F. Bartholomew de las) v. 1. p. 338:  
 A great Protector of the Indians, v. 2. p. 31.  
 His Reputation among them, 46.  
 Goes into Spain to defend them, 74.  
 Is an Author of Credit, 114.  
 Undertakes to subdue the Indians by preaching, 160.  
 Defends them, 161.  
*Cassa* Fistula Trees in Hispaniola, v. 2. p. 155:  
*Castilla del Oro*, Disasters of Spaniards there, v. 2. p. 76.  
 Proceedings of Spaniards there, 89.  
 Describ'd, p. 129, and v. 3 p. 411.  
*Castilla* (Don Sebastian de) raises Rebellion in Peru, v. 6. p. 340.  
 Is kill'd, 345.  
*Caxamalca* describ'd, v. 4. p. 250:  
*Caymanes* Islands, v. 1. p. 283.  
*Cazique* in Hispaniola visits Columbus, v. 1. p. 63.  
*Centeno*, (James) famous for his Loyalty, v. 6. p. 80.  
 Is oblig'd to abscond, 96.  
 Raises Men for the King, 127.  
 Seizes Cuzco, and raises 1000 Men, 140.  
 Contrivance to murder him, 150.  
 Defeated

# INDEX.

Defeated by <i>Pizarro</i> ,	Page 152.
Appointed Governour of the River of <i>Plate</i> ,	201.
Challenge between an <i>Indian</i> and a <i>Spaniard</i> ,	v. 1. p. 301.
Charnel House at <i>Mexico</i> ,	v. 2. p. 380.
<i>Chianbuitzlan</i> Town in <i>New Spain</i> in Alliance with <i>Cortés</i> ,	v. 1. p. 217.
<i>Chiapa</i> Province describ'd,	v. 4. p. 187.
<i>Chichimeca</i> <i>Indians</i> discover'd, and Wars with them,	v. 6. p. 340.
Colonies founded among them,	v. 6. p. 391.
<i>Chicora</i> Province discover'd and describ'd,	v. 3. p. 118.
<i>Chila</i> Vale,	v. 4. p. 410.
<i>Chile Spaniards</i> there reduc'd to great Distress,	v. 5. p. 242.
Kingdom describ'd,	304.
Affairs of that Kingdom,	v. 6. p. 71.
More of it,	83.
Continuation of the same,	313, and 328.
<i>Chulula</i> City, a Place of great Devotion, in <i>New Spain</i> ,	v. 2. p. 304.
<i>Cortés</i> punishes the Inhabitants for endeavouring to destroy him,	313.
<i>Chumbo</i> Province,	v. 4. p. 384.
<i>Chuquiabo</i> Colony founded, and the Country describ'd,	v. 6. p. 221.
<i>Chuquimayo</i> Province,	v. 6. p. 239.
<i>Cibao</i> Province in <i>Hispaniola</i> , abounding in Gold,	v. 1. p. 119.
121. and 123.	
<i>Cibola</i> Province,	v. 5. p. 209 and 274.
<i>Cimpancingo</i> , a great City taken by <i>Cortés</i> ,	v. 1. p. 270.
<i>Cinaloa</i> Province,	v. 4. p. 206.
Coca Plant,	v. 5. p. 282, and 318.
<i>Cochimille</i> ,	v. 3. p. 300.
<i>Colima</i> Province,	v. 3. p. 274.
A Colony founded there,	275.
Conquer'd and describ'd,	v. 6. p. 179, and 185.
<i>Colmemares</i> arrives at <i>Darien</i> ,	v. 1. p. 371.
<i>Columbus</i> ( <i>Don Christopher</i> ) Admiral and Discoverer of <i>America</i> , his Birth,	v. 1. p. 24.
Offers his Discovery in <i>Portugal</i> ,	25.
Goes into <i>Spain</i> , and makes Proposals there,	26.
His offer admitted by Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> ,	30.
Terms agreed on,	31.
Sails on his Discovery,	34.
His Observations,	37.
Discovers the Island <i>St. Salvador</i> ,	46.
	Is



# INDEX.

Is sworn Admiral and Viceroy,	Vol. 1. Page 46.
Discovers <i>Cuba</i> , 53, and <i>Hispaniola</i> , 60.	
Visited by a Cazique there,	63.
Returns the Visit,	66.
Loses his Ships,	69.
Erects a Fort in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	71.
Sails for <i>Spain</i> ,	81.
Sees the Island of <i>St. John de Puerco Rico</i> ,	84.
Arrives at the <i>Azores</i> ,	86.
Puts into <i>Lisbon</i> ,	88.
Visits the King of <i>Portugal</i> ,	90.
Sails to <i>Palos</i> ,	91.
Is honourably receiv'd by the King of <i>Spain</i> ,	93.
His second Voyage for the <i>West-Indies</i> ,	99. 103.
Discovers new Islands,	106.
Finds his Colony at <i>Hispaniola</i> destroy'd,	112.
Builds another call'd <i>Isabela</i> ,	116.
Difficulties he struggles with,	132.
Resolves to return into <i>Spain</i> in his own Defence,	156.
Clears himself at Court,	155.
His third Voyage from <i>Spain</i> ,	186.
Returns to <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	204.
Endeavours to reduce the Rebels,	206.
Is sent to <i>Spain</i> in Irons,	243.
His fourth Voyage,	252.
In Distress at <i>Jamaica</i> ,	284.
Gains Reputation among the <i>Indians</i> ,	294.
Is fetch'd off from <i>Jamaica</i> to <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	307.
Sails for <i>Spain</i> ,	308.
Falsly entertain'd by King <i>Ferdinand</i> ,	310.
His Death, Person and Character,	311.
<i>Columbus</i> ( <i>Bartholomew</i> ) in <i>Hispaniola</i> gives Account of his Adventures,	v. 1. p. 138.
Made Captain General, 152, and Adelantado, 179.	
Sent with Instructions to his Nephew <i>James</i> the Admiral,	v. 2. p. 17,
<i>Columbus</i> , ( <i>Don James</i> ) Son to the Admiral, sues for his Father's Rights,	v. 1. p. 329.
Prevails in part,	330.
Arrives in <i>Hispaniola</i> as Governour,	334.
Restor'd to some of his Father's Rights,	v. 3. p. 2.
Dyes in <i>Spain</i> ,	368.
<i>Columbus</i> , ( <i>Don Lewis</i> ) Grandson to the Admiral, made Governour of <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	v. 5. p. 266.
<i>Comagre</i> Cazique,	v. 2. p. 5.
	His

# INDEX.

His fine Palace,	Page 6.
His Son presents the <i>Spaniards</i> , and gives the first Inti- mation of the <i>South Sea</i> , and some of <i>Pern</i> ,	7.
The <i>Cazique</i> his Family baptiz'd,	8.
<i>Comayagua</i> Colony founded,	v. 5. p. 213.
<i>Compostela</i> Colony founded,	v. 4. p. 102.
<i>Conception</i> Island discover'd,	v. 1. p. 50.
<i>Conception</i> City in <i>Chile</i> ,	
<i>Condors</i> Birds,	v. 4. p. 359. v. 6. p. 315.
Continent of <i>America</i> discover'd,	v. 1. p. 190.
<i>Contreras</i> ( <i>Peter and Ferdinand de</i> ) raise a Rebellion in <i>Ni- caragua</i> ,	v. 6. p. 266.
Their Proceedings,	270.
Are defeated,	280.
Copper Axes taken for Gold,	v. 2. p. 145.
<i>Cornado</i> ( <i>Francis Vasquez</i> ) discovers the Provinces of <i>Cibola</i> and <i>Quivira</i> ,	v. 5. p. 273.
<i>Cortes</i> , ( <i>Ferdinand</i> ) the most renowned Conqueror of <i>New Spain</i> , goes over into <i>Hispaniola</i> , his Birth, Character, &c.	v. 1. p. 308.
Is seiz'd, and like to be hang'd by <i>Velasquez</i> .	v. 2. p. 29.
Pardon'd and reduc'd to great Streights,	30.
Marrys, has <i>Indians</i> , and grows rich,	ib.
Made Commander of a Fleet by <i>James Velasquez</i> , Gover- nour of <i>Cuba</i> ,	147.
A Jester renders him suspected,	148.
<i>Velasquez</i> intending to remove him, he secures the Fleet,	149.
Sails for the <i>Havana</i> ,	153.
Departs thence,	164.
His Force, 11 Sail, and 690 Men,	165.
His Speech to them,	ib.
Arrives at <i>Cozumal</i> ,	167.
Gets a <i>Spaniard</i> call'd <i>Aguilar</i> for his Interpreter,	171.
Defeats the <i>Indians</i> , and takes the Town of <i>Tabasco</i> ,	180.
Another Engagement,	181. and 182.
Concludes a Peace with the <i>Cazique</i> ,	184.
Sails for <i>Tabasco</i> ,	186.
Lands at <i>St. John de Ulua</i> ,	195.
Receives Presents from <i>Moteczuma</i> ,	197.
Erects the Colony of <i>Villa Rica</i> ,	207.
Resigns the Commission he had from <i>James Velasquez</i> .	ib.
Is chosen General in the King's Name,	208.
Marches to <i>Zempoala</i> ,	211.
Is friendly receiv'd there,	212.
Confederats	

# I N D E X.

Confederates with the Lords of that Place and <i>Chian- huizlan</i> ,	Page 216.
Receives another rich Present from <i>Motexuma</i> ,	223.
Enters <i>Zimpancingo</i> , which submits to him,	225.
Abolishes Idolotry at <i>Zempoala</i> ,	229.
Sends Messengers with a Present to the King of <i>Spain</i> ,	232.
Sinks all his Ships,	235.
Sets out for <i>Mexico</i> ,	240.
Sends Messengers to <i>Tlascala</i> ,	245.
Routs a Body of <i>Otomies</i> ,	252.
Defeats 30000 <i>Tlascalans</i> ,	255.
Puts them twice again to Flight,	260. and 263.
Punishes their Spies,	266.
Gives them a fourth Defeat,	267.
Regards not Omens,	269.
Takes <i>Cimpancingo</i> ,	270.
Concludes Peace with <i>Tlascala</i> ,	275.
Marches to <i>Tlascala</i> ,	278.
His Reception,	279.
Resolves to proceed to <i>Mexico</i> ,	303.
Sets out for that City,	319.
Enters <i>Mexico</i> ,	327.
His Answer to a Speech made to him by <i>Motexuma</i> ,	334.
Secures <i>Motexuma</i> ,	389.
Discourses him about Religion,	401. and 405.
Burns his General <i>Conastapopoca</i> ,	411.
Endeavours to discover Gold Mines,	415.
Deposes <i>Cacamazin</i> King of <i>Texcuco</i> ,	421.
Persuades the <i>Mexicans</i> to submit to <i>Spain</i> ,	425.
Marches against <i>Narvaez</i> ,	v. 3. p. 42.
Defeats and takes him,	47.
Marches back to <i>Mexico</i> to relieve <i>Alvarado</i> ,	55.
Attack'd several Times by the <i>Mexicans</i> ,	59.
Fights his Way out of <i>Mexico</i> ,	70.
Defeats those People at <i>Otumba</i> ,	78.
His generous Reception at <i>Tlascala</i> ,	80.
Requir'd by the <i>Spaniards</i> to return to the Sea Coast,	82.
Subdues <i>Tepeaca</i> , 86. and <i>Acazingo</i> , 89.	
Founds the Colony of <i>Segura de la Frontera</i> ,	91.
Builds Brigantines at <i>Tlascala</i> , to besiege <i>Mexico</i> ,	101.
Marches from <i>Tlascala</i> for <i>Mexico</i> ,	108.
Routs 100,000 <i>Mexicans</i> ,	124.
Orders the Seige of <i>Mexico</i> ,	143.
Gains a Victory on the Lake of <i>Mexico</i> ,	155.
E e	Gives

# I N D E X.

Gives a general Assault,	Page 159.
In great Danger, rescu'd by a <i>Tlascalan</i> ; again by a Ser-	
vant, and a third Time by the Captain of his Guard,	163.
Sustains great Loss,	165.
Gives a general Assault,	171.
More of the same following, Gains the last Wards of the	
City,	178.
His Force at the Seige, and loss on both Sides,	179.
Sends Messengers into <i>Spain</i> ,	228.
Several Provinces submit to him,	230.
Sends to discover the <i>South Sea</i> Coast,	272.
Builds Ships there,	274.
Subdues the Province of <i>Panuco</i> ,	276.
Reduces the Province of <i>Tututepec</i> ,	278.
Rebuilds the City of <i>Mexico</i> ,	279.
The King's Order to him for the Government of <i>New</i>	
<i>Spain</i> ,	323.
Marches for <i>Xbueras</i> against <i>Olid</i> ,	346.
Suffers much by the Way,	347. and 355.
Discovers other Countries,	357.
Puts <i>Quautimoc</i> , King of <i>Mexico</i> , to Death,	360.
Arrives at <i>Nito</i> ,	363.
Then at <i>Truxillo</i> ,	ib.
Permits the Title of Lordship to be given him,	365.
Returns to <i>Mexico</i> ,	392.
Fits out Ships for the <i>Molucco</i> Islands,	405.
Misrepresented in <i>Spain</i> ,	415.
Goes over into <i>Spain</i> ,	v. 4. p. 21.
Made a Marques, and Estate given him,	25.
Returns into <i>New Spain</i> ,	114.
Fits out two Ships on the <i>South Sea</i> ,	416.
Sails himself on the <i>South Sea</i> ,	v. 5. p. 32.
Sends Ships again to discover on the <i>South Sea</i> ,	267.
Goes over into <i>Spain</i> ,	350.
<i>Cosa</i> , ( <i>John de la</i> ) an able Mariner,	v. 1. p. 214.
His Death,	346.
<i>Cozumel</i> Island, a Place of much Idolatrous Worship,	v. 2. p. 169
<i>Cuba</i> Island discover'd,	v. 1. p. 54.
Description of it,	v. 2. p. 11.
Proceedings of <i>Spaniards</i> there,	26.
Flourishing Condition of the Island,	74.
<i>Cubagua</i> Island,	v. 1. p. 333.
<i>Cumana</i> Coast, Monastery there destroy'd,	v. 3. p. 181.
Description of that Country,	303.



# I N D E X.

- Cayoacan City in New Spain,* Vol. 2. Page 327  
*Cuzco City; wonderful Accounts of it,* v. 4. p. 80.  
*Describ'd with its Territory,* 302.

## D

- D** *ANTAS* Beasts, v. 4. p. 197.  
*Darien River,* v. 1. p. 368.  
*A Colony founded there,* 369.  
*Sends Deputies to the King,* v. 2. p. 24.  
*Factions among Spaniards there,* 39.  
*Description of the Country,* 69.  
*Debates in Spain about Cortes,* v. 3. p. 1.  
*Description of the Coast from Panama to Santa,* v. 4. p. 6.  
*Desperate Enterprize perform'd by James Mendoza, and Bartholomew Fiesco,* v. 1. p. 285.  
*Differences with Portugal adjusted,* v. 1. p. 116.  
*Discoveries promoted,* v. 1. p. 321.  
*Towards the River of Plate, by Land,* v. 6. p. 30.  
*Discontents among Spaniards about sharing Treasure,* v. 2. p. 430.  
*In Peru,* v. 6. p. 256.  
*More of them,* 288.  
*Disorders of Spaniards in Hispaniola,* v. 1. p. 140.  
*Dobaybe Spaniards sustain great Loss,* v. 2. p. 109.  
*Dog, very strange Story of one,* v. 1. p. 339.  
*Dominica Island,* v. 1. p. 106.  
*Dominican Friars, their extraordinary Piety in Hispaniola,* v. 1. p. 337.  
*Good Effects of their Zeal,* 375.  
*Zealous for the Liberty of the Indians; go to preach in Cumana,* v. 2. p. 43.  
*Kill'd on Account of some vile Practices of Spaniards,* 45.  
*Found Monasteries on the Pearl Coast,* 138.  
*Four go to preach in Florida,* v. 6. p. 247.

## E

- E** *Arthquakes in Peru and Chile,* v. 5. p. 54.  
*Elizabeth, Queen of Spain, employs Columbus,* v. 1. p. 30.  
*Embassadors, how treated in New Spain,* v. 2. p. 248.  
*Enciso goes to Uraba,* v. 1. p. 367.  
*Depos'd from his Government of Darien,* 269.  
Encourage-

# INDEX.

Encouragement to Spaniards to go over into the *West-Indies*, v. I. p. 157.  
*Esquivel (John de)* sent to settle in *Jamaica*, v. I. p. 336.

## F

<b>F</b> AWNING base Clergy;	v. 6. p. 100.
<i>Ferdinand</i> , King of <i>Spain</i> , dyes,	v. 2. p. 101.
<i>Ferdinand</i> ( <i>Don</i> ) made King of <i>Texcuzo</i> ,	v. 3. p. 129.
<i>Fernandina</i> Island discover'd,	v. 1. p. 51.
<i>Florida</i> discover'd,	v. 2. p. 33.
More of it,	v. 3. p. 367.
Some Description of it,	v. 4. p. 33.
Much more,	v. 5. p. 225.
Forts built in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	v. 1. p. 150.

# G

<b>G</b> ABOT ( <i>Sebastian</i> ) sails from Spain for the <i>Molucco</i>	v. 3. p. 380.
Islands,	382.
Makes Discoveries up the River of Plate,	v. 4. p. 85.
Returns into Spain,	v. 3. p. 325.
Garay ( <i>Francis de</i> ) arms for the Conquest of <i>Panuco</i> ,	328.
His Expedition unfortunate,	331.
Dyes poor,	v. 6. p. 24.
Gasca (the Licentiate) appointed President to govern <i>Peru</i> ,	98.
Arrives at <i>Nombre de Dios</i> , and proceeds to <i>Panama</i> ,	115.
Sends to all Parts for Supplies,	141.
Arrives at <i>Truxillo</i> ,	147.
Draws together 1000 good Men,	165.
Passes the River <i>Apurima</i> ,	700.
His Forces encrease to 400 Horse, 500 Pikes, and	161.
Musketeers,	174.
He routs, takes and executes <i>Pizarro</i> ,	213.
Divides the Lands in <i>Peru</i> ,	215.
<i>Spaniards</i> dissatisfy'd with it,	224.
His Method for settling the Kingdom of <i>Peru</i> ,	254.
Returns to <i>Panama</i> ,	218.
Giron ( <i>Francis Hernandez</i> ) meditates a Rebellion, v. 6. p.	346.
Beginning of his said Rebellion,	364.
Retires, and defeats <i>Paul de Meneses</i> ,	372.
Routs the Marshal <i>Alvarado</i> ,	380.
Is himself defeated,	Taken.

# I N D E X.

Taken,	Page 383.
Executed as a Traytor,	385.
Godoy ( <i>James de</i> ) reduces revolted Provinces in <i>New Spain</i> ,	v. 3. p. 332.
Gold Dust,	v. 1. p. 123.
Found in the Rivers of <i>New Spain</i> ,	v. 2. p. 417.
<i>Gorgona</i> Island,	v. 4. p. 9.
Government and Manners of several Provinces,	v. 3. p. 312.
<i>Garcias a Dios</i> Cape,	v. 1. p. 263.
Grain of Gold of a prodigious Magnitude,	v. 1. p. 251.
<i>Granada</i> (new Kingdom of) discover'd,	v. 5. p. 74.
Describ'd,	85.
What was doing there,	v. 6. p. 178.
<i>Grijalva</i> ( <i>Francis Hernandez de</i> ) makes Discoveries at <i>Yucaton</i> ,	v. 2. p. 119.
Has a compleat Suit of Gold Armour given him,	127.
Farther Discoveries made by him,	139, and 144.
<i>Guaba</i> Fruit,	v. 5. p. 61.
<i>Guacachule</i> City in <i>New Spain</i> describ'd, and enter'd by <i>Cortes</i> ,	v. 3. p. 93.
<i>Guacanagari</i> Cazique in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	v. 1. p. 66.
<i>Guadalupe</i> Island,	v. 1. p. 106.
<i>Guamanga</i> Colony founded,	v. 5. p. 353.
Describ'd,	366.
Rebellion there,	v. 6. p. 353.
<i>Guanahani</i> Island, call'd <i>San Salvador</i> ; the first discover'd	v. 1. p. 46.
by <i>Columbus</i> ,	v. 1. p. 259.
<i>Guanajos</i> Islands,	v. 4. p. 139.
More of them,	v. 1. p. 172.
<i>Guarimoex</i> Cazique in <i>Hispaniola</i> routed,	v. 4. p. 233.
<i>Guascar</i> , rightful Monarch of <i>Peru</i> at War with <i>Atahualpa</i> ,	261.
the Usurper,	266.
Taken by the Usurper,	325.
Murder'd by him,	v. 3. p. 338.
More,	v. 4. p. 54.
<i>Guatemala</i> Province,	145.
What happen'd there,	v. 5. p. 336.
Description of it,	v. 3. p. 258.
<i>Guatemala</i> City destroy'd by an Inundation,	v. 4. p. 321.
<i>Guaxaca</i> Province describ'd,	v. 1. p. 228.
<i>Guaynacapac</i> , Monarch of <i>Peru</i> ,	v. 1. p. 226.
<i>Guerra</i> ( <i>Christopher</i> ) sails from <i>Spain</i> to <i>Paria</i> ,	
<i>Guevara</i> ( <i>Don Hernando de</i> ) raises a Mutiny in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	
and is quell'd,	

# INDEX.

<i>Gutierrez and Rojas, their Discoveries towards the River of Plate,</i>	v. 6. p. 30.
<i>Guzman (Nuño de) made Governour of Panuco,</i>	v. 4. p. 20.
His Villanies,	23.
His Tyranny in <i>New Spain,</i>	50.
Marches against the <i>Chichimecas,</i>	98.
His Actions there,	106.
Discoveries,	204.
More Villanies of his,	418.

## H

<b>H</b> ACARI Vale,	v. 4. p. 412.
<i>Henry Cazique in Hispaniola revolts, and the Cause he had,</i>	v. 2. p. 188.
Kills two <i>Spaniards</i> in his own Defence,	190.
Will not permit his <i>Indians</i> to kill and plunder,	191.
Disarms, and dismisses 70 <i>Spaniards,</i>	192.
Upbraids the <i>Spaniards</i> with Falshood,	194.
Still worsts the <i>Spaniards,</i>	v. 4. p. 48.
At last concludes a Peace with them,	223.
<i>Hernandez de Cordova (Francis) makes Discoveries towards Yucatan and Honduras,</i>	v. 2. p. 113.
<i>Higuanas. See Yguanas.</i>	
<i>Higuey Province in Hispaniola,</i>	v. 1. p. 256.
<i>Hispaniola Island, properly la Española, discover'd,</i>	v. 1. p. 60.
Great Army of Natives routed,	143.
Description of the Island, Customs, &c. of the Natives,	158 to 167.
Insurrections of the Natives,	181.
Two of the Caziques taken,	183.
Quantity of Gold found there,	317.
Revolt of the <i>Indians</i> there,	p. 47.
<i>Hincilopucheo City in New Spain,</i>	v. 2. p. 327.
<i>Honduras, Manners and Customs, &amp;c. of the Natives,</i>	v. 4. p. 131.
Description of the Country,	v. 5. p. 120.
Horses have Cotton Blankets brought them to lye on, and Fowls to eat,	v. 2. p. 185.

## J

<b>J</b> AMAICA Island, by <i>Columbus</i> , call'd <i>Santiago</i> ,	v. 1. p. 135.
<i>Columbus</i> in Distress there,	284.
<i>Esquivel</i> sent to make Settlements in it,	336.
<i>Jardin</i>	



# I N D E X.

<i>Jardin de la Reyna,</i>	Vol. 1. Page 129.
<i>Ica Vale,</i>	v. 1. p. 411.
<i>Idols of Mexicans,</i>	v. 2. p. 377.
<i>Indians of Guanahani, the first discover'd,</i>	v. 1. p. 47.
<i>Indians, which Canibals, and which not,</i>	v. 3. p. 117.
<i>Indians entirely set at Liberty in New Spain,</i>	v. 4. p. 204.
<i>Inhuman Cruelty of a Governour of Jamaica,</i>	v. 1. p. 189.
<i>Of some Spaniards in Cuba,</i>	v. 2. p. 47.
<i>St. John de Puerto Rico Island, otherwise call'd Borriquen,</i>	v. 1. p. 108. and 327.
Colonies founded there,	338.
The Natives revolt,	339.
War with those People,	377.
<i>Isabela Island discover'd,</i>	v. 1. p. 53.
<i>Isabela Colony founded in Hispaniola,</i>	v. 1. p. 116.
<i>Isla Blanca, or White Island,</i>	v. 1. p. 141.
<i>Isthmus of America, or Castilla del Oro describ'd,</i>	v. 3. p. 25.
	and 411.
<i>Judges very wicked arrive in Peru,</i>	v. 6. p. 46.

## K

<b>K</b> INGS of New Spain,	v. 3. p. 195.
-----------------------------	---------------

## L

<b>L</b> ANGUAGES in Mexico,	v. 4. p. 118.
<i>Lepe (James de) on the Continent of America,</i>	v. 1. p. 234.
<i>Lerma, (Garcia de) his Actions at Santa Marta,</i>	v. 4. p. 49.
<i>Light seen by Sailors, call'd Castor and Pollux,</i>	v. 3. p. 11.
<i>Lima City and Vale,</i>	v. 4. p. 409.
Made Capital of Peru,	v. 5. p. 1.
Description of it.	13.
<i>Llamas, Sheep of Peru,</i>	v. 4. p. 357.
<i>Loaysa (Commendary) passes the Streights of Magellan,</i>	v. 3. p. 383.
His Tender arrives in Distress in New Spain,	385.
His other three Ships disperse,	387.
One arrives at the Islands <i>Ladrones,</i>	ib.
Then at the <i>Philippines</i> and <i>Moluccos,</i>	389.
<i>Lopez (Martin) builds 13 Brigantines at Tlascala, for the Siege of Mexico,</i>	v. 3. p. 101.
<i>Loxa City founded,</i>	v. 6. p. 109.
<i>Lucayo Indians carry'd over to Hispaniola,</i>	v. 1. p. 325.
	Lucayo

# I N D E X.

- Lucayo Islands*, three Parcels of them, v. 2. p. 38.  
*Lugo (Don Peter Fernandez de)* Governour of *Santa Marta*  
 v. 5. p. 35.  
*Luque Ferdinand de)* contracts with *Pizarro* for the Discovery  
 of *Pern*, v. 3. p. 371.

## M

- M**AGELLAN contracts with the King of Spain for  
 discovering a Passage into the *South Sea*, v. 2. p. 174.  
*Sails from Sevil*, 175.  
*Arrives at Rio de Janeiro in Brasil*, 176.  
*Enters the River of Plate*, v. 3. p. 10.  
*His Men mutiny, and he punishes them*, 13.  
*Winters at the Bay of St. Julian*, 14.  
*Sails thence, and arrives at Cape Virgins*, 21.  
*Finds the Streights of his Name*, ib.  
*Passes into the South Sea*, 23.  
*Arrives at the Islands call'd Desventuradas*, 24.  
*Then to those of Velas Latinas, or Ladrones*, 145.  
*Lands on the Island of Zebu, one of the Philippines*, 147.  
*Is kill'd there*, 149.  
*Mala Vale*, v. 4. p. 411.  
*Manati Fish*, v. 1. p. 278.  
*Manauze Indians*, some Account of them, v. 4. p. 44.  
*Manglares Trees*, v. 1. p. 344.  
*Mango Inga* revolts against the Spaniards, v. 5. p. 17.  
     *Flies from Cuzco*, 19.  
     *Besieges the City*, 25.  
     *Some Account of him*, 111.  
*Manners and Government of several Provinces in New Spain*,  
     v. 3. p. 312.  
*Maracaybo Lake*, v. 4. p. 57.  
*Margarita Island*, v. 1. p. 201.  
*Morigalante Island*, v. 1. p. 196.  
*Marina*, an Indian Woman given to Cortes, proves his best  
     Interpreter, v. 2. p. 198.  
*Markets in Mexico*, v. 2. p. 364.  
*Mafaya* burning Mountains search'd into, v. 5. p. 160.  
*Matatzingos*, their Manners, &c. v. 3. p. 319.  
     *Their Vale*, v. 4. p. 119.  
*Maxiscatzin*, noble Tlaxtallan, for Peace with the Spaniards,  
     v. 2. p. 246:  
     *Zealous for them after their Expulsion from Mexico*,  
     v. 3. p. 85.  
     *Mechonacan*

# INDEX.

	Vol. 3. Page
<i>Mechoucan Kingdom,</i>	234.
The King visits <i>Cortes</i> ,	239.
Description of it,	249.
Colony settled there,	259.
Rich Mine found there,	368.
<i>Mendoza (Don Anthony de) made Viceroy of New Spain,</i>	v. 4. p. 34.
<i>Mendoza (Don Peter de) made Governour of the River of Plate,</i>	v. 5. p. 40.
<i>Menesses (Paul de) routs the Rebel Giron,</i>	v. 6. p. 378.
<i>Mercadillo, his Discoveries,</i>	v. 5. p. 172.
<i>Mexicans Painters send Motexuma Pictures of Cortez's Army, his Ships, Arms, Horses, &amp;c,</i>	v. 2. p. 198.
Curious Workmen among them,	200.
Their Musick and Dancing,	342.
Game at Ball,	340.
Their Idols,	377.
Submit to the Crown of Spain,	425.
Submissive to their Monarch,	355.
Assault the <i>Spaniards</i> several Times in their Quarters,	v. 3. p. 59.
Press the <i>Spaniards</i> in their Retreat,	74.
Defeated at <i>Otumba</i> ,	78.
Send an Embassy to <i>Tlascala</i> ,	84.
Make desperate Sallies on the <i>Spaniards</i> that besiege them,	157. &c.
Rejoyce for their Success against the <i>Spaniards</i> ,	165.
Grow desperate,	176.
Their Kings,	195.
Their Religion, Laws, Customs, Manners, and Government,	204.
Their Funerals, &c.	220.
Degrees of Nobility,	224.
<i>Mexico City, its Grandeur, Original, and Situation, v. 2. p. 358.</i>	
Markets in it,	364.
The Temples,	372.
Sacrifices,	375.
The Charnel House,	380.
Taken,	v. 3. p. 179.
More of its Original,	v. 3. p. 190.
Four Quarters of the City,	194.
Their Kings,	195.
The City rebuilt after the Siege,	279.
More of it,	v. 4. p. 122.
<i>Mexico Archbishoprick describ'd,</i>	v. 4. p. 117.
	<i>Mexicalungo</i>

# I N D E X.

<i>Mexicalcingo City in New Spain,</i>	Vol. 2. Page 317.
<i>Migas People in New Spain,</i>	v. 4. p. 125.
<i>Miseca Province,</i>	v. 4. p. 124.
<i>Mitajos, what they were,</i>	v. 5. p. 56.
<i>Mitimaes in Peru, what they were,</i>	v. 4. p. 354.
<i>Molucco Islands, Actions there,</i>	v. 3. p. 404. v. 4. p. 39. and v. 5. p. 42.
<i>Monasteries founded on the Pearl Coast,</i>	v. 2. p. 138.
<i>Mortality of Spaniards in Hispaniola,</i>	v. 1. p. 254.
<i>Motexuma, King of Mexico, receives Advice of the Spaniards being on the Coast of New Spain,</i>	v. 2. p. 140.
<i>Sends Presents to Cortes,</i>	197.
<i>Sends more, and bids the Spaniards depart,</i>	199.
<i>A third Present,</i>	203.
<i>His Tax-Gatherers insolent, and much dreaded,</i>	217.
<i>Uses Art to divert Cortes from going to Mexico,</i>	318.
<i>Meets and compliments Cortes,</i>	328.
<i>His kind Expressions,</i>	330.
<i>A Speech of his to Cortes,</i>	332.
<i>His State at Meals,</i>	336.
<i>His Audiences and Diversions,</i>	338.
<i>Musick and dancing,</i>	342.
<i>His Palace, &amp;c.</i>	344.
<i>His Arms,</i>	346.
<i>His House of Birds,</i>	348.
<i>Armouries,</i>	352.
<i>Guards and Attendants,</i>	354.
<i>His Revenue, and how collected,</i>	358.
<i>Is secur'd by Cortes,</i>	389.
<i>His Answer to Cortes about Religion,</i>	410.
<i>Submits himself to the Crown of Spain,</i>	425.
<i>Bids Cortes depart the Country,</i>	435.
<i>Wounded by his own People,</i>	67.
<i>Dyes,</i>	68.
<i>His Character,</i>	69.
<i>Motives to believe there was another World in the Ocean,</i>	v. 1. p. 1. and 4.
<i>Musos conquer'd and describ'd,</i>	v. 6. p. 179.

## N

<b>N</b> ARVAEZ ( <i>Panfilo de</i> ) goes into <i>Cuba</i> ,	v. 2. p. 26.
<i>Sent by Velasquez with Forces against Cortes, lands in New Spain,</i>	v. 3. p. 34. His



His unfortunate Enterprize upon <i>Florida</i> , Vol. 4. Page 27.	
Never more heard of,	75.
<i>Nasca</i> Vale and River,	v. 4. p. 411.
<i>Nativity</i> Colony in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	v. 1. p. 73.
Destroy'd by the <i>Indians</i> ,	112:
<i>New Galicia</i> describ'd,	v. 4. p. 108.
Expedition thither,	v. 5. p. 413.
New Judges govern well in <i>New Spain</i> ,	v. 4. p. 116.
<i>New Segovia</i> Colony founded, and the Country describ'd,	v. 6. p. 388.
<i>New Spain</i> , why so call'd,	v. 3. p. 187.
Of the first Inhabitants thereof,	ib.
Manners and Customs of several Provinces in it,	312.
What Provinces it contain'd,	v. 4. p. 23.
Oppression of the <i>Spaniards</i> there under wicked Governours,	379.
<i>Nicaragua</i> Province and Cazique,	v. 3. p. 283.
Description of it,	288.
More of it,	339. and v. 4. p. 143.
<i>Nieussta</i> , ( <i>James de</i> ) Governour of <i>Castilla del Oro</i> , v. 1. p.	332.
Makes Slaves of <i>Indians</i> ,	336.
Sets out for his Government,	337.
His Generosity,	345.
Forſaken by his Lieutenant,	350.
Shipwreck'd on the Continent,	354.
Miserable Condition he is reduc'd to,	355.
His Men eat an <i>Indian</i> for Want,	357.
Arrives at <i>Portobelo</i> ,	358.
Builds a Fort at <i>Nombre de Dios</i> ,	ib.
His Indiscretion,	372.
Is rejected at <i>Darien</i> , puts to Sea, and is never heard of,	373.
<i>Niguas</i> Insects,	v. 1. p. 277.
<i>Niza</i> , ( <i>F. Mark de</i> ) his Discoveries in <i>North America</i> , v. 5. p.	207.
<i>Nombre de Dios</i> ,	v. 1. p. 269.
A Fort built there,	358.
North Sea Coast of <i>New Spain</i> ,	v. 4. p. 121. and 127.
North West Passage to <i>India</i> in vain attempted to be found,	v. 2. p. 367.

O

O BANDO ( <i>Nicholas de</i> ) made Governour of <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	v. 1. p. 247.
Arrives in that <u>I</u> land,	250.
	Plants

Plants Colonies,	Page 255.
His inhuman Cruelty,	289.
His vile Behaviour towards <i>Columbus</i> ,	296.
Much more of it,	307.
Knaveish Practice,	ib.
<i>Otomies</i> routed by <i>Cortes</i> ,	v. 2. p. 252.
<i>Qcampo</i> , ( <i>Gonzalo de</i> ) his Villany,	v. 3. p. 7.
<i>Ojeda</i> , ( <i>Alonso de</i> ) his Wile to secure a <i>Cazique</i> , v. 1. p.	141.
Obtains a Licence, and sails upon Discoveries,	214.
Sails along the Continent,	ib.
Arrives at <i>Venezuela</i> ,	218.
Next at <i>Paria</i> ,	219.
Raises a Mutiny in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	224.
His second Voyage,	246.
His third Voyage to be Governour on the Continent,	332.
His Actions there,	341.
He and his Men perishing with Hunger reliev'd by a Ship from <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	361.
His wonderful Cure,	362.
Goes away to <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	363.
Lands in <i>Cuba</i> , and made Prisoner by his own Men,	364.
Is carry'd over to <i>Jamaica</i> ,	365.
Passes thence to <i>Hispaniola</i> , where he dyes very poor,	ib.
<i>Ojeda</i> , ( <i>Alonso de</i> ) a second of the Name, villainous Action of his,	v. 3. p. 4.
<i>Olid</i> ( <i>Christopher de</i> ) commands the Attack at <i>Cuyoacan</i> , in the Siege of <i>Mexico</i> ,	v. 3. p. 143.
Sent to settle a Colony in <i>Mechoacan</i> ,	256.
Sent by <i>Cortes</i> to <i>Honduras</i> ,	328.
Revolts from <i>Cortes</i> ,	329, and 342.
Is kill'd,	344.
<i>Ordas</i> ( <i>James de</i> ) goes into a burning Mountain, v. 2. p.	305.
His Discoveries,	v. 4. p. 182.
His Death,	186.
Ordinances for the <i>West Indies</i> ,	v. 1. p. 318.
More,	v. 1. p. 17.
For the <i>Indians</i> to be free,	139.
For <i>New Spain</i> ,	v. 4. p. 23.
For protecting other <i>Indians</i> ,	421.
For their Conversion and Liberty,	177.
For <i>Hispaniola</i> and <i>Cuba</i> ,	v. 4. p. 223.
For the <i>West Indies</i> ,	205.
More for the <i>West Indies</i> ,	v. 6. p. 338.
More,	v. 6. p. 401.
	<i>Orellana's</i>

# INDEX.

- Orellana's Voyage down the River of the Amazons* v. 5. p. 251.  
 His unfortunate Return to that River, v. 6. p. 179.  
*Orgóñez (Roderick)* follows *Almagro* with Recruits, v. 5. p. 51.  
 His good Advice always rejected, 124.  
 He drives *Mango Inga* into the Mountains, 127.  
 His wholesome Advice again rejected, 130.  
 Murder'd by *Pizarro's* Order, 138.  
*Qitumba*, *Cortes* gains a great Victory there, v. 3. p. 78.

## P

- PACHACAMA** Vale, vast Treasure found there,  
 v. 4. p. 270.  
 More of it, 410.  
 Painting us'd in *New Spain*, v. 2. p. 140.  
*Panama*, v. 2. p. 135.  
 The City and Country describ'd, v. 3. p. 25.  
 Actions there, v. 4. p. 178.  
*Panches Indians*, their Religion and Manners, v. 6. p. 75.  
*Panuco* Province subdu'd, v. 3. p. 276.  
*Pasto* Province, v. 5. p. 163.  
*Paucura Indians*, v. 5. p. 194.  
 Pearl Islands discover'd, v. 2. p. 58.  
*Periacaica* Mountain at *Pern*, makes all sick that pass over it,  
 v. 5. p. 52.  
*Pern* describ'd, v. 4. p. 279.  
 Original of that Monarchy, 283.  
 Manners, Customs, and Government, 329.  
 Marriages, Religion, &c. 342.  
 Sorceries, Mitimaes, Fruit, Birds, and Beasts, 353.  
*Pinzon (Vincent Yanez.)* forsakes *Columbus*, v. 1. p. 82.  
 Is found again, 82.  
 Discovers 600 Leagues along the Continent, 231.  
 Another Voyage of his, 314.  
*Pisimires* a Plague in *Hispaniola*, v. 2. p. 155.  
*Pizarro, (Francis)* the first mention of him, v. 1. p. 363.  
 Left by *Ojeda* to command at *Uraba*, sails away with the  
 Men, 366.  
 Expedition of his at *Darien*, v. 2. p. 3.  
 Seizes the *Cazique Careta*, 5.  
 Views the *South Sea* Coast, 54.  
 Saves some *Spaniards* in Distress, 110.  
 Actions of his in *Veragua*, v. 3. p. 27.  
 Contracts with *Almagro* and *Luque* to make Discoveries,  
 370.  
 Sets

# I N D E X.

Sets out the first Time to discover <i>Peru</i> ,	371.
Routs a Body of <i>Indians</i> ,	365.
Continues his Discoveries,	394.
His Proceedings on the Coast, and Return to <i>Panama</i> ,	v. 4. p. 1.
Goes into <i>Spain</i> , succeeds at Court, returns to <i>Panama</i> ,	62.
and proceeds on his Enterprize,	77.
Enters <i>Tumbex</i> ,	81.
Marches into the Country,	82.
Founds the Colony of <i>St. Michael</i> ,	228.
His Stay in the City of <i>St. Michael</i> ,	235.
Marches for <i>Caxamalca</i> ,	248.
Enters that Place,	256.
Seizes <i>Atahualpa</i> , routs his Army, and what follow'd,	276.
Strangles him,	361.
Sets out for <i>Cuzco</i> ,	489.
Burns an <i>Indian</i> General,	492.
Enters <i>Cuzco</i> ,	v. 5. p. 2.
Imposes on <i>Almagro</i> ,	v. 5. p. 113.
Treats with <i>Almagro</i> ,	128.
Disappoints the adjusting of the Limits with <i>Almagro</i> ,	130.
Meets <i>Almagro</i> , his Treachery,	132.
Breaks through all Treaties, and disobey's the King,	135.
He and his Brothers all faithless Villains,	v. 5. p. 175.
Defeats the <i>Indians</i> ,	288.
Is kill'd by <i>Almagro's</i> Friends,	v. 4. p. 412.
<i>Pizarro</i> ( <i>Ferdinand</i> ) goes into <i>Spain</i> , and returns,	v. 5. p. 23.
Made Governour of <i>Cuzco</i> ,	118.
Taken Prisoner by <i>Almagro</i> ,	132.
Set at Liberty,	146.
Murders <i>Almagro</i> ,	184.
Goes into <i>Spain</i> ,	v. 5. p. 20.
<i>Pizarro</i> ( <i>Gonzalo</i> ) marches against revolted <i>Indians</i> ,	369.
His Insolence,	138.
Defeats <i>Almagro</i> ,	143.
Discovers the Province of <i>Canela</i> ,	v. 6. p. 42.
Prepares to raise a Rebellion,	51.
Causes himself to be declar'd Governour General,	57.
His tyrannical Government,	90.
More of his Insolence,	100.
The same continued,	103.
His Fleet surrender'd to the President <i>Gasca</i> ,	116.
Suppos'd to have poison'd one of the Judges,	121.
His Preparations for War,	His



# I N D E X.

His Perfidiousness to ensnare the Loyalists,	Page 129.
His Cruelty,	133.
Many Gentlemen and others desert him,	ib.
Consternation in his Camp,	135.
His inhuman Barbarity,	148.
His Forces amount to 500 Men,	149.
Marches against <i>Centeno</i> ,	150.
Defeats him,	152.
His Forces desert, he is taken and executed,	174.
His Insolence.	ibide
<i>Pizarro</i> ( <i>John</i> ) commands at <i>Cuzco</i> ,	v. 5. p. 17.
Takes a strong Rock,	21:
Made Deputy to his Brother <i>Ferdinand</i> at <i>Cuzco</i> ,	24.
Kill'd there,	26.
<i>Pocorosa</i> Cazique,	v. 2. p. 65.
Poison'd Arrows,	v. 1. p. 341.
Poison how made,	v. 1. p. 349.
<i>Ponce de Leon</i> ( <i>John</i> ) first reduces the Island of <i>St. John de</i>	
<i>Puerto Rico</i> ,	v. 1. p. 327.
Settles Colonies there,	338.
Discovers <i>Florida</i> ,	v. 2. p. 32.
<i>Ponce</i> Cazique,	v. 2. p. 61.
<i>Popayan</i> Province discover'd and conquer'd,	v. 5. p. 66.
More of it,	162.
<i>Popocatepec</i> burning Mountain,	v. 2. p. 305.
<i>Porrás</i> ( <i>Francis de</i> ) mutinies against <i>Columbus</i> ,	v. 1. p. 292.
Insolencies of his Followers,	294:
Routed and taken,	306.
<i>Portobelo</i> ,	v. 1. p. 269.
<i>Potosi</i> Mountain describ'd,	v. 6. p. 105.
<i>Pox</i> ,	v. 1. p. 277.
<i>Pozo</i> Indians, the bravest in <i>Peru</i> ,	v. 5. p. 193.
Pretensions of the King of <i>Portugal</i> ,	v. 1. p. 100.
Prodigies in <i>New Spain</i> ,	v. 2. p. 291. v. 3. p. 185.
<i>Puerto Rico</i> ( <i>St. John de</i> ) Island describ'd,	v. 4. p. 36.
<i>Puerto Viejo</i> ,	v. 4. p. 69.
<i>Puna</i> Island,	v. 4. p. 70.
The Island chastis'd,	72.
Describ'd,	74.
<i>Puruaes</i> , a good People,	v. 4. p. 377.

# INDEX

## Q

- QUAUNAVAC** strong Town taken by *Cortes*, v. 3. p. 140.  
**Quasimoc** chosen King of *Mexico*, v. 3. p. 104.  
 Taken by the *Spaniards*, 179.  
 Cruelly put to the Rack, 184.  
 Put to Death, 360.  
**Quillacinga** Indians, v. 5. p. 187.  
**Quimbaya** Province, v. 5. p. 201.  
**Quito** City describ'd, v. 4. p. 399.  
 More of it, v. 5. p. 58. and 162.  
**Quivira** Province, v. 5. p. 277.  
**Quixquiz**, a *Peruvian* General maintains War with the *Spaniards*, v. 4. p. 389.  
 Routed by them, v. 5. p. 42.

## R

- RAMIREZ** (*Don Sebastian*) Bishop of *Santo Domingo*,  
 an upright and just Man, v. 4. p. 56.  
 Made President of *New Spain*, 128.  
 His excellent Government, 204.  
 Returns to *Spain*, v. 5. p. 34.  
**Rangel** (*Roderick*) subdues the *Zapotecs*, v. 3. p. 339.  
 Revolt of *Indians* in *Hispaniola*, v. 1. p. 290. and 297.  
 In *Honduras* and *Guatemala* suppress'd, v. 6. p. 386.  
**Reyes** City founded in the Government of *Santa Marta*,  
 and Description of its Territory, v. 6. p. 300.  
**Riobamba** Palace, and Store-Houses, v. 4. p. 377.  
**River of Plate**, what happened there, v. 6. p. 84.  
 Contracts in *Spain* for sending Supplies thither, 196.  
 Actions there, 199.  
**Robledo**, (*George*) his Discoveries, v. 5. p. 188. and 378.  
**Roldan**, (*Francis*) a notorious Villain in *Hispaniola*, v. 1. p. 175.  
 Debauches Men sent into that Island, 203.  
 His great Insolence, 208.  
 Is cast away at Sea, 253.  
**Royal Plain** in *Hispaniola* wonderful, v. 1. p. 121.

## S

- SAERIFICES** at *Mexico*, v. 2. p. 375.  
**Sailors** left on a desert Island, strange Miseries they en-  
 dur'd, v. 6. p. 155.  
*Sandoval*

# INDEX.

<i>Sandoval</i> ( <i>Gonzalo de</i> ) defeats a Body of <i>Mexicans</i> ,	Vol. 2. Page 129.
Commands one Attack at the Siege of <i>Mexico</i> ,	144.
Reduces Provinces that had revolted,	256.
<i>Santa Cruz</i> Province, and its Government,	v. 6. p. 237.
<i>San Salvador</i> , or <i>Guanahani</i> Island, the first discover'd by <i>Columbus</i> ,	v. 1. p. 46.
<i>San Salvador</i> Province,	v. 4. p. 152.
<i>Santa Maria el Antigua</i> Island,	v. 1. p. 108.
<i>Santa Maria la redonda</i> Island,	v. 1. p. 108:
<i>Santa Marta</i> , Actions there,	v. 4. p. 179.
Discoveries from thence,	214.
More of it,	v. 5. p. 72.
Confusions there,	220.
<i>St. Michael</i> Colony in <i>Peru</i> founded,	v. 4. p. 82.
Its District describ'd,	229.
<i>St. Sebastian de buena Vista</i> Town founded,	v. 4. p. 220.
<i>Santa</i> Town and Harbour in <i>Peru</i> ,	v. 3. p. 403.
<i>Santo Domingo</i> City in <i>Hispaniola</i> founded,	v. 1. p. 168.
Blown down by a Storm,	253.
Scandalous Preacher,	v. 2. p. 32.
<i>Segura de la Frontera</i> Colony founded by <i>Cortes</i> ,	v. 3. p. 141.
Sermon in Defence of the <i>Indians</i> ,	v. 1. p. 375.
Sheep of <i>Peru</i> ,	v. 3. p. 403.
Ships, 20 cast away in a Storm,	v. 1. p. 253.
Single Combat, v. 2. p. 257. and v. 3. p. 168. and 172.	
Small Pox rages in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	v. 2. p. 154.
<i>Solis</i> , ( <i>John Diaz de</i> ) his Voyage to the Continent.	v. 1. p. 315.
His second Voyage,	332.
His third Voyage, discovers the <i>River of Plate</i> , v. 2. p. 43. and 88.	
<i>Soto</i> ( <i>Ferdinand</i> ) undertakes the Conquest of <i>Florida</i> , v. 5. p. 223.	
Farther Proceedings of his there,	v. 6. p. 1.
Continuation of his Actions,	307, 320. and 332.
More,	v. 6. p. 1.
His Death,	9.
Return of his <i>Spaniards</i> to <i>New Spain</i> ,	15.
<i>South Sea</i> first heard of,	v. 2. p. 7.
First discover'd by <i>Balboa</i> ,	50.
<i>Badajoz</i> marches thither,	86.
Discoveries made on it from <i>Panama</i> ,	v. 3. p. 282.
<i>Spaniards</i> , why call'd <i>Viracochas</i> in <i>Peru</i> ,	v. 3. p. 262.
Speed of an <i>Indian</i> to <i>Columbus</i> ,	v. 1. p. 134.
F f	Spells

# I N D E X.

Spells of <i>Tlascalans</i> ,	Vol. 2. Page 251.
Sugar Works in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	V. 2. p. 155.
<i>Sachimilco</i> City taken by <i>Cortes</i> ,	V. 3. p. 141.
<b>T</b>	
<b>T</b> <i>ABASCO</i> River,	V. 2. p. 125.
The Cazique there gives <i>John de Grijalva</i> a compleat Suit of Gold Armour,	127.
The Province subdu'd,	V. 3. p. 349.
Describ'd,	350.
<i>Tacuba</i> taken and plunder'd,	V. 3. p. 137.
<i>Tamemes</i> , what they were,	V. 3. p. 57.
<i>Tapia</i> ( <i>Christopher de</i> ) sent Governour into <i>New Spain</i> , not admitted,	V. 3. p. 271.
<i>Tanylatan</i> Town in <i>New Spain</i> ,	V. 3. p. 357.
Tax-Gatherers of <i>Motexuma</i> much dreaded,	V. 2. p. 217.
Seiz'd by Order of <i>Cortes</i> ,	218.
<i>Tecoantepec</i> Province describ'd,	V. 3. p. 269.
Submits to <i>Cortes</i> ,	272.
<i>Tecozizimco</i> Town of <i>Tlascala</i> , by the Spaniards call'd <i>Tower of Victory</i> , and why,	V. 2. p. 258.
Temples at <i>Mexico</i> ,	V. 2. p. 372.
<i>Tepeaca</i> Province submits to <i>Cortes</i> ,	V. 2. p. 317.
Subdu'd by him,	V. 3. p. 86.
Description of it,	110.
Terms between the Catholick, King and <i>Columbus</i> ,	V. 1. p. 31.
<i>Texutla</i> Town in <i>New Spain</i> ,	V. 2. p. 240.
<i>Tezcuco</i> City in <i>New Spain</i> ,	V. 2. p. 324.
<i>Thomas</i> (St.) Fort in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	V. 1. p. 123.
<i>Tindarunoi</i> , what they were,	V. 5. p. 56.
<i>Tirrock</i> , Capital of <i>Yucatan</i> ,	V. 4. p. 15.
<i>Titicaca</i> Lake,	V. 4. p. 284.
<i>Tlascala</i> Province and City describ'd,	V. 2. p. 281.
<i>Tlascalans</i> , how they receiv'd <i>Cortes's</i> Messengers,	V. 2. p. 246:
Their Dissimulation,	247.
Thirty thousand of them routed,	255.
Their Practices discover'd,	259.
Send the Spaniards Provisions by way of Contempt,	261.
Are again worsted,	ib.
Send more Provisions, and are a third Time put to Flight,	263.
Send	263.



# INDEX.

Send Spies into <i>Cortes's</i> Camp,	Vol. 2. Page 266.
Routed a 4th Time,	267.
Conclude a Peace with <i>Cortes</i> ,	274.
How they receiv'd him in their City,	279.
Desire to know <i>Cortes's</i> Intentions,	289.
Their Religion, Manners, &c.	292.
Their Fidelity and Generosity to the <i>Spaniards</i> , v. 3. p. 80.	
Furnish Timber to build Brigantines,	102.
Their Bravery at the Siege of <i>Mexico</i> ,	166.
For their good Service pay no Tribute to the King of <i>Spain</i> ,	189.
<i>Tonebamba</i> stately Palace and Store-houses, v. 2. p. 327.	
	and 377.
Torrid Zone habitable,	v. 1. p. 12.
Temperate and delightful,	v. 5. p. 14.
<i>Tortugas</i> Islands,	v. 1. p. 283.
<i>Totonagues</i> Indians submit to the Crown of <i>Spain</i> , v. 2. p. 220.	
Towns built for the Natives in <i>Hispaniola</i> ,	v. 2. p. 154.
Traytor justly rewarded,	v. 6. p. 155.
Treasure of <i>Motexuma</i> in vain sought after,	v. 3. p. 183.
More hid by the <i>Indians</i> ,	v. 4. p. 371.
Tribute in <i>Peru</i> ,	v. 5. p. 57.
<i>Trinity</i> Island discover'd,	v. 1. p. 191.
More of it,	v. 4. p. 378.
<i>Truxillo</i> Town in the Province of <i>Honduras</i> ,	v. 3. p. 366.
<i>Truxillo</i> City in <i>Peru</i> built,	v. 5. p. 1.
<i>Tubanama</i> Cazique,	v. 2. p. 65.
<i>Tucuman</i> Province describ'd,	v. 6. p. 233.
<i>Tumbez</i> , <i>Pizarro</i> goes thither,	v. 4. p. 77.
That Vale describ'd,	229.
<i>Tututepec</i> Province reduc'd.	v. 3. p. 278.

## V

<b>V</b> ACA ( <i>Alvar Nuñez Cabeza de</i> ) his strange Adventures in <i>Florida</i> ,	v. 5. p. 91.
More of them,	97. & seq.
Arrives at <i>Mexico</i> , and proceeds into <i>Spain</i> ,	105.
Made Governour of the <i>River of Plate</i> , his Voyage and Proceedings,	342.
His Discoveries, and other Actions there,	390.
The same continu'd 'till he is sent Prisoner into <i>Spain</i> , and honourably discharg'd there,	402.

# INDEX.

- Vaca de Castro* appointed to govern *Peru*, Vol. 9. Page 249.  
 His Behaviour there, 286.  
 Join'd by several Troops, 296.  
 Affronts *Belalcazar*, 297.  
 Marches to *Guamanga*, 362.  
 Defeats young *Almagro*, 364.  
 Restores Peace in *Peru*, 373.  
*Valdivia*, (*Peter de*) his Actions in *Chile*, v. 5. p. 298.  
 Returns from *Peru* to *Chile*, v. 6. p. 216.  
 His Actions there, 314.  
 His Death, 318.  
 Variation of the Compass, v. 1. p. 35.  
*Velasquez*, (*James*) founds Colonies in *Hispaniola*, v. 1. p. 291.  
 Sent to subdue *Cuba*, v. 2. p. 9.  
 His Proceedings there, 16.  
 Sends Forces against *Cortes*, v. 3. p. 32.  
*Vela*, (*Blasco Nunez*) the new Governour, his Arrival in *Peru*,  
 Proceedings there, taken Prisoner and set at Liberty,  
 v. 6. p. 39.  
 Assembles Forces at *Quito*, and marches towards the  
 Rebels, 56.  
 Fights them, and is murder'd, 61.  
*Venezuela*, Discoveries made from thence, v. 4. p. 216.  
 More, v. 5. p. 148.  
 What happened there, v. 6. p. 35.  
*Veragua* River, v. 1. p. 272.  
 Distress of *Spaniards* in that Province, 353.  
*Veregenz* Province subdu'd by preaching, v. 4. p. 195.  
*Vera Paz* River, v. 4. p. 414. and, v. 5. p. 36.  
*Victory*, the Ship so call'd, the first that sail'd round the  
 World, v. 3. p. 151.  
*Villa Viciosa de Pasto* Colony founded, v. 5. p. 183.  
 Unjust Judges in *Hispaniola*, v. 4. p. 189.  
 In *New Spain*, v. 1. p. 50.  
 Voyage round the World the first, see *Magellan*, the Ship  
*Victory*, and *Cano* (*John Sebastian del*).  
*Urias* Beasts, smaller than Rabbits, v. 1. p. 66.

## W

- W**ALL very remarkable on the Borders of *Tlascala*,  
 v. 2. p. 250.  
 War between *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* in the *Molucco* Islands,  
 v. 3. p. 404.  
 Between

# INDEX.

Between *Spaniards*, and *Peruvians*, Vol. 4. p. 306.  
*West India House* at *Sevil*, v. 3. p. 321.  
*West Indies*, guesses how first peopled, v. 1. p. 20.  
 Why so call'd, v. 2. p. 222.  
 Wicked Officers, v. 3. p. 345.  
 Women, notable Bravery of some of them, v. 3. p. 170.  
 Wonderful Action of an *Indian*, v. 3. p. 256.

**X**ACOCINGO Town in *New Spain*, v. 2. p. 245.  
*Xaquixaguana Plain*, v. 4. p. 391.  
*Xaragua Province* in *Hispaniola*, v. 1. p. 169. and 172.  
*Xaxuca Vale*, v. 4. p. 303.  
*Xicotencatl*, General of the *Tlascallans*, for War with the  
*Spaniards*, v. 2. p. 147.  
 His Haughtiness, v. 2. p. 261.  
 He is defeated four Times, ib. and 263.  
 Retires to *Tlascala* with Shame, 268.  
 Concludes a Peace with *Cortes*, 274.  
 Is for destroying the *Spaniards* after their Retreat from  
*Mexico*, v. 3. p. 85.  
 Steals away from the Siege of *Mexico*, v. 3. p. 85.  
 Is hang'd, ib.  
*Ximenez (Gonzalo)* in *New Granada*, v. 5. p. 78.

## Y

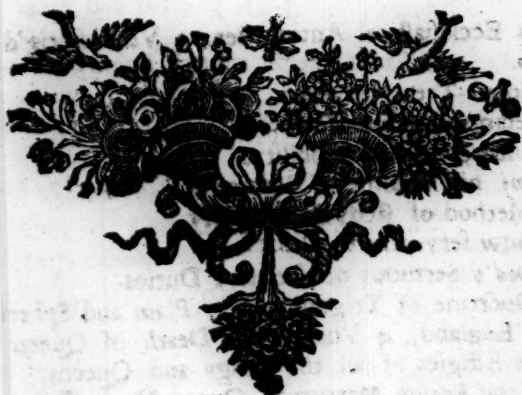
**Y**BUERAS, Religion, Manners, &c. of those People,  
 v. 3. p. 406. and v. 4. p. 131.  
*Yguanaz*, v. 4. p. 192.  
*Yruminavi*, an *Indian* General, mortal Enemy to the *Spaniards*,  
 v. 4. p. 371.  
*Yucatan*, Discoveries made there, v. 2. p. 111.  
 The same continu'd 119.  
 Description of it, v. 4. p. 17, and 158.  
 Antiquities, and other Particulars, 166.  
 The *Spaniards* there in Distress, 212.  
 Quit the Province, v. 5. p. 39.  
*Yucay Vale*, v. 4. p. 394.  
*Yucatan Town*, v. 3. p. 268.  
*Yucatan Province*, v. 4. p. 148.  
*Yucatanpalapa City* in *New Spain*, v. 2. p. 324.

# INDEX

## Z

- ZAMORA** City founded, and Description of its Territory, v. 6. p. 243.  
**Zapoteca** Province describ'd, v. 3. p. 267.  
 Subdu'd, 339.  
**Zebu**, one of the *Philippine* Islands, discover'd by *Magellan*, v. 3. p. 147.  
**Zempoala** Town in *New Spain*, v. 2. p. 211.  
**Zenu** Territory, v. 4. p. 221.  
**Zepeda**, a wicked Judge, v. 6. p. 129.  
 Dies a Prisoner in *Spain*, 177.  
**Zeyba** Tree, v. 4. p. 38.  
**Zilotepec** Province in *New Spain*, v. 3. p. 320.  
**Zimpancingo** Town in *New Spain* submits to *Cortes*, v. 2. p. 225.  
**Zocotlan** Town in *New Spain*, v. 2. p. 241.  
 The Lord of it, his Account of *Motexuma*, 242.

## FINIS.





**Boooks printed for, and sold by J. Batley, at  
the Dove in Pater-noster-Row.**

**F O L I O.**

**D**OMAT's Civil Law, in its Natural Order, 2 Vol.  
both large and small Paper.

Bridgman's Conveyancer, 2 Vol.

Tyrrel's *Bibliotheca Politica*, both large and small Paper.

L'Estrange's *Josephus*, with Maps and Cuts.

Montfaucon's *Travels into Italy*, with Cuts.

Moll's *Geography*, with Maps.

Moral Virtue delineated, both in *French* and *English*, with  
Cuts.

**Q U A R T O.**

Shakespear's Works, 7 Vol. publish'd by Mr. Pope and  
Dr. Sewel.

Tournefort's *Voyage to the Levant*, 2 Vol. with Cuts.

**O C T A V O.**

Abridgment of the Statutes, 6 Vol.

Antiquities of *Westminster*, 2 Vol. with Cuts.

Bailey's *English Dictionary*, 3d Edit.

—his Translation of *Erasmus's Colloquies*.

Boileau's Works in *English*, 3 Vol.

Bruyere's *Characters*, 2 Vol.

Bettersen's *Life*, with the Amorous Widow, or Wanton  
Wife.

Blackmore's *Ecclesiastical Antiquities*, 2 Vol. Abrig'd from  
*Bingham*.

Cooke of *Forest-Trees*, 3d Edit.

Cocker's *Decimal Arithmetick*.

Critical History of the Nobility.

Calamy Benj. his Volume of Sermons.

Du Pin's Method of studying Divinity.

Dionis's *Midwifery*.

Bp. Fleetwood's Sermons on Relative Duties.

Hawney's Doctrine of Trigonometry, Plain and Spherical.

History of England, 4 Vol. to the Death of Queen Anne,  
with the Effigies of all the Kings and Queens.

History of the *English Martyrs* in Queen Mary's Reign.

Howel's History of the Bible, 3 Vol. with Cuts, 4th Edit.

Littlebury's Translation of *Herodotus*, 2 Vol. 2 Edit. with  
Maps.

*Blissom's*

*Books printed for, and sold by J. Batley.*

*Misson's Travels over England.*

*Orlean's History of the Revolutions in England.*

*Bp. Patrick's Sermons on Contentment, &c.*

*Signior Rozelli's Life, 2 Vol.*

*Dr. Sydenham's Practical Works.*

*Turretin on Fundamentals.*

*Zouch on the Punishment of Embassadors.*

*T W E L V E S.*

*Atalantis, 4 Vol.*

*Behn's Plays, 4 Vol.*

———her Novels, 2 Vol. with Cuts.

*Cassandra, a Romance, in 5 Vol. 12°.*

*Devout Christian's Companion, 2 Parts.*

*Dacier's Plato, in English, 2 Vol. 2d Edit.*

*Hawney's Compleat Measurer, 2d Edit.*

*Lady's Travels into Spain, 9th Edit. 2 Vol. with Cuts.*

*Lee's Tragedies, 3 Vol.*

*Monday's Spelling-Book, for the Use of Charity Schools.*

*Memoirs of Anne of Austria, in 5 Vol. Translated from the French.*

*The Adventures of Prince Clermont, and Madam de Ravellan. In four Parts.*

———of the Lady Lucy.

*Life of the Count de Vinevil.*

———of Madam de Beaumont.

———and amorous Adventures of *Lucinda.*

*The noble Slaves.*

*Osborne's Works, 2 Vol.*

*Rowe's Callipedia, With Cuts.*

———his Works, 3 Vol.

*Select Novels, 2 Vol. with Cuts.*

*Secret History of Whitehall, 2 Vol. 2d Edit.*

*Dr. Strother's Pharmacopeia.*

*Tatlers, 5 Vol.*

*Turkish Spy, 8 Vol.*

*Wycherly's Plays, 2 Vol.*